THE New Testament of our Lord IESVS CHRIST,

Translated out of Greeke by THEOD. BEZA, And Englished by L. T. 1. Cor. 1.

IVKE 2. 10.

Behold, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy that shall be to all the people.

Imprinted at London by *Robert Barker*, Printer to the Kings most Excellent Maiestie. 1609.

¶ Cum gratia & Priuilegio.

¶ THE ORDER OF THE BOOKES of the New Testament, with the number of their Chapters.

THE Gospel written by Matthew,	Chapters 28
By Marke	16
By Luke	24
By Iohn	21
The Acts of the Apostles	28

¶ THE EPISTLES.

PAul to the Romanes	16
The first to the Corinthians	16
The second to the Corinthians	13
To the Galatians	6
To the Ephesians	6
To the Philippians	4
To the Colossians	4
The first to the Thessalonians	5
The second to the Thessalonians	3
The first to Timothy	6
The second to Timothy	4
To Titus	3
To Philemon	one
The Epistle to the Hebrewes	13
The Epistle of James	5
The first Epistle of Peter	5
The second Epistle of Peter	3
The first Epistle of Iohn	5
The second of Iohn	one
The third of Iohn	one
The Epistle of Iude	one
The Reuelation	22.

¶ THE

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORDING TO S. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

1 *That Ieſus is that Meſſias the Sauiour promiſed to the fathers.*
18 *The Natiuitie of Chriſt.*

THE * booke of the generation of IESVS CHRIST the ſonne of Dauid, the ſonne of Abraham. *Luk.3.23. Gen.21.2. Gē.25.24*

2 * Abraham begate Iſaac. * And Iſaac begate Iacob. And * Iacob begat Iudas and his brethren. *Gē.29.35 Gē.38.27 1.Chr.2.5*

3 * And Iudas begate Phares, and Zara of Thamar. And * Phares begate Eſrom. And Eſrom begate Aram. *ruth.4. 18,19. Ruth.4.*

4 And Aram begate Aminadab. And Aminadab begate Naaſſon. And Naaſſon begate Salmon. *21. 1.Sā.16.1*

5 And Salmon begate Booz of Rachab. And * Booz begate Obed of Ruth. And Obed begate Ieſſe. *& 17.12. 2.Sam.12.*

6 And * Ieſſe begate Dauid the King. And * Dauid the King begate Salomon of her that was *the wife* of Vrias. *24. 1.King.11*

7 And * Salomon begate Roboam. And Roboam begate Abia. And Abia begate Aſa. *43. 1.chr. 3.10,11.*

8 And Aſa begate Ioſaphat. And Ioſaphat begate Ioram. And Ioram begate Hozias. *2. Kin.20. 21.and 21*

9 And Hozias begate Ioatham. And Ioatham begate Achaz. And Achaz begate Ezekias. *18. 1.chr. 3.13,14.*

10 And * Ezekias begate Manaſſes. And Manaſſes begate Amon. And Amon begate Ioſias. *2.King.29 34.and 24*

11 And * Ioſias begate Iakim. And Iakim begate Iechonias and his brethren about the time they were carried away into Babylon. *1,6.2.chr. 36.4,9.*

1.Chron.3 16. 12 And after they were caried away vnto Babylon, * Iechonias begate Salathiel. And * Salathiel begate Zorobabel.

1.Chron.3 17.esra 3 13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud. And Abiud begate Eliacim.

2.and 5.2 14 And Azor begate Sadoc. And Sadoc begate Achim. And Achim begate Eliud.

15 And Eliud begate Eleazar. And Eleazar begate Matthan. And Matthan begate Iacob.

16 And Iacob begate Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whome was borne IESVS, that is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, *are* foureteene generations. And from Dauid vntil they were caried away into Babylon, foureteene generations: and after they were caried away into Babylon vntill Christ, foureteene generations.

Luk. 1.32 18 ¶ Now the birth of IESVS Christ was thus, When as his mother Mary was * betrothed to Ioseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

Deu.24.1 19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing to * make her a publike example, was minded to put her away secretly.

20 But while he thought these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph the sonne of Dauid, feare not to take Mary thy wife: for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

Luk.1.31 Act.4.12 21 And she shall bring foorth a sonne, and thou shalt * call his Name IESVS: for he shall * saue his people from their sinnes.

22 And all this was done that it might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

Esai 7.14 23 * Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall beare a sonne, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation, God with vs.

24 ¶ Then Ioseph being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had enioyned him, and tooke his wife.

25 But he knew her not, till shee had brought foorth her first borne sonne, and he called his Name IESVS.

CHAP. II.

1 The wisemen, who are the first fruits of the Gentiles, worship Christ. 14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt with Iesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children.

Luke 2.6. WHen * IESVS then was borne at Bethlehem in Iudea in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came Wisemen from the East to Hierusalem,

2 Saying, Where is that King of the Iewes that is borne? for we haue seene his starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 And

3 When king Herod heard *this* he was troubled, and all Hie-
rusalem with him.

4 And gathering together all the chiefe Priests and Scribes
of the people, he asked of them, where Christ should be borne.

5 And they sayd vnto him, At Beth-lehem in Iudea: for so it
is written by the Prophet.

6 * And thou Beth-lehem in the land of Iuda, are not the least among the Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall come the gouernour that shall feed that my people Israel. *Mica.5.2. Esa.7.42.*

7 Then Herod priuily called the Wisemen *and* diligently enquired of them the time of the starre that appeared,

8 And sent them to Beth-lehem, saying, Goe, and search diligently for the babe: and when ye haue found him, bring me word againe, that I may come also, and worship him.

9 ¶ So when they had heard the king, they departed, and loe, the starre which they had seene in the East, went before them, till it came and stood ouer *the place* where the babe was.

10 And when they sawe the starre, they reioyced with an exceeding great ioy,

11 And went into the house, and found the babe with Mary his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him, and opened their treasures, and presented vnto him gifts, *euen* golde, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame that they should not goe againe to Herod, they returned into their countrey another way.

13 ¶ After their departure, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and bee there till I bring thee word, for Herod will seeke the babe to destroy him.

14 So he arose and tooke the babe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt,

15 And was there vnto the death of Herod that it might be fulfilled which is spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne. *Hos.11.1.*

16 ¶ Then Herod, seeing that hee was mocked of the Wisemen was exceeding wroth, and sent foorth, and slew all the male children that were in Beth-lehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeere olde and vnder, according to the time which hee had diligently searched out of the Wisemen.

17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying,

18 * In Rhama was a voyce heard, mourning and weeping, and great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, and would *Ier.31.15*

1.Chron.3 16. 12 And after they were caried away into Babylon, * Iechonias begate Salathiel. And * Salathiel begate Zorobabel.

1.Chron.3 13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud. And Abiud begate Eliacim.

27.ezra 3 And Eliacim begate Azor.

3.and 5.2 14 And Azor begate Sadoc. And Sadoc begate Achim. And Achim begate Eliud.

15 And Eliud begate Eleazar. And Eleazar begate Matthan. And Matthan begate Iacob.

16 And Iacob begate Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whome was borne IESVS, that is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, *are* foure-teene generations. And from Dauid vntil they were caried away into Babylon, fourteene generations: and after they were caried away into Babylon vntill Christ, fourteene generations.

18 ¶ Now the birth of IESVS Christ was thus, When as his

Luk.1.73 mother Mary was * betrothed to Ioseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing

Deu.24.1 to * make her a publike example, was minded to put her away secretly.

20 But while he thought these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph the sonne of Dauid, feare not to take Mary thy wife: for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

Luk.1.31 Act.4.12 21 And she shall bring foorth a sonne, and thou shalt * call his Name IESVS: for he shall * saue his people from their sinnes.

22 And all this was done that it might be fulfilled, which is

Esai 7.14 spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

23 * Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall beare a sonne, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation, God with vs.

24 ¶ Then Ioseph being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had enioyned him, and tooke his wife.

25 But he knew her not, till shee had brought foorth her first borne sonne, and he called his Name IESVS.

CHAP. II.

1 The wisemen, who are the first fruits of the Gentiles, worship Christ. 14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt with Iesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children.

Luke 2.6. WHen * IESVS was borne at Bethlehem in Iudea in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came Wisemen from the East to Hierusalem,

2 Saying, Where is that King of the Iewes that is borne? for we haue seene his starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 And

3 When king Herod heard *this*, he was troubled, and all Hie-
rusalem with him.

4 And gathering together all the chiefe Priests and Scribes
of the people, he asked of them, where Christ should be borne.

5 And they sayd vnto him, At Beth-lehem in Iudea: for so it
is written by the Prophet.

6 * And thou Beth-lehem in the land of Iuda, art not the least *Mica.5.2.*
among the Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall come the gouer- *Ioh.7.42.*
nour that shall feed that my people Israel.

7 Then Herod priuily called the Wisemen *and* diligently en-
quired of them the time of the starre that appeared,

8 And sent them to Beth-lehem, saying, Goe, and search dili-
gently for the babe: and when ye haue found him, bring me word
againe, that I may come also, and worship him.

9 ¶ So when they had heard the king, they departed, and loe,
the starre which they had seene in the East, went before them, till
it came and stood ouer *the place* where the babe was.

10 And when they sawe the starre, they reioyced with an ex-
ceeding great ioy,

11 And went into the house, and found the babe with Mary his
mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him, and opened their
treasures, and presented vnto him gifts, *euen* golde, and frankin-
cense, and myrrhe.

12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame that they
should not goe againe to Herod, they returned into their countrey
another way.

13 ¶ After their departure, behold, the Angel of the Lord ap-
peared to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, and take the babe and
his mother, and flee into Egypt, and bee there till I bring thee
word, for Herod will seeke the babe to destroy him.

14 So he arose and tooke the babe and his mother by night, and
departed into Egypt,

15 And was there vnto the death of Herod: that it might be
fulfilled which is spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, *Hos.11.1.*
Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne.

16 ¶ Then Herod, seeing that hee was mocked of the Wise-
men was exceeding wroth, and sent foorth, and slew all the male
children that were in Beth-lehem, and in all the coasts thereof,
from two yeere olde and vnder, according to the time which hee
had diligently searched out of the Wisemen.

17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ie-
remias, saying,

18 * In Rhama was a voyce heard, mourning and weeping, *Ier.31.15*
and great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, and would

not be comforted, because they were not.

19 And when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the babes life.

21 Then hee arose vp and tooke the babe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when hee heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father Herod, he was afraid to goe thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galile,

23 And went and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, *which was*, That he should be called a Nazarite.

CHAP. III.

1 Iohn preacheth. 4 His apparell and meate. 5 Hee baptizeth. 8 The fruits of repentance. 10 The axe at the roote of the tree. 12 The fanne and the chaffe. 13 Christ is baptized.

Mark.1.4 Luke 3.3. A Nd * in those dayes, Iohn the Baptist came and preached in the wilderneſſe of Iudea,

2 And said, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

Esai 40.3 marke 1.3 luke 3.4. iohn 1.23 3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by the Prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of him that crieth in the wilderneſſe, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

Mar.1.6 4 * And this Iohn had his garment of camels haire, and a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: his meate was also locusts and wild honie.

Mar.1.5. luke 3.7 5 * Then went out to him Hierusalem and all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordan,

6 And they were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

Chap. 12. 34. Ioh.8. 39. act.13.26 Cha.7.19. Mar.1.8 luke 3.16. iohn 1.26 act.1.5. & 2.4 & 8 17. and 19.4. 7 Now when hee saw many of the Pharises, and of the Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said vnto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the anger to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy amendment of life.

9 And thinke not to say with your selues, * Wee haue Abraham to *our* Father: for I say vnto you that God is able euen of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

10 And now also is the axe put to the roote of the trees: * therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

11 * Indeede I baptize you with water to amendment of life, but he that commeth after me, is mightier then I, whose shooes I

am

am not worthy to beare: he will baptize you with the holy Ghost and with fire.

12 Which hath his fanne in his hand, and will make cleane his floore, and gather his wheate into his garner, but will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ * Then came Iesus from Galile to Iordan vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him. *Mar.1.9 luke 3.21*

14 But Iohn earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 Then Iesus answering, said to him, Let it be now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse. So he suffered him.

16 And Iesus when he was baptized, came straight out of the water, and lo, the heauens were opened vnto him, and *Iohn* sawe the Spirit of God descending like a done, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voice *came* from heauen, saying, * This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. *Col.1.13 2.pet.1.17*

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ is tempted. 4 Hee vanquisheth the Deuill with Scripture. 11 The Angels minister vnto him. 12 He preacheth repentance, and that himselfe is come. 18 The calling of Peter, Andrew, 21 Iames and Iohn. 23 Hee preacheth the Gospel and healeth the diseased.

THen * was Iesus led aside of the Spirit into the wildernesse to be tempted of the deuill. *Mar.1.12 luke 4.1.*

2 And when he had fasted fourty dayes, and fourty nights, he was afterward hungry.

3 Then came to him the tempter, and said, If thou be the Sonne of God, command that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answering, said, It is written, * Man shall not liue by bread only, but by euery word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. *Deut.8.3.*

5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into the holy Citie, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple,

6 And said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: for it is written, * that he wil giue his Angels charge ouer thee, and with their hands they shall lift thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone. *Psal.91. 11.*

7 Iesus said vnto him, It is written againe, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deut.6. 16.*

8 Againe the deuil tooke him vp into an exceeding hie mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the worlde, and the glory of them,

9 And said to him, All these will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worship me.

not be comforted, because they were not.

19 And when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the babes life.

21 Then hee arose vp and tooke the babe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when hee heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father Herod, he was afraid to goe thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galile,

23 And went and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, *which was*, That he should be called a Nazarite.

CHAP. III.

1 *Iohn preacheth.* 4 *His apparell and meate.* 5 *Hee baptizeth.* 8 *The fruits of repentance.* 10 *The axe at the roote of the tree.* 12 *The fanne and the chaffe.* 13 *Christ is baptized.*

Mark.1.4 *luke 3.3.* A Nd * in those dayes, Iohn the Baptist came and preached in the wildernesse of Iudea,

2 And said, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by the Prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of him that crieth in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

Esai 40.3 *marke 1.3* *luke 3.4.*

4 * And this Iohn had his garment of camels haire, and a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: his meate was also locusts and wild honie.

iohn 1.23 *Mar.1.6*

5 * Then went out to him Hierusalem and all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordan,

Mar.1.5. *luke 3.7*

6 And they were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

7 Now when hee saw many of the Pharises, and of the Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said vnto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the anger to come?

Chap. 12. 34. *Ioh.8. 39.* *act.13.26*

8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy amendment of life.

Cha.7.19.

9 And thinke not to say with your selues, * Wee haue Abraham to *our* Father: for I say vnto you that God is able euen of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

Mar.1.8 *luke 3.16.* *iohn 1.26*

10 And now also is the axe put to the roote of the trees: * therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

act.1.5.& 2.4.& 8 17. and 19.4.

11 * Indeede I baptize you with water to amendment of life, but he that commeth after me, is mightier then I, whose shooes I

am

am not worthy to beare: he will baptize you with the holy Ghost and with fire.

12 Which hath his fanne in his hand, and will make cleane his floore, and gather his wheate into his garner, but will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ * Then came Iesus from Galile to Iordan vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him. *Mar.1.9 luke 3.21*

14 But Iohn earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue need to be baptized of thee, and commest thou to me?

15 Then Iesus answering, said to him, Let it be now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse. So he suffered him.

16 And Iesus when he was baptized, came straight out of the water, and lo, the heauens were opened vnto him, and *Iohn* sawe the Spirit of God descending like a doue, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voice *came* from heauen, saying, * This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. *Col.1.13 2.pet.1.17*

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ is tempted. 4 Hee vanquisheth the Deuill with Scripture. 11 The Angels minister vnto him. 12 He preacheth repentance, and that himselfe is come. 18 The calling of Peter, Andrew, 21 Iames and Iohn. 23 Hee preacheth the Gospel and healeth the diseased.

THen * was Iesus led aside of the Spirit into the wildernesse to be tempted of the deuill. *Mar.1.12 luke 4.1.*

2 And when he had fasted fourty dayes, and fourty nights, he was afterward hungry.

3 Then came to him the tempter, and said, If thou be the Sonne of God, command that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answering, said, It is written, * Man shall not liue by bread only, but by euery word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. *Deut.8.3.*

5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into the holy Citie, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple,

6 And said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: for it is written, * that he wil giue his Angels charge ouer thee, and with their hands they shall lift thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone. *Psal.91. 11.*

7 Iesus said vnto him, It is written againe, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deut.6. 16.*

8 Againe the deuil tooke him vp into an exceeding hie mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the worlde, and the glory of them,

9 And said to him, All these will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worship me.

10 Then said Iesus vnto him, Auoid Satan: for it is written,
Deu.6.13 & 10.20. * Thou shalt worship the Lorde thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.
Mar.1.13 Luke 4.13. 11 * Then the deuill left him: and behold, the Angels came, and ministred vnto him.
Mar.1.14 Luke 4.14. Ioh. 4.43. 12 * And when Iesus had heard that Iohn was committed to prison, he returned into Galile,
13 And leauing Nazareth, went and dwelt in Capernaum which is neere the Sea in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim,
14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,
Esai 9.1. 15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim *by* the way of the Sea, beyond Iordan, Galile of the Gentiles:
16 The people which sate in darknesse saw great light: and to them which sate in the region & shadow of death, light is risen vp.
Mar.1.15 17 * From that time Iesus began to preach, and to say, Amend your liues: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.
18 ¶ And Iesus walking by the Sea of Galile, sawe two brethren, Simon, which is called Peter and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers)
Mar.1.16 1.cor.1. 27. 19 * And he said vnto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.
20 And they straightway leauing the nets, followed him.
21 And when he was gone foorth from thence, hee saw other two brethren, Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother in a ship with Zebedeus their father, mending their nets, and hee called them.
22 And they without tarying, leauing the shippe, and their father, followed him.
23 So Iesus went about all Galile, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sickneſſe, and euery diseaſe among the people.
24 And his fame spread abroad through all Syria: and they brought vnto him all sicke people, that were taken with diuers diseases and torments, and them that were possessed with deuils, and those which were lunatike, and those that had the palsie: and he healed them.
25 And there followed him great multitudes out of Galile, and Decapolis, and Hierusalem, and Iudea, and from beyond Iordan.

CHAP. V.

1 Who are blessed. 13 The Apostles are the salt and light of the world. 14 The citie set on an hill. 15 The candle. 16 Good workes. 19 The fulfilling of Christs commandements. 21 What killing is. 23 Reconciliation is to be before sacrifice. 27 Adulterie.

vie. 29 *The plucking out of the eye.* 30. *Cutting off of the hand.* 13 *The bill of diuorcement.* 33 *Not to sweare.* 43 *To loue our enemies.* 48 *Perfitnesse.*

AND when he saw the multitude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was set, his disciples came vnto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying.

3 * Blessed *are* the poore in spirit, for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *Luk.6.20.*

4 * Blessed *are* they that mourne: for they shalbe comforted. *Esai 61.2,*

5 * Blessed *are* the meeke: for they shall inherite the earth. *3. luke 6.*

6 * Blessed *are* they which hunger and thirst for righteousnes: for they shall be filled. *21. Psa.37.11.*

7 Blessed *are* the mercifull: for they shall obtaine mercie. *Esa.65.13*

8 Blessed *are* the * pure in heart: for they shall see God. *Psal.24.4*

9 Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Blessed *are* they * which suffer persecution for righteousnes sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *1.Cor. 14.*

11 * Blessed shal ye be, when men reuile you, and persecute *you* and say all manner of euil against you for my sake, falsly. *33. 1. pet. 3.14. Act. 5.41*

12 Reioyce and be glad, for great is your reward in heauen: for so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you. *1.pet.4.14*

13 * Yee are the salt of the earth: but if the salt haue lost his sauour, where with shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden vnder foote of men. *Mar.9.50 luk.14.34*

14 Yee are the light of the world. A citie that is set on an hill cannot be hid.

15 * Neither do men light a candle, & put it vnder a bushel, but on a candlestick, and it giueth light to all that are in the house. *Mar.4.21 luk.8.16.*

16 * Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in heauen. *and 11.33 1.Pet.2.12.*

17 Thinke not that I am come to destroy the Law: or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy them, but to fulfill them.

18 * For truely I say vnto you, Till heauen and earth perish, one iote, or one title of the Law shall not escape, till all things be fulfilled. *Luk. 16. 17.*

19 * Whosoeuer therefore shal breake one of these least commandements, and teach men so, he shal be called the least in the kingdom of heauen: but whosoeuer shal obserue and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen. *Iam.2.10*

20 For I say vnto you, except your righteousnesse * exceede the *righteousnesse* of the Scribes and Pharises, yee shal not enter into the kingdome of heauen. *Luke 11. 39.*

21 Ye haue heard that it was said vnto them of the olde time,

* Thou

Exod.20. 13.deut. 5.17. * Thou shalt not kill: for whosoeuer killeth, shall be culpable of iudgement.

22 But I say vnto you, whosoeuer is angry with his brother vnaduisedly, shall be culpable of iudgement. And whosoeuer saith vnto his brother, Raca, shall be worthy to bee punished by the Councell. And whosoeuer shall say, Foole, shall be worthy to be punished with hell fire.

23 If then thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee,

24 Leaue there thine offering before the altar, and go thy way: First be reconciled to thy brother, & then come and offer thy gift.

Luke 12. 58. 25 * Agree with thine aduersary quickly whiles thou art in the way with him, lest thine aduersary deliuer thee to the Iudge, & the Iudge deliuer thee to the sergeant, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verely I say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, till thou hast payed the vtmost farthing.

Exod. 20. 14.rom. 13.9. 27 ¶ Ye haue heard that it was said to them of old time, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie.

28 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery already with her in his heart.

Chap.18. 8,9.mar. 9.47. 29 * Wherefore if thy right eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: for better it is for thee, that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hel.

30 Also if thy right hand make thee to offend, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for better it is for thee that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

Chap.19.7. deut.24.1 mar.10.4 luk.16.18 1.cor.7. 10. 31 It hath been said also, * Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, let him giue her a bill of diuorcement.

32 But I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall put away his wife (except it be for fornication) causeth her to commit adulterie: and whosoeuer shall marrie her that is diuorced, committeth adulterie.

Exo. 20.7 leu.19.12 deu.5.11. Iam.5.12 33 Againe, ye haue heard that it was said to them of old time, * Thou shalt not forsweare thy selfe, but shalt performe thine othes to the Lord.

34 But I say vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, for it is the throne of God:

35 Nor yet by the earth: for it is his footestoole: neither by Hierusalem: for it is the citie of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thine head, because thou canst not make one haire white or blacke.

37 * But let your communication be Yea, yea: Nay, nay: for whatsoeuer is more then these, commeth of euill.

38 ¶ Ye

38 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath been sayd, An * eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. *Exod.21. 34. lenit.*

39 But I say vnto you, * Resist not euill: but whosoeuer shall smite thee on the right cheeke, turne to him the other also. *24. 20. deu. 19.21*

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloake also. *Luk.6.29 ro.12.17.*

41 And whosoeuer will compell thee *to goe* a mile, goe with him twaine. *1.cor.6.7. Deu.15.8*

42 * Giue to him that asketh, and from him that would borrow of thee, turne not away. *Leuit. 19. 8.*

43 Ye haue heard that it hath been sayd, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour, and hate thine enemie. *Luk.6.27. Luke 23.*

44 But I say vnto you, * Loue your enemies: bless them that curse you: doe good to them that hate you, * and pray for them that hurt you and persecute you, *34.actes 7.60. 1. cor. 4. 13.*

45 * That ye may be the children of your Father that is in heauen: for he maketh the Sunne to arise on the euill, and the good: and sendeth raine on the iust, and vniust. *Luk.6.35.*

46 For if ye loue them which loue you, what reward shall you haue? Doe not the Publicanes euen the same?

47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren onely, what singular thing doe ye? doe not euen the Publicanes likewise?

48 Ye shall therefore be perfite, as your Father which is in heauen, is perfite.

CHAP. VI.

1 Almes. 5 Prayer. 14 Forgiuing our brother. 16 Fasting. 19 Our treasure. 20 We must succour the poore. 24 God and riches. 25 Carefull seeking for meate and drinke, and apparell forbidden. 33 The kingdome of God and his righteousnesse.

TAke heede that you giue not your almes before men, to bee seene of them, or else ye shall haue no reward of your Father which is in heauen.

2 * Therefore when thou giuest thine almes, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blowen before thee as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues and in the streetes, to be praised of men. Verely I say vnto you they haue their reward. *Rom.12.8*

3 But when thou doest thine almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth,

4 That thine almes may be in secret, and thy Father that seeth in secret, he will reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayest, bee not as the hypocrites: for they loue to stand, and pray in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, because they would be seene of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But when thou prayest, enter into thy chamber, and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray vnto thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 Also when ye pray, vse no vaine repetitions as the heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their much babbling.

8 Be yee not like them therefore: for your Father knoweth whereof ye haue need, before yeaske of him.

Luk.11.2 9 After this maner therefore pray ye, * Our Father which art in heauen, hallowed be thy Name.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done euen in earth, as *it is* in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our dayly bread.

12 And forgiue vs our debts, as wee also forgiue our debters.

Chap. 13. 19. 13 And leade vs not into tentation, but deliuer vs * from euil: for thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glory for euer, Amen.

Mar. 11. 25. 14 * For if yee doe forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly Father will also forgiue you.

15 But if ye do not forgiue men their trespasses, no more will your Father forgiue *you* your trespasses.

16 Moreouer, when ye fast, looke not sowre as the hypocrites: for they disfigure their faces, that they might seeme vnto men to fast. Verely I say vnto you, that they haue their reward.

17 But when thou fastest anoint thine head, and wash thy face,

18 That thou seeme not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, will reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not vp treasures for your selues vpon the earth, where the moth and canker corrupt, and where theeues digge thorow and steale.

Luke 12. 33. 1.tim. 6.19. 20 * But lay vp treasures for your selues in heauen, where neither the moth nor canker corrupteth, and where theeues neither dig thorow nor steale.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Luke 11 34. 22 ¶ * The light of the body is the eye: if then thine eye bee single, thy whole body shalbe light.

23 But if thine eye be wicked, then all thy body shalbe darke. *Luke 16. 15.* Wherefore if the light that is in thee be darknesse, how great is that darknesse?

Lu.12.22 phil.4.6. 1 tim.6.8 1 pet.5.7. Psa.55.23 24 * No man can serue two masters: for either he shall hate the one and loue the other, or else he shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serue God and riches.

25 * Therefore I say vnto you, bee not carefull for your life, what ye shall eate, or what ye shall drinke: nor yet for your body, what

what ye shall put on. Is no the life more worth then meate? and the body then raiment?

26 Behold the foules of the heauen: for they sow not, neither reap, nor carie into the barnes: yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are yee not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking care is able to adde one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why care yee for raiment? Learne how the lilles of the field doe grow: they are not wearied, neither spinne:

29 Yet I say vnto you, that euen Salomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so cloth the grasse of the field which is to day, and to morrow is cast into the ouen, shall he not *doe* much more vnto you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therfore take no thought, saying, What shall we eate? or what shal we drinke? or where with shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things seeke the Gentiles) for your heauenly Father knoweth, that yee haue neede of all these things.

33 But seeke yee first the kingdome of God and his righteousnesse, and all these things shalbe ministred vnto you.

34 Care not then for the morrow: for the morrow shall care for it selfe: the day hath enough with his owne griefe.

CHAP. VII.

1 We may not giue iudgement of our neighbour, 6 nor cast that which is holy, to dogges. 13 The broad and straut way. 15 False prophets. 18 The tree and fruit. 24 The house built on a rocke, 26 and on the sand.

IVdge not, that ye be not iudged.

2 For with what * iudgement ye iudge, ye shalbe iudged, and with what * measure yee mete, it shalbe measured to you againe. *Luke 6. 37, 38.*

3 And why seest thou the mote eth it is in thy brothers eye, and perceiuest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? *rom. 2. 1. 1. cor. 4. 3.*

4 * Or how sayest thou to thy brother, Suffer me to cast out the mote out of thine eye, and behold, a beame is in thine owne eye? *Mar. 4. 24. luke 6. 38.*

5 Hypocrite, first cast out that beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye. *Luk. 6. 41*

6 ¶ Giue ye not that which is holy to dogges, neither cast ye your pearles before swine, lest they tread them vnder their feete, and turning againe all to rent you. *Chap. 21. 22. mar. 11. 24.*

7 ¶ * Aske, and it shall bee ginen you: seeke, and ye shall find: knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you. *luke 11. 9. ioh. 14. 13 & 16. 23. iam. 1. 5.*

8 For whosoeuer asketh, receiueth: and hee that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened,

9 For what man is there among you, which if his ſonne aſke him bread, would giue him a ſtone?

10 Or if he aske fiſh, will hee giue him a ſerpent?

11 If yee then which are euill can giue to your children good gifts, how much more ſhall your Father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

Luk. 6.31 12 * Therefore whatſoeuer yee would that men ſhould doe to you, euen ſo doe ye to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

Tob. 4.16. Luke 13. 24. 13 ¶ * Enter in at the ſtrait gate: for it is the wide gate and broad way that leadeth to deſtruction: and many there be which goe in thereat,

14 Becauſe the gate is ſtrait, and the way narrow that leadeth vnto life, and few there be that find it.

15 ¶ Beware of falſe prophets, which come to you in ſheepes clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.

Luk. 6.44 16 Yee ſhall know them by their fruits: * Doe men gather grapes of thornes? or figs of thiſtles?

17 So euery good tree bringeth forth good fruit, and a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring foorth euill fruite: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

Cha. 3.10. 19 * Euery tree that bringeth not foorth good fruit, is hewen downe, and caſt into the fire.

20 Therefore by their fruits ye ſhall know them.

21 Not euery one that ſaith vnto mee, Lord, Lord, ſhall enter Rom. 2.13 into the kingdome of heauen,* but he that doeth my Fathers will which is in heauen.

Iam. 1.22 22 * Many will ſay vnto me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue we not by thy Name prophecied? and by thy Name caſt out deuils? and by thy Name done many great workes?

Luke 13. 27. 23 And then will I profeſſe to them,* I neuer knew you: *depart from mee, ye that worke iniquitie.

Pſal. 6 8. Luk. 6.47, 48. 24 Whoſoeuer then heareth of me theſe words,* and doth the ſame, I will liken him to a wiſe man, which hath builded his houſe on a rocke:

25 And the raine fell, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat vpon that houſe, and it fell not: for it was grounded on a rocke.

26 But whoſoeuer heareth theſe my wordes, and doth them not, ſhall be likened vnto a fooliſh man, which hath builded his houſe vpon the ſand:

27 And the raine fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat vpon that houſe, and it fell, and the fall thereof was great.

28 ¶ * And

28 ¶ *And it came to passe when Iesus had ended these words, the people were astonied at his doctrine. *Mat.7.22 luke 4. 32*

29 For he taught them as one hauing authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

The Leper cleansed. 5 The Centurions faith. 11 The calling of the Gentiles, 12 and the casting out of the Iewes. 14 Peters mother in law healed. 19 The Scribe desirous to follow Christ. 23 The tempest on the Sea. 28 Two possessed with deuils cured. 33 The deuils goe into the swine.

NOw when he was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes followed him.

2 *And loe, there came a Leper, and worshipped him, saying, Master, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. *Mar.1.40 luke 5.12.*

3 And Iesus putting foorth his hand, touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane: and immediatly his leprosie was cleansed.

4 Then Iesus saide vnto him, See thou tell no man, but goe, and shew thy selfe vnto the Priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commanded, for a witnesse to them. *Leuit. 14. 3.4.*

5 ¶ * When Iesus was entred into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him, *Luke.7.1.*

6 And said, Master, my seruant lieth sicke at home of the palsie, and is grieuously pained.

7 And Iesus saide vnto him, I will come and heale him.

8 But the Centurion answered, saying, Master, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word onely, and my seruant shalbe healed.

9 For I am a man also vnder the authoritie *of another*, and haue souldiers vnder me: and I say to one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and hee doeth it.

10 When Iesus heard *that*, he marueiled, & said to them that followed *him*, Verely, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith euen in Israel.

11 But I say vnto you, that many shal come from the East and West, and shall sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen.

12 And the children of the kingdome shalbe cast out into vtter * darkenesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. *Chap.22.*

13 Then Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Goe thy way, and as thou hast beleeued, so be it vnto thee. And his seruant was healed the same houre. 13.

14 ¶ * And when Iesus came to Peters house, he saw his wiues mother laid downe, and sicke of a feuer. *Mar.1.29 luke 4. 38*

15 And

15 And he touched her hand, and the feuer left her: so she
rose, and ministred vnto them.

*Mar.*1.32 16 * When the euen was come, they brought vnto him many
Luke 4.40 that were possessed with deuils: and he cast out the spirits with
his word, and healed all that were sicke,

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by * Esaias the
*Isa.*53.4. Prophet, saying, He tooke our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.
1.*pet.*2. 18 ¶ * And when Iesus sawe great multitudes of people about
24. him, he commanded them to goe ouer the water.
*Luk.*9.57 19 * Then came there a certaine Scribe, and said vnto him,
Master, I will follow thee whither soeuer thou goest.

20 But Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birdes
of the heauē haue nestes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon
to rest his head.

21 ¶ And another of his disciples said vnto him, Master, suffer
me first to goe, and burie my Father.

22 But Iesus said vnto him, Follow mee, and let the dead, burie
their dead.

*Mar.*4.37 23 ¶ * And when hee was entred into the shippe, his disciples
*Luk.*8.23. followed him.

24 And beholde, there arose a great tempest in the sea, so that
the ship was couered with wawes: but he was asleepe.

25 Then his disciples came and awoke him, saying, Master,
saue vs: we perish.

26 And he said vnto them, Why are ye fearefull, O ye of little
faith? Then hee arose, and rebuked the windes and the sea, and
there was a great calme.

27 And the men marueiled, saying, What man is this, that both
the windes and the sea obey him?

*Mar.*5.1, 28 ¶ * And when he was come to the other side, into the coun-
2.*Luke* 8. trey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils,
26, 27. which came out of the graues very fierce, so that no man might
goe by that way.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, Iesus the Sonne of God,
what haue we to doe with thee? Art thou come hither to torment
vs before the time?

30 Now there was a farre off from them, a great herd of swine
feeding.

31 And the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suf-
fer vs to goe into the herd of swine.

32 And he said vnto them, Goe: So they went out, and depar-
ted into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine
ranne headlong into the sea and died in the water.

33 Then the herdmen fled: and when they were come into the
citie,

ritie, they told all things, and what was become of them that were possessed with the deuils.

34 And behold, all the citie came out to meet Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him to depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

One sicke of the palsie is healed. 3 Remission of sinnes. 9 Matthew called. 10 Sinners. 17 New wine. 18 The rulers daughter raised. 20 A woman healed of a bloody issue. 28 Two blind men by faith receiue sight. 32 A dumbe man possessed is healed.

37 *The haruest and workemen.*

1 THen he entred into a ship, and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie,

2 And * loe, they brought to him a man sicke of the palsie, layd on a bed. And Iesus seeing their faith, sayd to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, be of good comfort; thy sinnes are forgiuen thee. *Mar.2.3. Luke 5.18.*

3 And beholde, certaine of the Scribes saide with themselues, This man blasphemeth.

4 But when Iesus saw their thoughts, he said, Wherefore thinke ye euill things in your hearts?

5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Arise and walke?

6 And that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (then sayd he vnto the sicke of the palsie) Arise, take vp thy bed and go to thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his owne house.

8 So when the multitude saw it, they marueiled, and glorified God, which had giuen such authority to men.

9 ¶ * And as Iesus passed foorth from thence, he saw a man sitting at the custome, named Matthew, and said to him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him. *Mar.2.14 Luke 5.27.*

10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meat in *his* house, behold, many Publicanes and sinners, that came *thither*, sate downe at the table with Iesus and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharises saw that, they said to his disciples, Why eateth your Master with Publicanes and sinners?

12 Now when Iesus heard it, hee sayd vnto them, The whole neede not a Physician, but they that are sicke.

13 But go ye & learne what this is, * I will haue mercie, and not sacrifice. for I am not come to call the righteous, but the * sinners to repentance. *Hos.6.6. chap.12.7 1.Tim.1.*

14 ¶ * Then came the disciples of Iohn to him, saying, Why do we and the Pharises fast oft, and thy disciples fast not? *15. Mar.2.18*

15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the mariage chamber mourne as long as the bridegrome is with them? but the

dayes will come when the bridegrome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 Moreouer, no man pieceth an olde garment with a piece of new cloth, for that that should fill it vp, taketh away from the garment, and the breach is worse.

17 Neither doe they put new wine into olde vessels: for then the vessels would breake, and the wine would bee spilt, and the vessels should perish. but they put new wine into new vessels, and so are both preserued.

Mar.5.22 *Luke 8.41* 18 ¶ * While he thus spake vnto them, behold, there came a certaine ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is now deceased, but come and lay thine hand on her, and she shall liue.

19 And Iesus arose and followed him, with his disciples.

20 (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For shee said in her selfe, If I may touch but his garment onely, I shalbe whole.

22 Then Iesus turned him about, and seeing her, did say, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole at that same moment.)

23 Now when Iesus came into the rulers house, and sawe the minstrels and the multitude making a noise,

24 Hee said vnto them, Get you hence: for the maide is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 And when the multitude were put foorth, hee went in and tooke her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And this bruit went thorowout all that land.

27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blind men folowed him, crying, and saying, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie vpon vs.

28 And when hee was come into the house, the blind came to him, and Iesus said vnto them, Beleeue yee that I am able to doe this? And they said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened: and Iesus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But when they were departed, they spread abroad his fame throughout all that land.

Luke 11. 14. 32 ¶ * And as they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill.

33 And when the deuill was cast out, the dumbe spake: then the multitude marueiled, saying, The like was neuer seene in Israel.

34 But

34 But the Phariſes ſaid, * He caſteth out deuils through the prince of deuils. *Chap. 12. 24. marke 3.22. luke 11.15.*

35 ¶ And * Ieſus went about all cities and townes, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Goſpel of the kingdome, and healing euery ſickneſſe and euery diſeaſe among the people. *Mar. 6.6.*

36 But * when he ſaw the multitude, he had compaſsion vpon them, becauſe they were diſperſed, and ſcattered abroad, as ſheepe hauing no ſhepheard. *luk. 13.22 Mar. 6.34*

37 The ſaid he to his diſciples, * Surely the harueſt *is* great, but the labourers *are* few. *Luk. 10. 2. iohn 4.*

38 Wherfore pray the Lord of the harueſt, that he would ſend foorth labourers into his harueſt. *35, 36.*

CHAP. X.

1 *The gift of healing giuen to the Apoſtles.* 5 *They are ſent to preach the Goſpel.* 13 *Peace.* 14 *Shaking off the duſt.* 16 *Affliction.* 22 *Continuance vnto the end.* 23 *Flying from perſecution.* 28 *Feare.* 29 *Two ſparrowes.* 30 *Haires of our head.* 32 *To acknowledge Chriſt.* 34 *Peace and the ſword.* 35 *Variance.* 37 *Loue of parents.* 38 *The croſſe.* 39 *To loſe the life.* 40 *To receiue a preacher.*

AND * he called his twelue diſciples vnto him, and gaue them power againſt vncleane ſpirits, to caſt them out, and to heale euery ſickneſſe, and euery diſeaſe. *Marke 3. 13, 14, 15 luke 9.1, 2*

2 Now the names of the twelue Apoſtles are theſe. The firſt Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother: Iames *the ſonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother:

3 Philip and Bartlemew: Thomas and Matthew that Publicane: Iames *the ſonne* of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whoſe ſurname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Iudas Iſcariot, who alſo betrayed him.

5 Theſe twelue did Ieſus ſend foorth, and commanded them, ſaying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the cities of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

6 But goe rather * to the loſt ſheepe of the houſe of Iſrael. *Actes 13*

7 * And as ye goe, preach, ſaying, The kingdome of heauen is at hand. *46. Luk. 10.*

8 Heale the ſicke: cleanſe the lepers: raiſe vp the dead: caſt out the deuils. Freely ye haue receiued, freely giue. *9.11. Mar. 6.8.*

9 * Poſſeſſe not gold, nor ſiluer, nor money in your girdles, *lu. 9.3. &*

10 Nor a ſcrippe for the iourney, neither two coates, neither ſhooes, nor a ſtaffe: * for the workeman is worthie of his meate. *22.35. 1. Tim. 5. 15*

11 And * into whatſoeuer citie or towne yee ſhall come, enquire *Luk. 10. 8*

dayes will come when the bridegrome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 Moreouer, no man pieceth an olde garment with a piece of new cloth, for that that should fill it vp, taketh away from the garment, and the breach is worse.

17 Neither doe they put new wine into olde vessels: for then the vessels would breake, and the wine would bee spilt, and the vessels should perish: but they put new wine into new vessels, and so are both preserued.

Mar. 5.22 Luke 8.41 18 ¶ * While he thus spake vnto them, behold, there came a certaine ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is now deceased, but come and lay thine hand on her, and she shall liue.

19 And Iesus arose and followed him, with his disciples.

20 (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For shee said in her selfe, If I may touch but his garment onely, I shalbe whole.

22 Then Iesus turned him about, and seeing her, did say, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole at that same moment.)

23 Now when Iesus came into the rulers house, and sawe the minstrels and the multitude making a noise,

24 Hee said vnto them, Get you hence: for the maide is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 And when the multitude were put foorth, hee went in and tooke her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And this bruit went thorowout all that land.

27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blind men folowed him, crying, and saying, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie vpon vs.

28 And when hee was come into the house, the blind came to him, and Iesus said vnto them, Beleeue yee that I am able to doe this? And they said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened: and Iesus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But when they were departed, they spread abroad his fame throughout all that land.

Luke 11. 14. 32 ¶ * And as they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill.

33 And when the deuill was cast out, the dumbe spake: then the multitude marueiled, saying, The like was neuer seene in Israel.

34 But

34 But the Pharises said, * He casteth out deuils through the prince of deuils. *Chap. 12. 24. marke*

35 ¶ And * Iesus went about all cities and townes, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sicknesse and euery disease among the people. *3.22. luke 11.15. Mar. 6.6.*

36 But * when he saw the multitude, he had compasion vpon them, because they were dispersed, and scattered abroad, as sheepe hauing no shepheard. *luk. 13.22 Mar. 6.34*

37 The said he to his disciples, * Surely the harueſt *is* great, but the labourers *are* few. *Luk. 10. 2. iohn 4.*

38 Wherfore pray the Lord of the harueſt, that he would send foorth labourers into his harueſt. *35,36.*

CHAP. X.

1 *The gift of healing giuen to the Apostles.* 5 *They are sent to preach the Gospel.* 13 *Peace.* 14 *Shaking off the dust.* 16 *Affliction.* 22 *Continuance vnto the end.* 23 *Flying from persecution.* 28 *Feare.* 29 *Two sparrowes.* 30 *Haires of our head.* 32 *To acknowledge Christ.* 34 *Peace and the sword.* 35 *Variance.* 37 *Loue of parents.* 38 *The crosse.* 39 *To lose the life.* 40 *To receiue a preacher.*

AND * he called his twelue disciples vnto him, and gaue them power against vncleane spirits, to cast them out, and to heale euery sicknesse, and euery disease. *Marke 3. 13,14,15 luke 9.1,2*

2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these. The first Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother: Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother:

3 Philip and Bartlemew: Thomas and Matthew that Publicane: Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelue did Iesus send foorth, and commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the cities of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

6 But goe rather * to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. *Actes 13 46.*

7 * And as ye goe, preach, saying, The kingdome of heauen is at hand. *Luk. 10.*

8 Heale the sicke: cleanse the lepers: raise vp the dead: cast out the deuils. Freely ye haue receiued, freely giue. *9,11. Mar. 6.8.*

9 * Possesse not gold, nor silner, nor money in your girdles, *lu. 9.3. &*

10 Nor a scrippe for the iourney, neither two coates, neither shooes, nor a staffe: * for the workeman is worthie of his meate. *22.35. 1. Tim. 5. 15*

11 And * into whatsoeuer citie or towne yee shall come, en- *Luk. 10.8*

quire who is worthie in it, and there abide till ye goe thence.
12 And when ye come into an house, salute the same.
13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace returne to you.
Mar.6.11 Luk.9.5. Acts 13.51. 14 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare your words, when ye depart out of that house or that citie, * shake off the dust of your feet.
15 Truely I say vnto you, It shalbe easier for them of the land of Sodome and Gomorrha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.
Luke 10.3. 16 ¶ Behold, I send you as sheepe in the mids of the wolues: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and innocent as doues.
17 But beware of men, for they will deliuer you vp to the Councils, and will scourge you in their Synagogues.
18 And yee shall be brought to the gouernours and Kings for my sake, in witnesse to them, and to the Gentiles.
Mar.13.11. Luke 12.11. 19 * But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought how or what ye shall speake: for it shall be giuen you in that houre, what ye shall say.
20 For it is not yee that speake, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.
Luke 21.16. 21 And the * brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne, and the children shall rise against the parents, and shall cause them to die.
Mar.13.13. 22 And yee shall bee hated of all men for my Names * but he that endureth to the end, he shalbe saued.
23 And when they persecute you in this citie, flee into another: for verely I say vnto you, ye shall not go ouer all the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of man be come.
Luk.6.40. Ioh.13.16 & 15.20. Chap.12.24. 24 * The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant aboue his lord.
25 It is enough for the disciple to be as his master is, and the seruant as his lord. * If they haue called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more them of his houshold?
Mar.4.22. Luk.8.17. & 12.2. 26 Feare them not therefore: * for there is nothing couered, that shall not bee discloſed: nor hid, that shall not be knowen.
27 What I tell you in darknesse, that speake ye in light: and what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye on the houses.
28 And feare ye not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soule: but rather feare him, which is able to destroy both soule and bodie in hell.
1.Sam.14.45. 2.Sam.14.11. Acts 27.34. 29 Are not two sparowes sold for a farthing, and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father?
30 * Yea, and all the haires of your head are numbred.

31 Feare

31 Feare yee not therefore, yee are of more value then many
sparrowes.
32 * Whosoeuer therefore shall confesse me before men, him I will I confesse also before my Father which is in heauen. *Mar.8.38 luk. 9.26.*
33 But whosoeuer shall denie me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heauen. *& 12.8. 2.tim.2. 12.*
34 * Thinke not that I am come to send peace into the earth: I came not to send peace, but the sword. *Luke 12. 51.*
35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.
36 * And a mans enemies *shall be* they of his owne houshold. *Mica.7.6*
37 * He that loueth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me. And he that loueth sonne or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me. *Luk. 14. 26.*
38 * And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. *Chap. 16. 24.mar.8 34.luk.9. 23.& 14. 27.*
39 * He that will finde his life, shall lose it, and hee that loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.
40 He that receiueth you, receiueth me: and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that hath sent me. *Ioh. 12. 44.*
41 * He that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet shall receiue a Prophets reward: and hee that receiueth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receiue the reward of a righteous man. *Luke 10.16 ioh.13.20*
42 * And whosoeuer shall giue vnto one of these little ones to drinke a cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verely I say vnto you, he shall not lose his reward. *Mar. 9. 41.*

CHAP. XI.

Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christs testimony of Iohn. 13 The Law and the Prophets. 18 Christ and Iohn. 21 Chorazin, Bethsaida. 25 The Gospel reuealed to children. 28 They that are wearie and laden.

AND it came to passe that when Iesus had made an end of commanding his twelue disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.
2 * And when Iohn heard in the prison the workes of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, and said vnto him, *Luke 7. 18.*
3 Art thou he that should come, or shall we looke for another?
4 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Goe, and shewe Iohn, what things ye heare, and see.
5 The blind receiue sight, and the halt doe walke: the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe heare; the dead are raised vp, * and the poore receiue the Gospel. *Isa. 61.1. luk.4.18*

6 And blessed is hee that shall not be offended in mé.

7 And as they departed, Iesus began to speake vnto the multitude, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

8 But what went yee out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Beholde, they that weare soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out to see? A Prophet? Yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.

Mal. 3.1. Luke 7.28. 10 For this is he of whom it is written, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verely I say vnto you, among them which are begotten of women, arose there not a greater then Iohn Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is the least in the kingdome of heauen is greater then he.

Lu. 16.16 12 And from the * time of Iohn Baptist hitherto, the kingdome of heauen suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the Prophets and the Law prophesied vnto Iohn.

Mal. 4.5 14 And if yee will receiue it, this is that *Elias which was to come.

15 ¶ He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

Lu. 7.31. 16 * But wherunto shall I liken this generation? It is like vnto little children which sit in the markets, and call vnto their fellowes,

17 And say, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced, we haue mourned vnto you, and yee haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a deuill.

19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes and sinners: but wisdome is iustified of her children.

Lu. 10.13 20 ¶ * Then began he to vpbraid the cities wherein most of his great works were done, because they repented not.

21 Woe *be* to thee, Chorazin: Woe *be* to thee, Bethsaida: for if the great works which were done in you, had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, they had repented long agone in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say to you, it shall be easier for Tyrus and Sidon at the day of Iudgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art lifted vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hel: for if the great works which haue bin done in thee, had bene done among them of Sodom, they had remained to this day.

24 But I say vnto you, that it shalbe easier for them of the land of Sodom in the day of iudgment, then for thee.

Lu. 10.21 25 * At that time Iesus answered, and said, I giue thee thankes, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things

things from the wise, and men of vnderstanding, and hast opened them vnto babes.

26 It is so, O Father, because thy good pleasure was such.

27 *All things are giuen me of my Father: and *no man know- *Ioh. 3.35.
eth the Sonne, but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Fa- *Ioh.6.46.
ther, but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueile *him.*

28 Come vnto me, all ye that are wearie and laden, and I will ease you.

29 Take my yoke on you, and learne of mee, that I am meeke and lowly in heart: and yee shall find * rest vnto your soules. *Ierem.6.16*

30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden light. *1.Ioh.5.3.*

CHAP. XII.

The disciples plucke the eares of corne. 6 Mercie, Sacrifice. 10 The withered hand is healed. 12 We must doe good on the Sabbath. 22 The possessed holpen. 25 A kingdome diuided. 31 Sinne, Blasphemie. 33 The good or euill tree. 34 Vipers. 41 The Ninenites. 42 The queene of Saba. 48 The true mother and brethren of Christ.

AT * that time Iesus went on a Sabbath day thorow the corne, *Mar.2.23.*
and his disciples were an hungred, *and* began to plucke the *Luke 6.1.*
eares of corne and to eate.

2 And when the Pharises saw it, they said vnto him, Behold, thy disciples do that *which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sab- *Deut. 23.*
bath. *25.*

3 But he said vnto them, * Haue ye not read what Dauid did *1.Sam.21.*
when he was an hungred, and they that were with him? *6.*

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the Shew-bread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the * Priests? *Exod.29.*

5 Or haue yee not read in the law, how that on the Sabbath *33.leuit.*
daies the Priestes in the Temple * breake the Sabbath, and are *8.31.&*
blamelesse? *24.9.*

6 But I say vnto you, that here is one greater then the Temple. *Num.28*

7 Wherefore if ye knew what this is, *I will haue mercie and *9.*
not sacrifice, yee would not haue condemned the innocents. *Hosh. 6.6.*

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord, *euen* of the Sabbath. *chap.9.13*

9 * And hee departed thence, and went into their Synagogue. *Mar.3.1.*

10 And beholde, there was a man which had *his* hand dried vp. *luk. 6.6.*
And they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heale vpon a Sabbath day? that they might accuse him.

11 And hee said vnto them, What man shall there bee among you, that hath a sheepe, and if it fall on a Sabbath day into a pit, doth not take it, and lift it out?

12 How much more then is a man better then a sheepe?

Therefore it is lawfull to doe well on a Sabbath day.

13 Then said he to the man, Stretch foorth thine hand. And he stretched it foorth, and it was made whole like as the other.

14 Then the Pharises went out and consulted against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when Iesus knew it, he departed thence, and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them in threatning wise that they should not make him knowen,

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

Isa.42.1 18 *Behold my seruant whome I haue chosen, my beloued in whom my soule delighteth: I will put my Spirit on him, and he shall shew iudgement to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not striue nor crie, neither shall any man heare his voice in the streets:

20 A bruised reed shall he not breake, and smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he bring foorth iudgement vnto victorie.

21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust.

Luk.11.14 22 ¶ *Then was brought to him one possessed with a deuill, both blind and dumbe, and he healed him, so that hee which was blinde and dumbe, both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this that Sonne of Dauid?

Chap.9.34. mar.3.22. luk.11.15. 24 But when the Pharises heard it, they saide, *This man casteth the deuils no otherwise out, but through Beelzebub the prince of deuils.

25 But Iesus knewe their thoughts, and saide to them, Euery kingdome diuided against it selfe is brought to nought: and euery citie or house diuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

26 *Soif* Satan cast out Satan, hee is diuided against himselfe: how shall then his kingdome endure?

27 Also if I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore they shalbe your iudges.

28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then is the kingdome of God come vnto you.

29 Els how can a man enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods, except he first bind the strong man, and then spoile his house?

Mar.3.28,29. luk.12.10. 1.ioh.5.16. 30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

31 * Wherefore I say vnto you, Euery sinne, and blasphemy shalbe forgiuen vnto men: but the blasphemie *against* the holy Ghost shal not be forgiuen vnto men.

32 And

32 And whosoeuer shall speake a worde against the Sonne of man, it shal be forgiuen him: but whosoeuer shall speake against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree euil, and his fruit euil; for the tree is knowen by the fruit.

34 O generations of vipers, how can ye speake good things, when yee are euill? for of the * abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. *Lu.6.45*

35 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth foorth good things, and an euill man, out of an euill treasure bringeth forth euill things.

36 But I say vnto you, That of euery idle word that men shall speake, they shal giue account thereof at the day of iudgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be iustified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ * Then answered certaine of the Scribes and of the Pharises, saying, Master, wee would see a signe of thee. *Cha.16.1 luke 11.*

39 But he answered, and said to them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh a signe, but no signe shal be giuen vnto it, saue that signe of the Prophet Ionas. *29. 1.cor. 1.22.*

40 * For as Ionas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Sonne of man bee three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth. *Ionas 1. 17.*

41 The men of Nineue shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and condemne it: for they * repented at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas is here. *Ionas 3. 5*

42 * The Queene of the South shall rise in iudgment with this generation, and shall condemne it: for she came from the vtmost parts of the earth to heare the wisdome of Salomon: and behold, a greater then Salomon is here. *1.King.10 1.2.chro. 9.1.*

43 ¶ * Now when the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, hee walketh thorowout drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none: *Luke 11. 24.*

44 Then he saith, I will returne into mine house from whence I came: and when hee is come, hee findeth it emptie, swept, and garnished.

45 ¶ Then hee goeth, and taketh vnto him seuen other spirits worse then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there, * and the end of that man is worse then the beginning. Euen so shall it bee with this wicked generation. *Heb.6.4 & 10.26. 2.pet.2.20*

46 ¶ * While he yet spake to the multitude, behold, his mother and his brethren stoode without, desiring to speake with him. *Mar.3.31 like 8.19.*

47 Then

47 Then one said vnto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee.

48 But he answered, and said to him that tolde him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched foorth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoeuer shall doe my Fathers will which is in heauen, the same is my brother and sister and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The parable of the sower.* 11 *and* 34 *Why Christ spake in parables.* 18 *The exposition of the parable.* 24 *The parable of the tares.* 31 *Of the mustard seede.* 33 *Of the leauen.* 44 *Of the hidden treasure.* 45 *Of the pearle.* 47 *Of the draw-net cast into the Sea.* 53 *Christ is not receiued of his countreymen the Nazarites.*

Mar. 4. 1. *Luke* 8. 4, 5 THe * same day went Iesus out of the house, and sate by the sea side,

2 And great multitudes resorted vnto him, so that hee went into a ship, and sate downe: and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 Then he spake many things to them in parables, saying, Behold, a Sower went forth to sow.

4 And as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and the foules came and deuoured them vp.

5 And some fell vpon stony ground, where they had not much earth, and anon they sprung vp, because they had no depth of earth.

6 And when the Sunne rose vp, they were parched, and for lacke of rooting, withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprung vp, and choked them.

8 Some againe fell in good ground, and brought foorth fruit, one *corne* an hundred folde, some sixtie folde, and another thirtie folde.

9 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 ¶ Then the disciples came and said to him, Why speakest thou to them in parables?

11 And hee answered, and said vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you to know the secrets of the kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not giuen.

Chap. 25. 29. 12 * For whosoeuer hath, to him shall be giuen, and hee shall haue abundance: but whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken away, euen that he hath.

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables, because they seeing,

ing, doe not see: and hearing, they heare not, neither vnderstand.

14 So in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Esaias, which *prophesieth*, saith, * By hearing ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceiue. *Esa. 6.9. mar. 4.12 luke 8.10 ioh. 12.40 act. 28.26 rom. 11.8*

15 For this peoples heart is waxed fat, and their eares are dull of hearing, and vvith their eyes they haue winked, lest they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should vnderstand with their hearts, & should returne that I might heale them.

16 But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare.

17 * For verely I say vnto you, that many Prophets and righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene *them*, and to heare those things which yee heare, and haue not heard *them*. *Luke 10 24.*

18 ¶ * Heare yee therefore the parable of the sower. *Mar 4.*

19 When soeuer any man heareth the word of that kingdome, and vnderstandeth it not, the euill one commeth and catcheth away that which was sowen in his heart: and this is he which hath receiued the seed by the way side. *15. luke 8.11.*

20 And he that receiued seed in the stony ground, is hee which heareth the worde, and incontinently with ioy receiueth it.

21 Yet hath hee no roote in himselfe, and dureth but a season: for assoone as tribulation or persecution commeth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 And hee that receiueth the seede among thornes, is he that heareth the word, but the care of this world and the deceitfulnes of riches choke the word, and he is made vnfruitfull.

23 But hee that receiueth the seed in the good ground, is hee that heareth the word, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth foorth, some an hundred folde, some sixtie fold, and some thirtie fold.

24 ¶ Another parable put hee foorth vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man vvhich sowed good seed in his field.

25 But while men slept, there came his enemie, and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way,

26 And when the blade was sprung vp, and brought foorth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 Then came the seruants of the housholder, and said vnto him, Master, sowedst not thou good seede in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 And hee said to them, Some enuious man hath done this. Then the seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that we goe and gather them vp?

29 But

29 But he said, Nay, lest while ye go about to gather the tares ye plucke vp also with them the wheate.

30 Let both grow together vntil the harueſt, and in time of harueſt I will say to the reapers, Gather ye firſt the tares, & bind them in ſheaues to burne them: but gather the wheate into my barne.

Mar. 4.30 *Luke* 13. 19. 31 ¶ *Another parable he put foorth vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a graine of muſtard ſeede, which a man taketh and ſoweth in his field:

32 Which indeede is the leaſt of all ſeedes: but when it is growen, it is the greateſt among herbes, and it is a tree ſo that the birds of heauen come and build in the branches thereof.

Luke 13. 21. 33 ¶ *Another parable ſpake hee to them, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman taketh and hideth in three pecks of meale, till all be leauened.

Mar. 4. 33. 34 ¶ *All theſe things ſpake Ieſus vnto the multitude in parables and without parables ſpake he not vnto them,

Pſal. 78. 2 35 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by the Prophet, saying, *I will open my mouth in parables, and will vtter the things which haue beene kept ſecret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then ſent Ieſus the multitude away, and went into the houſe, and his diſciples came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of that field.

37 Then anſwered hee, and ſaid to them, Hee that ſoweth the good ſeed, is the Sonne of man.

38 And the field is the world, and the good ſeede are the children of the kingdome, and the tares are the children of that wicked one.

Ioel. 3. 13. *Reuel.* 14. 15. 39 And the enemie that ſoweth them is the deuill, *and the harueſt is the end of the world, and the reapers be the Angels.

40 As then the tares are gathered, and burned in the fire, ſo ſhall it be in the end of this world.

41 The Sonne of man ſhall ſend foorth his Angels, and they ſhall gather out of his kingdome all things that offend, and them which doe iniquitie,

42 And ſhall caſt them into a fornace of fire. There ſhall be wailing and gnaſhing of teeth.

Dan. 12. 3 43 *Then ſhall the iuſt men ſhine as the ſunne in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

44 ¶ Againe the kingdom of heauen is like vnto a treaſure hid in the field, which when a man hath found, he hideth it, and for ioy thereof departeth, & ſelleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a merchant man, that ſeeketh good pearles,

46 Who

46 Who hauing found a pearle of great price, went and solde all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a draw net cast into the sea, that gathereth of all kinds *of things*.

48 Which when it is full, men draw to land, and sit and gather the good into vessels and cast the bad away.

49 So shal it be at the end of the world. The Angels shall goe foorth, and seuer the bad from among the iust,

50 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 ¶ Iesus said vnto them, Vnderstand yee all these things? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said hee vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is taught vnto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto an housholder which bringeth forth out of his treasure things both new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Iesus had ended these parables, he departed thence,

54 * And came into his owne country, and taught them in their Synagogues, so that they were astonied, and said, Whence commeth this wisedome and great workes vnto this man? *Mar. 6.1. luke 4.16*

55 Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Mary, * and his brethren Iames and Ioses, and Simon, and Iudas? *Iob. 6.42.*

56 And are not his sisters all with vs? Whence then hath hee all these things?

57 And they were offended with him. Then Iesus sayd to them, * A Prophet is not without honour, saue in his owne country, and in his owne house. *Mar. 6.4. luke 4.24.*

58 And hee did not many great workes there, for their vnbeliefes sake.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 Herods iudgement of Christ. 3 Wherefore Iohn was bound, 10 and beheaded. 13 Iesus departeth. 18 Of the fiue loaues, &c. 23 Christ prayeth. 24 The Apostles tossed with the waues. 27 Faith. 30 Peter in ieopardie. 36 the hemme of Christs garment.

AT * that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus, 2 And said vnto his seruants, This is that Iohn Baptist: he is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great workes are wrought by him. *Mar. 6. 14. luke 9.7.*

3 * For Herod had taken Iohn and bound him, and put him in prison, for Herodias sake his brother Philips wife. *Mar. 6. 17. luke 3. 19.*

4 For Iohn sayde vnto him, It is not * lawfull for thee to haue her. *Leuit. 18. 16 and 20.21.*

5 And when he would haue put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a * Prophet. *Cha. 21.25*

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Wherefore he promised with an othe that he would giue her whatsoeuer she would aske.

8 And she being before instructed of her mother, saide, Giue me here Iohn Baptists head in a platter.

9 And the king was sory: neuertheless, because of the othe, and them that sate with him at the table, he commanded it to be giuen *her*,

10 And sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a platter, and giuen to the maide, and shee brought it vnto her mother.

12 And his disciples came and tooke vp the body and buried it, and went and told Iesus.

Marke 6. 32. Luke 9. 10.

13 * And when Iesus heard it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart. And when the multitude had heard it, they followed him afoote out of the cities.

14 And Iesus went foorth, and saw a great multitude, and was mooued with compassion toward them, and he healed their sicke.

Mar. 6. 35 Luke 9. 12. Iohn 6. 5.

15 ¶ And when euen was come, his * disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is already past: let the multitude depart, that they may goe into the townes, and buy them victuales.

16 But Iesus said to them, They haue no neede to goe away, giue yee them to eate.

17 Then said they vnto him, We haue here but fiue loaues, and two fishes.

18 And he said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And hee commaunded the multitude to sit downe on the grasse, & tooke the fiue loaues and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen and blessed, and brake, and gaue the loaues to his disciples and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eate, and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, twelue baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten were about fiue thousand men, besides women and little children.

22 ¶ And straightway Iesus compelled his disciples to enter into a shippe, & to go ouer before him, while he sent the multitude away.

23 And assoone as he had sent the multitude away, he went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: * and when the euening was come, hee was there alone.

Marke 6. 45,46,47. Iohn 6. 16, 17, 18.

24 And the ship was now in the mids of the sea, and was tossed with waues: for it was a contrary wind.

25 And

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the sea.

26 And when his disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, and cryed out for feare.

27 But straightway Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good comfort, It is I, be not afraid.

28 Then Peter answered him, and said, Master, if it be thou, bid me come vnto thee on the water.

29 And hee said, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the ship, he walked on the water to goe to Iesus.

30 But when he saw a mighty winde, he was afraid: and as hee began to sinke, hee cryed, saying, Master, saue me.

31 So immediatly Iesus stretched foorth his hand, and caught him, and said to him, O thou of little faith, wherefore diddest thou doubt?

32 And assoon as they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth thou art the Sonne of God.

34 ¶ * And when they were come ouer, they came into the land of Gennezaret. *Mar. 6. 54.*

35 And when the men of that place knew him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought vnto him all that were sicke,

36 And besought him that they might touch the hemme of his garment onely: and as many as touched it were made whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 The commaundements and traditions of men. 12 Offence. 13 The plant which is rooted vp. 14 Blinde leading the blinde. 18 The heart. 22 The woman of Canaan. 26 The childrens bread: whelps. 28 Faith. 32 4000 men fed. 36 Thankesgiuing.

THen came to Iesus the Scribes and Pharises, which were of Hierusalem, saying,

2 * Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. *Mar. 7. 1.*

3 But he answered, and said vnto them, Why do ye also transgresse the commandement of God by your tradition?

4 * For God hath commanded, saying, Honour thy father and thy mother: * and hee that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. *Exod. 20. 12. deut. 5 16. ephes. 6. 2.*

5 But yee say, Whosoeuer shall say to father or mother, By the gift that is *offred* by me, thou mayest haue profite, *Exod. 21. 17. leu. 20 9. prou. 20. 20.*

6 Though hee honour not his father or his mother, *shall bee free*: thus haue ye made the Commandement of God of no authoritie by your tradition.

7 O Hy-

7 O hypocrites, Esaias prophesied well of you, saying,
Esa.29.13 8 *This people draweth neere vnto me with their mouth,
honoureth me with the lips, but their heart is farre off from
9 But in vaine they worship mee, teaching *for* doctrines,
precepts.
10 Then he called the multitude vnto him, and sayd to
Heare and vnderstand.
Mar.7.18 11 That which goeth into the mouth, defileth not the
but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the
12 ¶ Then came his disciples and said vnto him, Perce
thou not that the Pharises are offended in hearing *this* saying
Iohn 15.2 13 But hee answered, and said, * Euery plant which mine
vnto my Father hath not planted, shall be rooted vp.
Luk 6.39 14 Let them alone: they be the * blinde leaders of the bl
and if the blinde leade the blinde both shall fall into the ditc
Mar.7.17 15 ¶ * Then answered Peter, and said to him, Declare vn
this parable.
16 Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding?
17 Perceiue ye not yet, that whatsoeuer entreth into the mou
goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?
18 But those things which proceede out of the mouth, co
from the heart, and they defile the man.
Gene.6.5. 19 For out of the heart come * euill thoughts, murthers, ad
and 8.21. teries, fornications, theeftes, false testimonies, slanders.
Mar.7.21. 20 These are the things which defile the man: but to eate w
vnwashen hands defileth not the man.
Mark.7. 21 * And Iesus went thence, and departed into the coast
24.25. Tyrus and Sidon.
22 And behold, a woman, a Cananite came out of the sa
coasts, and cryed, saying vnto him, Haue mercie on me, O Lo
the sonne of Dauid: my daughter is miserably vexed with a dee
23 But hee answered her not a word. Then came to him h
disciples, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for the cry
after vs.
Ezek.34.6. 24 But he answered, and said, I am not sent, but vnto the * lo
sheepe of the house of Israel.
25 Yet she came, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, helpe m
26 And he answered, and said, It is not good to take the ch
drens bread, and to cast it to whelpes.
27 But shee said, Truth, Lord: Yet indeed the whelpes eate
the crummes which fal from their masters table.
28 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto her, O woman, great
thy faith: be it to thee, as thou desirest. And her daughter wa
made whole at that houre.

29 ¶ S

29 ¶ So Iesus * went away from thence, and came neere vnto the sea of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine, and sate downe there. *Mar.7.31*

30 And great multitudes came vnto him, * hauing with them, halt, blind, dumbe, maimed, and many other, and cast them down at Iesus feete, and he healed them, *Esa.35.5.*

31 In so much that the multitude wondered, to see the dumbe speake, the maimed whole, the halt to goe, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 * Then Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and said, I haue compassion on this multitude, because they haue continued with me already three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I will not let them depart fasting, lest they faint in the way. *Mar.8.1.*

33 And his disciples said vnto him, Whence should we get so much bread in y wildernes, as should suffice so great a multitude?

34 And Iesus said vnto them, How many loaues haue ye? and they said, Seuen, and a few little fishes.

35 Then hee commanded the multitude to sit downe on the ground,

36 And tooke the seuen loaues and the fishes, and gaue thanks, and brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eate, and were sufficed: and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, seuen baskets full.

38 And they that had eaten, were foure thousand men, beside women and little children.

39 Then *Iesus* sent away the multitude, and tooke ship, and came into the parts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

4. The signe of Ionas. 6 The leauen of the Pharises, 12 for their doctrine. 13 The peoples opinion of Christ. 17 Faith commeth of God. 18 The rocke. 19 The keyes. 21 Christ foresheweth his death. 24 The forsaking of ones selfe, and the crosse. 52 To lose the life.

THen * came the Pharises and Sadducees, and did tempt *him*, desiring him to shewe them a signe from heauen. *Chap.12.38. Mark 8.11.*

2 But he answered and said vnto them, When it is euening, ye say, Faire weather: for the skie is red.

3 * And in the morning *ye say*, To day *shall be* a tempest: for the skie is red and lowring. O hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie, and can ye not *discerne* the signes of the times? *Luke 12.54.*

4 *The wicked generation and adulterous seeketh a signe, but there shall no signe be giuen it, but that signe of the Prophet * Ionas: so hee left them, and departed. *Chap.12.39. Ion.1.17.*

5 ¶ And when his disciples were come to the other side, they
Mar.8.14 had *forgotten to take bread *with them*.
Luk.12.1. 6 Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heede and beware of the
leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces.
7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is* because
we haue brought no bread.
8 But Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, O yee of little faith,
why reason yee *thus* among your selues, because ye haue brought
no bread?
9 Doe ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fiue loaues
Chap.14. when there were * fiue thousand *men*, and how many baskets
17.John tooke ye vp?
6.9. 10 Neither the seuen loaues when there were * foure thousand
Chap.15.34 *men*, and how many baskets tooke ye vp?
11 Why perceiue ye not, that I said not vnto you concerning
bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharises and
Sadduces?
12 Then vnderstood they that he had not said that they should
beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharises
and Sadduces.
Mar.8.27 13 ¶ *Now when Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philip-
Luk.9.18. pi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom doe men say that I, the
Sonne of man, am?
14 And they said, Some *say*, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias:
and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.
15 He said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am?
Ioh.6.69. 16 Then Simon Peter answered, and said, * Thou art that
Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.
17 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Blessed art thou,
Simon the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood hath not reuealed
Iohn 1.42 it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.
18 And I say also vnto thee that thou art *Peter, and vpon this
rocke will I build my Church: and the gates of hell shall not ouercome it.
Ioh.20. 19 And * I will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of
23. heauen, and whatsoeuer thou shalt binde vpon earth, shall be
bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall
be loosed in heauen.
20 Then charged he his disciples, that they should tell no
man that he was Iesus that Christ.
21 ¶ From that time forth Iesus began to shew vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many things
of the Elders, and of the high Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine,
and rise againe the third day.

22 Then

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pitie thy selfe: this shall not be vnto thee.

23 Then hee turned backe, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence vnto mee, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

24 Iesus then said to his disciples, * If any man will follow me, let him forsake himselfe and take vp his crosse, and follow me.

25 For * whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 * For what shall it profit a man though hee should winne the whole world, if he lose his owne soule? or what shall a man giue for recompence of his soule?

27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and * then shall he giue to euery man according to his deeds.

28 * Verily I say vnto you, there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome.

Chap. 10. 38. mar 8 34. luke 9. 23. and 14. 27.

Chap. 10. 39. mar 8. 35, 36. luke 9. 24, 25, 26. and 17. 33. Iohn 12. 25 P. 62. 12 rom. 2. 6.

Mar. 9. 1. luke 9. 27

2 The transfiguration of Christ. 5 Christ caught to be heard. 11 Elias. 12 Iohn Baptist. 17 The vnbeliefe of the Apostles. 20 The power of faith. 21 Prayer and fasting. 22 Christ foretelleth his passion. 24 He payeth tribute.

AND * after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and Iames, and Iohn his brother, and brought them vp into an high mountaine apart,

Mar. 9. 2. luke 9. 28

2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his clothes were as white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make here three Tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud shadowed them: and behold, there *came* a voice out of the cloud, saying, * This is that my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare him.

Chap. 3. 17. 2. pet. 1. 17.

6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraid.

7 Then Iesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they saw no man, saue Iesus onely.

5 ¶ And when his disciples were come to the other side, they
Mar.8.14 had *forgotten to take bread *with them*.
Luk.12.1. 6 Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heede and beware of the
leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is* because
we haue brought no bread.

8 But Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, O yee of little faith,
why reason yee *thus* among your selues, because ye haue brought
no bread?

9 Doe ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fiue loaues
Chap.14. when there were * fiue thousand *men*, and how many baskets
17.Iohn tooke ye vp?
6.9.
Cha.15.34 10 Neither the seuen loaues, when there were * foure thousand
men, and how many baskets tooke ye vp?

11 Why perceiue ye not, that I said not vnto you concerning
bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharises and
Sadduces?

12 Then vnderstood they that he had not said that they should
beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharises
and Sadduces.

Mar.8.27 13 ¶ *Now when Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi,
Luk.9.18. he asked his disciples, saying, Whom doe men say that I, the
Sonne of man, am?

14 And they said, Some *say*, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias:
and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am?

Iob.6.69. 16 Then Simon Peter answered, and said, * Thou art that
Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.

17 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Blessed art thou,
Simon the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood hath not reuealed it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

Iohn 1.42 18 And I say also vnto thee that thou art *Peter, and vpon this
rocke will I build my Church: and the gates of hell shall not ouercome it.

Iohn 20. 19 And *I will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of
23. heauen, and whatsoeuer thou shalt binde vpon earth, shall bee
bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall
be loosed in heauen.

20 Then hee charged his disciples, that they should tell no
man that he was Iesus that Christ.

21 ¶ From that time foorth Iesus began to shew vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many things
of the Elders, and of the high Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine,
and rise againe the third day.

22 Then

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pitie thy selfe: this shall not be vnto thee.

23 Then hee turned backe, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence vnto mee, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men. *Chap.* 20. 38. *mar* 8. 34. *luke* 9. 23. *and*

24 Iesus then said to his disciples, * If any man will follow me, let him forsake himselfe and take vp his crosse, and follow me. 14. 27. *Chap.* 10.

25 For * whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake, shall finde it. 39. *make* 8. 35, 36.

26 * For what shall it profit a man though hee should winne the whole world, if he lose his owne soule? or what shall a man giue for recompence of his soule? *luke* 9. 24. 25, 26. *and* 17. 33.

27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and * then shall he giue to euery man according to his deeds. *John* 12. 25 *Psa.* 62. 12

28 * Verily I say vnto you, there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome. *Rom.* 2. 6. *Mar.* 9. 1. *luke* 9. 27

CHAP. XVII.

The transfiguration of Christ. 5 *Christ ought to be heard.* 11 *Elias.* 12 *Iohn Baptist.* 17 *The vnbeliefe of the Apostles.* 20 *The power of faith.* 21 *Prayer and fasting.* 22 *Christ foretelleth his passion.* 24 *He payeth tribute.*

AND * after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and Iames, and Iohn his brother, and brought them vp into an high mountaine apart, *Mar.* 9. 2. *luke* 9. 28

2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his clothes were as white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make here three Tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud shadowed them: and behold, there *came* a voice out of the cloud, saying, * This is that my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare him. *Chap.* 3. 17. 2. *pet.* 1. 17.

6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraid.

7 Then Iesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they sawe no man, saue Iesus onely.

9 ¶ And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying, Shew the vision to no man, vntill the Sonne of man rise againe from the dead.

Mar.9. 11,12. 10 *And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that *Elias must first come?

Mal.4.5. chap.11. 14. 11 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Certainely Elias must first come, and restore all things.

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come alreadie, and they knew him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would: likewise also shall the Sonne of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples perceiued that he spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist.

Mark 9. 14. Luke 9.38. 14 ¶ *And when they were come to the multitude, there came vnto him a certaine man, and fell downe at his feete,

15 And said, Master, haue pitty on my sonne: for he is lunatike, and is sore vexed: for oft times hee falleth into the fire, and oft times into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not heale him.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse and crooked, how long now shall I be with you? how long now shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Iesus rebuked the deuill, and he went out of him, and the child was healed at that houre.

19 Then came the disciples to Iesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Iesus said vnto them, Because of your vnbeliefe: for *Luk.17.6* *verely I say vnto you, if yee haue faith *as much* as is a graine of mustard seede, ye shall say vnto this mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place, and it shall remoue: and nothing shalbe vnpossible vnto you.

21 Howbeit, this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

Chap.20. 17.Mar.9 31.Luke.9 44.and 7. 24. 22 ¶ And they *being in Galile, Iesus said vnto them, The sonne of man shall be deliuered into the hands of men,

23 And they shall kill him, but the third day shall he rise againe: and they were very sory.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued poll money came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your Master pay poll money?

25 He said, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom doe the kings of the earth take tribute or poll money? of their children, or of strangers?

26 Peter

26 Peter said vnto him, Of strangers. Then said Iesus vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Nevertheles, lest we should offend them, goe to the sea, and cast in an angle, and take the first fish that commeth vp, and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of twenty pence, that take, and giue it vnto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The greatest in the kingdome of God. 5 To receiue a little child. 6 To giue offence. 7 Offences. 9 The pulling out of the eye. 10 The Angels. 12 The lost sheepe. 15 The telling of one his fault. 17 Excommunication. 21 We must always pardon the brother that repenteth. 23 The parable of the King that taketh an account of his seruants.

THe *same time the disciples came vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen? *Mar. 9. 34. Luke 9. 46.*

2 And Iesus called a little child vnto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verely I say vnto you, Except ye be *conuerted, and become as little children, yee shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen. *Cha. 19. 14. 1. cor. 14. 20.*

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this little childe, the same is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen.

5 And whosoeuer shall receiue one such little childe in my Name, receiueth me.

6 *But whosoeuer shall offend one of these little ones which beleeue in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. *Mar. 9. 42 luke 17. 2*

7 Woe *be* vnto the world because of offences: for it must needes be that offences shall come, but woe *be* to that man, by whom the offence commeth.

8 *Wherefore, if thy hand or thy foote cause thee to offend, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life, halt, or maimed, then hauing two handes or two feet, to be cast into euerlasting fire. *Cha. 5. 29, 30. mar. 9 45.*

9 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, then hauing two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 See that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their *Angels alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen. *Psal. 34. 8*

11 For *the Sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost. *Luke 19. 10.*

12 How thinke yee? *If a man haue an hundred sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leaue ninety and nine, and *Luk. 15. 4*

goe into the mountaines and seeke that which is gone astray?

13 And if so be that he finde it, verely I say vnto you, he reioy-
ceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went
not astray:

14 So is it not the will of your Father which is in heauen, that
one of these little ones should perish.

Leuit. 19. 15 ¶ * Moreouer, if thy brother trespasse against thee, goe and
7. Luk. 17 tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if hee heare thee,
3. Iames thou hast wonne thy brother.
5. 19.

16 But if hee heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two,
Deut. 19. that by the * mouth of two or three witnesses euery word may
15. Ioh. 8. be confirmed.
17. 2. Cor.

17 And if he refuse to heare them, tell it vnto the Church: and
13. 1. Tim. if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him be vnto thee as an
10. 28. heathen man and a Publicane.

1 Cor. 5. 4. 18 Verely I say vnto you * Whatsoeuer ye bind on earth, shall
2 Thes. 3. be bound in heauen: and * whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shall be
14. loosed in heauen.

Apoc. 20. 23 19 Againe, verely I say vnto you, that if two of you shall agree
in earth vpon any thing, whatsoeuer they shall desire, it shall bee
giuen them of my Father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name,
there am I in the mids of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Master, how oft shall my
Luk. 17. 4 brother sin against me and I shal forgiue him? * vnto seuen times?

22 Iesus said vnto him, I say not to thee, Vnto seuen times, but
Vnto seuentie times seuen times.

23 Therefore is the kingdome of heauen likened vnto a cer-
taine King which would take an account of his seruants.

24 And when hee had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto
him which ought him ten thousand talents.

25 And because hee had nothing to pay, his Lord commanded
him to be sold, and his wife, and *his* children, and all that he had,
and *so* debt to be paide.

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and worshipped him, say-
ing, Lord, refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then that seruants Lord had compassion, and loosed him,
and forgaue him the debt.

28 But when the seruant was departed, he found one of his fel-
low seruants which ought him an hundred pence, & he laid hands
on him, and thrasled him saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 Then his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and be-
sought him, saying, Refraine thine anger towards me, and I will
pay thee all.

30 Yet

30 Yet he would not, but went and caſt him into priſon, till he ſhould pay the debt.

31 And when his *other* fellowe ſeruants ſawe what was done, they were very ſorie, and came, and declared to their Lord all that was done.

32 Then his Lord called him vnto him, and ſaid to him, O euil ſeruant, I forgaue thee all that debt, becauſe thou prayedſt me.

33 Oughteſt not thou alſo to haue had pitie on thy fellow ſeruant, euen as I had pittie on thee?

34 So his Lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentours, till he ſhould pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So likewiſe ſhall mine heauenly Father doe vnto you, except yee forgiue from your hearts, each one to his brother their treſpaſſes.

CHAP. XIX.

2 The ſicke are healed. 3 and 7 A bill of diuorcement. 12 Eunuches. 13 Children brought to Chriſt. 17 God onely good. The commandements muſt be kept. 21 A perfect man. 23 A rich man. 26 Saluation commeth of God. 27 To leaue all and follow Chriſt.

AND * it came to paſſe, that when Ieſus had finiſhed theſe ſayings, he departed from Galile, and came into the coaſts of Iudea, beyond Iordan. *Mar.10.1*

2 And great multitudes followed him, and hee healed them there.

3 ¶ There came vnto him the Phariſes, tempting him and ſaying to him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon euery occaſion?

4 And he anſwered, and ſayd vnto thē, Haue yee not read, * that hee which made *thē* at the beginning, made thē male and female, *Gen.1.27*

5 And ſaid, * For this cauſe ſhall a man leaue Father and mother and cleaue vnto his wife, and they which were two ſhall bee one fleſh? *Gen.2.24. 1 cor.6. 16. ephes. 5.31.*

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one fleſh. Let not man therfore putaſunder that which God hath coupled together.

7 They ſaid to him, Why did then * Moſes command to giue a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away? *Deu.24.1.*

8 He ſaid vnto them Moſes becauſe of the hardneſſe of your heart, ſuffered you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not ſo. *Ch.2.5.22.*

9 I ſay therefore vnto you, * that whoſoeuer ſhall put away his wife, except *it be* for whoredome, and marry another, committeth adultery: and whoſoeuer marrieth her which is diuorced, doeth commit adultery. *mar.10. 11. luk.16 18. 1.cor. 7.11.*

10 *Then* said his disciples to him, If the matter be so betweene man and wife, it is not good to marrie.

11 But he said vnto them, All men cannot receiue this thing, saue they to whom it is giuen.

12 For there are some eunuches, which were so borne of *their* mothers belly: and there be some eunuches, which be gelded by men: and there be some eunuches which haue gelded themselues for the kingdome of heauen. He that is able to receiue *this*, let him receiue it.

Mar. 10. 13 ¶ * Then were brought to him little children that he should
Luke 18.15. put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.
14 But Iesus said, Suffer the little children, and forbid them
Ezek. 18.3. not to come to me: for of such is the kingdome of heauen.

15 And when hee had put his hands on them, hee departed thence.

Mar. 10. 16 ¶ * And behold, one came and said vnto him, Good Master,
17. *Luke* what good thing shall I doe that I may haue eternall life?
18.18. 17 And he said vnto him, Why callest thou mee good? there is none good but one, euen God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commaundements.

Exod. 20. 18 He said to him, Which? And Iesus said. * These, Thou shalt
13. *deut.* 5 not kill: Thou shalt not commit adulterie: Thou shalt not steale:
16. *rom.* Thou shalt not beare false witnesse.
13.9. 19 Honour thy father, and mother, and, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The young man said vnto him, I haue obserued all these things from my youth: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt bee perfit, goe sell that thou hast, and giue it to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come and follow me.

22 And when the yong man heard that saying, hewent away sorowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 Then Iesus said to his disciples, Verely, I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camel to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 And when his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amased saying, Who then can be saued?

26 And Iesus beheld them, and said vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all things are possible.

Mar. 10. 27 ¶ * Then answered Peter and said to him, Behold, wee
28. *Luke* haue forsaken all, & followed thee: what therfore shall we haue?
18.28. 28 And Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say to you, that when the

Sonne

Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his maiestie, yee which followed mee in the regeneration, *shall sit also vpon twelue thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel. *Luke 22. 29.*

29 And whosoeuer shall forsake houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my Names sake, he shall receiue an hundred fold more, and shal inherit euerlasting life:

30 *But many that are first, shalbe last, and the last *shalbe* first. *Chap. 20. 16. marke 10. 31. luke. 13. 30.*

CHAP. XX.

1 *Labourers hired into the vineyard.* 15 *The euill eye.* 17 *Hee foretelleth his passion.* 20 *Zebedeus sonnes.* 22 *The cuppe.* 28 *Christ is our minister.* 30 *Two blind men.*

FOr the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine housholder, which went out at the dawning of the day to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And he agreed with the labourers for a penya day, and sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third houre, and saw other standing idle in the market place,

4 And said vnto them, Goe yee also into *my* vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you: and they went their way.

5 Againe, he went out about the sixt and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And he went about the eleuenth houre, and found other standing idle, and said vnto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They said vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He said to them, Goe yee also into *my* vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, that shall ye receiue.

8 ¶ And when euen was come, the master of the vineyard said vnto his steward, Call the labourers and giue them their hire, beginning at the last, till *thou come* to the first.

9 And they *which were hired* about the eleuenth houre, came and receiued euery man a peny.

10 Now when the first came, they supposed that they should receiue more, but they likewise receiued euery man a penie.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the master of the house,

12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one houre, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 And he answered one of them, saying, Friend, I doe thee no wrong: diddest thou not agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that which is thine owne, and goe thy way: I will giue vnto this last as much as to thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to doe as I will with mine owne? Is thine eye euill because I am good?

16 * So the last shalbe first, and the first last: * for many are called, but few chosen.

17 * And Iesus went vp to Ierusalem, and tooke the twelue disciples apart in the way, and said vnto them,

18 Behold, we goe vp to Ierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall bee deliuered vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death,

19 And * shall deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke and to scourge, and to crucifie *him*, but the third day he shall rise againe.

20 * Then came to him the mother of Zebedeus children with her sonnes worshipping *him*, and desiring a certaine thing of him.

21 And hee said vnto her, What wouldest thou? Shee said to him, Grant that these my two sonnes may sit, the one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy kingdome.

22 And Iesus answered and said, Yee know not what yee aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I shall be baptized with? They said to him, We are able.

23 And he said vnto them, Yee shall drink indeed of my cup, and shall be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with, but to sit at my right hand and at my left hand, is not mine to giue, but *it shall bee giuen* to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 * And when the *other* ten heard this, they disdained at the two brethren.

25 Therefore Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Yee know that the Lords of the Gentiles haue dominion ouer them, and they that are great, exercise authoritie ouer them.

26 But it shall not bee so among you: but whosoeuer will bee great among you, let him bee your seruant.

27 And whosoeuer will bee chiefe among you, let him bee your seruant.

28 * Euen as the Sonne of man came not to bee serued, but to serue, and to giue his life for the ransome of many.

29 ¶ * And as they departed from Iericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 And behold, two blinde men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed, saying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

31 And the multitude rebuked them because they should hold their peace: but they cryed the more, saying, O Lord the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on vs.

32 Then

Chap. 19. 30. & 22 14. marke 10. 31. luke. 13. 30. Mark. 10. 32. luke 18. 31. Iohn 18. 32. Mark. 10. 35.

Mar. 10. 41. luke 22. 25.

Phil. 2. 7.

Marke 10 46. luke 18. 35.

32 Then Iesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will yee that I should doe to you?

33 They said vnto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 And Iesus moued with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediatly their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

Christ rideth on an asse into Ierusalem. 12 *Hee casteth out the sellers.* 13 *The house of prayer.* 19 *The withered figtree.* 25 *Iohns baptisme.* 28 *Who doe the will of God.* 30 *Publicanes. Harlots.* 33 *Gods vineyard. The Iewes.* 38 *The sonne killed of the husbandmen.* 42 *The corner stone.*

AND * when they drewe neere to Ierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of the Olives, then sent Iesus two disciples, *Mar.11.1 luk.19.29*

2 Saying to them, Go into the towne that is ouer against you, and anon yee shall finde an asse bound, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, say yee that the Lord hath neede of them, and straightway he will let them goe.

4 All this was done, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

5 ¶ * Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King commeth vnto thee, meeke, and sitting vpon an asse and a colt, the foale of an asse vsed to the yoke. *Isa.62.11 Zech.9.9. Iob.12.15*

6 So the disciples went, & did as Iesus had commanded them,

7 And brought the asse and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and set him thereon.

8 And a great multitude spred their garmentes in the way: and other cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 Moreouer the people that went before, and they also that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna, to the Sonne of Dauid: blessed *be* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna, *thou which art* in the highest *heauens*. *Mar.11*

10 * And when he was come into Ierusalem, all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this? *11.luke 19.45.*

11 And the people said, This is IESVS that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile. *iohn.2.13 Deut.14.*

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that sold doues, *25. Isa.56.6. Ier.7.11. marke 11*

13 And said to them, It is written, * Mine house shall be called the house of prayer: but * yee haue made it a deane of theeues. *17.luke 19.46.*

14 Then

14 Then the blind and the halt came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 But when the chiefe Priests and Scribes saw the marueilous things that he did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they disdained,

16 And said vnto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Iesus said vnto them, Yea: read ye neuer, * By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast made perfite the praise? *Psal.8.2*

17 ¶ So he left them and went out of the citie vnto Bethany, and lodged there.

18 And * in the morning as hee returned into the citie, he was hungry. *Mar.11. 12,13.*

19 And seeing a figge tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaues only, and said to it, Neuer fruit grow on thee henceforwards. And anon the figge tree withered.

20 And when his disciples saw it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the figtree withered!

21 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you, If ye haue faith, & doubt not, ye shall not only do that which *I haue done* to the figtree, but also if yee say vnto this mountaine, Take thy selfe away, & cast thy selfe into the sea, it shalbe done. *Chap.17. 20.*

22 * And whatsoeuer ye shall aske in prayer, if ye beleeue, ye shall receiue it. *Chap.7.7. Ioh.15.7. 1.Iohn 5. 14.*

23 ¶ * And when hee was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests & the Elders of the people came vnto him, as he was teaching, and said, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie? *Mar.11. 27,28. &c. Luk. 20.1,2.*

24 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I also will aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tell mee, I likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did yee not then beleeue him?

26 And if wee say, Of men, wee feare the multitude: * for all hold Iohn as a Prophet. *Chap.14.5 Mar.6.20*

27 Then they answered Iesus, and said, We cannot tell. And hee said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke yee? A *certaine* man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and said, Sonne, goe *and* worke to day in my vineyard.

29 But he answered, and said, I will not: yet afterward he repented himselfe, and went.

30 Then

30 Then came hee to the second, and said likewise. And hee answered, and said, I will sir: yet he went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the wil of the father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots goe before you into the kingdome of God.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnesse, and ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeued him, and ye, though ye saw it, were not mooued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleeue him.

33 ¶ Heare another parable, There was a certaine housholder, *which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and made a winepresse therein, & built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey. *Isa.5.2. Ierem.2.22. Mat.12.1.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew neere, he sent his seruants to the husbandmen to receiue the fruits thereof. Ioshu.20.5.

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe he sent other seruants, moe then the first: and they did the like vnto them.

37 But last of all hee sent vnto them his owne Sonne, saying, They will reuerence my Sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the Sonne, they said among themselues, * This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and let vs take his inheritance. *Chap.26.3.4.& 27.1.Iob.11.53.

39 So they tooke him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

40 When therefore the Lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do to those husbandmen?

41 They said vnto him, He will cruelly destroy those wicked men, and wil let out his vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shall deliuer him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Iesus said vnto them, Read ye neuer in the Scriptures, *The stone which ye builders refused, the same is made the head of the corner? This was the Lords doing, & it is marueilous in our eyes. *Psal.118.22.act.4.11.rom.9.33.1.pet.2.7.

43 Therefore say I vnto you, The kingdome of God shalbe taken from you, and shal be giuen to a nation which shall bring foorth the fruits thereof.

44 *And whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, he shalbe broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will dash him a pieces. *Isa.8.14.

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharises had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 And they seeking to lay hands on him, feared the people, because they tooke him as a Prophet.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

The parable of the mariage. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 11 The wedding garment. 16 Of Cesars tribute. 22 The question with Christ touching the resurrection. 32 God is of the liuing. 36 The greatest commandement. 37 To loue God. To loue our neighbour. 42 Iesus reasoneth with the Phārises touching the Messias.

Luk.14.16 And * Iesus answered, and spake vnto them againe in par-
* Prou.19.9 bles, saying,

2 The kingdom of heauen is like vnto a certaine king which maried his sonne.

3 And sent forth his seruants, to call them that were bidden to the wedding, but they would not come.

4 Againe, he sent foorth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I haue prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come vnto the mariage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another about his merchandise.

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants and intreated them sharpely, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard it, he was wroth, and sent forth his warriours, & destroyed those murtherers, and burnt vp their city.

8 Then said he to his seruants, Truely the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Goe ye therefore out into the high wayes, and as many as ye finde bid them to the mariage.

10 So those seruants went out into the *hie* wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good and bad: so the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 Then the king came in to see the guests, and sawe there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And he said vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, and hast not on a wedding garment? And he was speechlesse.

13 Then said the king to the seruants, Bind him hand and foote, take him away, and cast him into vtter darkenesse: * there shal
Chap.8.12. & 13.42 & 25.30. be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 *For many are called, but few chosen.

Chap. 20. 16. 15 ¶ *Then went the Pharises and tooke counsell how they might tangle him in talke.

Mar.12. 13. Luke 20.20. 16 And they sent vnto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God truely, neither carest for any man: for thou considerest not the person of men,

17 Tell

17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to
giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?
18 But Iesus perceiued their wickednes, and said, Why tempt
me, ye hypocrites?
19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought him a penie.
20 And he said vnto them, Whose is this image and super-
scription?
21 They said vnto him, Cesars. Then said he vnto them, * Giue *Mar.12.*
therefore to Cesar the things which are Cesars, and giue vnto God 17.*luke*
those things which are Gods. 20.25.
22 And when they heard it, they marueiled, and left him, and *rom.13.7*
went their way.
23 ¶ The same day the Sadducees came to him, (which say that *Mar.12.*
there is no resurrection) and asked him, 18.*luke*
24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, If a man die, hauing no chil- 20.27.
dren, his brother shall marrie his wife by the right of alliance, and *act.23.8.*
raise vp seed vnto his brother. *Deu.25.5*
25 Now there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first maried
a wife, and deceased: and hauing none issue, left his wife vnto his
brother.
26 Likewise also the second and the third, vnto the seuenth.
27 And last of all the woman died also.
28 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the
seuen? for all had her.
29 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Ye are deceiued,
not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.
30 For in the resurrection they neither marrie wiues, nor wiues
are bestowed in mariage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.
31 And concerning the resurrection of the dead, haue yee not
read, what is spoken vnto you of God, saying,
32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the *Exod.3.6*
God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing. *marke 12*
33 And when the multitude heard it, they were astonied at his 27.
doctrine.
34 ¶ * But when the Pharises had heard, that hee had put the *Marke 12*
Saduces to silence, they assembled together. 28.
35 And one of them *which was* an expounder of the Lawe, as-
ked him a question, tempting him, and saying,
36 Master, which is the great commaundement in the Law? *Deut.6.5.*
37 Iesus said to him, * Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with *Mar.12.*
all thine heart, with all thy soule, and with all thy mind. 31.*rom.*
38 This is the first & the great commaundement. 13.9.
39 And the second is like vnto this, * Thou shalt loue thy neigh- *gal.5.14.*
bour as thy selfe. *iam.2.8.*

40 On these two commaundements hangeth the whole La
and the Prophets.

Mar.12. 35.Luke 20.41. 41 ¶ *While the Pharises were gathered together, Iesus a
them,

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ? whose Son is he? T
said vnto him, Dauids.

43 He said vnto them, How then doth Dauid in spirit call
Lord, saying,

Psalme. 110.1. 44 *The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, til I m
thine enemies thy footstoole?

45 If then Dauid call him Lord, how is he his sonne?

46 And none could answere him a word, neither durst
from that day foorth aske him any moe questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

*How the Scribes teaching the people the Lawe of Moses, bu
them selues. 5 Their Phylacteries and fringes. 7 Greetin
We are brethren. 9 The father. 10 The seruant. 13 To
the kingdom of heauen. 14 To deuoure widowes houses. 15
Proselyte. 16 To sweare by the Temple. 23 To tythe mint.
To cleanse the outside of the cup. 27 Painted sepulchres. 33 S
pents, vipers. 37 The Heune.

Nehe.8.4 THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The *Scribes and the Pharises sit in Moses s

3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obse
and doe: but after their works doe not: for they say, and doe n

Luke 11. 46. 4 *For they binde heauie burdens, and grieuous to be bor
and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will n

Deut.15.10 moone them with *one* of their fingers.

5 All their works they do for to be seene of men: for they ma

Num. 15. 38.deut. their Phylacteries broad, and make long the *fringes of their ga
ments,

22.12. Mar.12. 38. Luke. 11. 43.and 20.46. 6 * And loue the chiefe place at feastes, and to haue the chie
seats in the assemblies,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rab
bi, Rabbi.

Iam. 3.1. Mal. 1.6. Luke 14. 11. and 18.14. 8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your ‖doctor, *to w
Christ, and all ye are brethren.

9 And * call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is bu
one, your Father, which is in heauen.

10 Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, *euen* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, let him be your seruant.

12 *For whosoeuer will exalt himselfe, shalbe brought lowe:
and whosoeuer wil humble himselfe, shalbe exalted.

13 ¶ Woe therefore *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypo-
crites,

ites, because yee shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your selues goe not in, neither suffer yee them that would enter, to come in.

14 *Woe *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye deuoure widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye shall receiue the greater damnation. *Mar.12. 40. Luke 20.47.*

15 ¶ Woe *bee* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea and land to make one of your profession: and when he is made, yee make him two fold more the childe of hell, then you your selues.

16 Woe *be* vnto you blinde guides, which say, Whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the golde of the Temple, he offendeth.

17 Yee fooles and blinde: whether is greater, the golde, or the Temple that sanctifieth the golde?

18 And whosoeuer sweareth by the Altar, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the offering *that is* vpon it, offendeth.

19 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the offering, or the Altar which sanctifieth the offering?

20 Whosoeuer therefore sweareth by the Altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 * And, whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. *1. King. 8. 13 2. Chro. 6.2.*

22 * And he that sweareth by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. *Psal. 5. 34.*

23 ¶ * Woe *be* to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for yee tithe mint, and anise, and cummin, and leaue the weightier matters of the Law, *as* iudgement, and mercie, and fidelitie. These ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other. *Luk. 11.42*

24 Ye blinde guides, which straine out a gnat, and swallow a camell.

25 ¶ Woe *be* to you, * Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vtter side of the cup, and of the platter: but within they are full of briberie and excesse. *Luk. 11. 39.*

26 Thou blinde Pharise, cleanse first the inside of the cup, and platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also,

27 Woe *be* to you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all filthinesse.

28 So are ye also: for outward yee appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 ¶ Woe *be* vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

40 On these two commaundements hangeth the whole La
and the Prophets.

Mar.12. 35.luke 20.41. 41 ¶ *While the Pharises were gathered together, Iesus a
them,

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ? whose Son is he? T
said vnto him, Dauids.

43 He said vnto them, How then doth Dauid in spirit call
Lord, saying,

Psalm. 110.1. 44 *The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, til I m
thine enemies thy footstoole?

45 If then Dauid call him Lord, how is he his sonne?

46 And none could answere him a word, neither durst
from that day foorth aske him any moe questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

*2 How the Scribes teaching the people the Lawe of Moses, bi
them selues. 5 Their Phylacteries and fringes. 7 Greetings
We are brethren. 9 The father. 10 The seruant. 13 To
the kingdom of heauen. 14 To deuoure widowes houses. 15
Proselyte. 16 To sweare by the Temple. 23 To tythe mint.
To cleanse the outside of the cup. 27 Painted sepulchres. 33 S
penis, vipers. 37 The Heuie.*

Hebr.8.4 THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The * Scribes and the Pharises sit in Moses s

3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obse
and doe: but after their works doe not: for they say, and doe n

Luke 11. 46. 4 *For they binde heauie burdens, and grieuous to be bor
and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will n
ezek.15.10 moone them with *one* of their fingers.

5 All their works they do for to be seene of men: for they ma
Num. 15. 38.deut. 22.12. their Phylacteries broad, and make long the *fringes of their ga
ments,

Mar.12. 38. 6 * And loue the chiefe place at feastes, and to haue the chie
seats in the assemblies,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rab
Luk. 11. 43.and 20.46. bi, Rabbi.

8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your doctor, *to wi
Christ, and all ye are brethren.

Iam. 3.1. Mal. 1.6. 9 And * call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is bu
one, your Father, which is in heauen.

Luke 14. 11. and 18. 14. 10 Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, *euen* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, let him be your seruant.

12 * For whosoeuer will exalt himselfe, shalbe brought lowe:
and whosoeuer wil humble himselfe, shalbe exalted.

13 ¶ Woe therefore *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypo-
crites,

crites, because yee shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your selues goe not in, neither suffer yee them that would enter, to come in.

14 *Woe *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye deuoure widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long prayers: therefore ye shall receiue the greater damnation. *Mar.12. 40. Luke 20.47.*

15 ¶ Woe *bee* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea and land to make one of your profession: and when he is made, yee make him two fold more the childe of hell, then you your selues.

16 Woe *be* vnto you blinde guides, which say, Whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the golde of the Temple, he offendeth.

17 Yee fooles and blinde: whether is greater, the golde, or the Temple that sanctifieth the golde?

18 And whosoeuer sweareth by the Altar, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the offering *that is* vpon it, offendeth.

19 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the offering, or the Altar which sanctifieth the offering?

20 Whosoeuer therefore sweareth by the Altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 * And, whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. *1. King. 8. 13 2. chro. 6.2.*

22 * And he that sweareth by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. *Chap. 5. 34.*

23 ¶ * Woe *be* to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for yee tithe mint, and anise, and cummin, and leaue the weightier matters of the Law, as iudgement, and mercie, and fidelitie. These ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other. *Le. 11. 42*

24 Ye blinde guides, which straine out a gnat, and swallow a camell.

25 ¶ Woe *be* to you, * Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vtter side of the cup, and of the platter: but within they are full of briberie and excesse. *Luk. 11. 39.*

26 Thou blinde Pharise, cleanse first the inside of the cup, and platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also,

27 Woe *be* to you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all filthinesse.

28 So are ye also: for outward yee appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 ¶ Woe *be* vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If wee had beene in the dayes of our fathers, w
would not haue beene partners with them in the blood of t
Prophets.

31 So then ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the chi
dren of them that murthered the Prophets.

32 Fulfill ye also the measure of your fathers.

33 O serpents, the generation of vipers, how should ye escap
the damnation of hell?

34 Wherefore behold, I send vnto you Prophets and wise me
and Scribes, & of them ye shal kill and crucifie: and of them sh
ye scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from citie to citi

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood that w
Gen.4.8. 2.Chron. 24.22. shed vpon the earth, * from the blood of Abel the righteous, u
to the blood of Zacharias the sonne of Barachias, * whom ye sl
betweene the Temple and the Altar.

36 Verely I say vnto you, all these things shall come vpon th
generation.

Luke 13. 34. 37 * Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Pro hets, a
stonest them which are sent to thee, how often would I haue g
thered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her chicke
vnder her wings, and ye would not!

38 Behold, your habitation shalbe left vnto you desolate.

39 For I say vnto you, yee shall not see me henceforth till th
ye say, Blessed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

2 *The destruction of the Temple.* 4 *The signes of Christs comm*
12 *Iniquitie.* 23 *False Christes.* 29 *The signes of the end of th*
world. 31 *The Angels.* 32 *The siggetree.* 37 *The dayes of No*
42 *We must watch.* 45 *The seruant.*

Mar.13.1 Luke 21. 5,6. AND * Iesus went out, & departed from the Temple, and his di
ciples came to him, to shew him the building of the Temple.

2 And Iesus said vnto them, See ye not all these things? v
Luke 19. 44. tely I say vnto you, * there shall not be here left a stone vpon
stone, that shall not be cast downe.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Olines, his disciples cam
vnto him apart, saying, Tell vs when these things shall be, an
what signe *shall be* of thy comming, and of the end of the world.

Ephe.5.6. Col.2.18. 4 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, * Take heede th
no man deceiue you.

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, an
shall deceiue many.

6 And yee shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: se
that yee be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass
but the end is not yet.

7 For

7 For
realme, and
in diuers p
8 All t
9 * Th
you, and y
10 And
ther, and sh
11 And
12 And
shalbe cold
13 * Bu
14 And
the whole w
end come.
15 ¶ W
lation spok
him that re
16 The
17 Let h
forth any th
18 And
his clothes
19 And
that giue s
20 But
* Sabbath
21 For t
beginning
22 And
no flesh be
shortned.
23 * The
beleeue it
24 For th
shew great
should dec
25 Beho
26 Wh
desert, goe
not.
27 For
o the W

7 For

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and realme against realme, and there shal be famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places.

8 All these are but the beginning of sorrowes.

9 *Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted and shall kil you, and ye shal be hated of all nations for my Names sake. *Chap.10*

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. *17.luke 21.12.*

11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shal deceiue many. *ioh.15.20*

12 And because iniquity shall be increased, the loue of many shall be cold. *and 16.2.*

13 *But he that endureth to the end, he shall be saued. *2.Thes. 3.*

14 And this Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached through the whole world for a witnesse vnto all nations, and then shall the end come. *13.2.tim. 2.5.*

15 ¶When yee *therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by *Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy place, (let him that readeth consider it.) *Mar.13. 14.luke 21.20. Dan.9.27*

16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house toppe, not come downe to fetch any thing out of his house.

18 And he that is in the field, let not him returne backe to fetch his clothes.

19 And woe *shall bee* to them that are with child, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the *Sabbath *day*. *Act.1.12*

21 For then shalbe great tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the world to his time, nor shalbe.

22 And except those dayes should bee shortned, there should no flesh bee saued: but for the elects sake those dayes shall bee shortned.

23 *Then if any shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or there, beleeue it not. *Mar. 13. 21. luke 17.23.*

24 For there shall arise false Christs and false prophets, and shal shew great signes and wonders, so that if it were possibile they should deceiue the very elect.

25 Behold, I haue told you before.

26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you, Behold, hee is in the desert, goe not foorth: Behold hee is in the secret places, beleeue it not.

27 For as the lightning commeth out of the East, & is seene into the West, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

Luke 17. 37. 28 * For where soeuer a dead carkeis is, thither will the Eg be gathered together.

Mar. 13. 24. Luke 21. 25. Esai. 13. 10 ezech. 32. Ioel 2. 31. and 3. 15. 29 *And immediatly after the tribulations of those dayes, the Sunne be darkned, and the Moone shall not giue her light, the Starres shall fal from heauē, and the powers of heauen shal shaken.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man heauen: and then shall all the kindreds of the earth mourne, they shall see the Sonne of man come in the clouds of heauen w power and great glorie.

Reue. 1. 7 dan. 7. 13. 1. Cor. 15. and 1. thes. 4. 16. 31 * And he shall send his Angels with a great sound of a tru pet, and they shall gather together his elect from the foure win from the one end of the heauens vnto the other.

32 Now learne the parable of the figge tree: when her bou is yet tender, and it putteth foorth leaues, ye know that Sum is neere.

33 So likewise yee, when yee see all these things know that Kingdome of God is neere, euen at the doores.

34 Verely I say vnto you, This generation shall not passe all these things be done.

Mar. 13 31. 35 *Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my words shall passe away.

36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no not the A gels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so likewise shal the comm of the Sonne of man be.

Luke 17. 26. gen 7. 5, 11. 1. pet. 3. 20. 38 * For as in the dayes before the flood, they did eate a drinke, marrie, and giue in mariage, vnto the day that Noe ent into the Arke,

39 And knew nothing, till the flood came and tooke them away: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

Luke 17. 36. 40 *Then two shalbe in the fields, the one shalbe receiued, the other shalbe refused.

41 Two women shalbe grinding at the mill: the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe refused.

Mar. 13. 35 Luke 12. 39. 1. thes. 5. 2. reuel. 16. 15. 42 * Watch therefore: for ye know not what houre your M ster will come.

43 * Of this be sure, that if the good man of the house knew what watch the thiefe would come, he would surely watch, a not suffer his house to be digged thorow.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in the houre that ye think not, will the Sonne of man come.

Luke 12. 42. 45 *Who then is a faithfull seruant and wise, whom his mast hath made ruler ouer his houshold, to giue them meat in seaso

46 Bl
shall find
47 Ve
goods.
48 Bu
doth del
49 A
with the
50 T
not for h
51 A
crites:

The v
The ta
52 A

THen
gins
bridege
2 A
3 Th
them.
4 Bu
5 No
6 A
grome c
7 Th
8 A
our lam
9 Bu
enough
buy for
10 A
they sha
gate w
11
open to
12 B
you not
13
houre
14
strange
goods.

46 Blessed *is* that seruant, whom his master, when he commeth, shall finde so doing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, he shall make him ruler ouer all his goods.

48 But if that euill seruant shall say in his heart, My master doth deferre his comming,

49 And begin to smite his fellowes, and to eate and to drinke with the drunken,

50 That seruants master will come in a day, when hee looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of,

51 And will cut him off, and giue him his portion with hypocrites: *there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth. *Chap. 13. 42. and 25. 30.*

CHAP. XXV.

The virgins looking for the bridegrome. 13 We must watch. 14 The talents deliuered vnto the seruants. 24 The euill seruant. 30 After what sort the last iudgement shalbe. 41 The cursed.

THen the kingdome of heauen shalbe likened vnto tenne virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went forth to meete the bridegrome.

2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue foolish.

3 The foolish tooke their lampes, but tooke none oyle with them.

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lamps.

5 Now while ỹ bridegrome taried long, all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Behold, the bridegrome commeth: goe out to meete him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lampes.

8 And the foolish said to the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*, lest there will not bee enough for vs and you: but goe ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selues.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegrome came: and they that were ready went in with him to the wedding, and the gate was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.

12 But he answered, and sayd, Verely I say vnto you, I know you not.

13 *Watch therefore: for yee know neither the day nor the houre, when the Sonne of man will come. *Chap. 24. 42. mark.*

14 * For *the kingdome of heauen is* as a man that going into a strange countrey, called his seruants, and deliuered to them his goods. *13. 35. Luke 19. 12, 13.*

15 And vnto one hee gaue fiue talents, and to another two, and to another one, to euery man after his owne abilitie, and straightway went from home.

16 Then hee that had receiued the fiue talents, went and occupied with them, and gained other fiue talents.

17 Likewise also, he that *receiued* two, he also gained others.

18 But hee that receiued that one, went and digged it in the earth, and hid his masters money.

19 But after a long season the master of those seruants came, and reckoned with them.

20 Then came he that had receiued fiue talents, and brought other fiue talents, saying, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talents: behold, I haue gained with them other fiue talents.

21 Then his master said vnto him, It is well done, good seruant and faithfull. Thou hast beene faithfull in little, I will make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.

22 Also hee that had receiued two talents, came and said, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents, behold, I haue gained two other talents more.

23 His Master said vnto him, It is well done good seruant, and faithfull, Thou hast beene faithfull in little, I will make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.

24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came, and said, Master, I knew that thou wast an hard man, which reapest where thou sowedst not, and gatherest where thou strawedst not:

25 I was therefore afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: behold, thou hast thine owne.

26 And his master answered, and said vnto him, Thou euill seruant, and slothfull, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I strawed not.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming I should haue receiued mine owne with vantage.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath ten talents.

Chap. 13. 22. mar. 4. 25. luke 8. 18. and 19. 26.

29 *For vnto euery man that hath, it shalbe giuen, and he shall haue abundance: and from him that hath not, euen that hee hath shall be taken away.

30 Cast therefore that vnprofitable seruant into vtter * darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Psa. 8. 12. & 22. 13.

31 ¶ And when the Sonne of man commeth in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall hee sit vpon the throne of his glory.

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separa

separate them one from another, as a shepheard separateth the sheepe from the goats.

33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, and the goates on the left.

34 Then shall the King say to them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father: take the inheritance of the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 * For I was an hungred, & ye gaue me meat: I thirsted, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in vnto you. *Esai 58 7 ezek. 18.7*

36 *I was* naked, and ye clothed me: I was * sicke, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me. *Ecclus. 7.* 35.

37 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fedde thee? or athirst, and gaue thee drinke?

38 And when saw wee thee a stranger, and tooke thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

40 And the King shall answere and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as yee haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done it vnto me.

41 Then shall he say vnto them on the left hand, * Depart from me yee cursed into euerlasting fire, which is prepared for the deuill and his angels. *Psal. 6 8. chap. 7. 23. luk. 13. 27*

42 For I was an hungred, and yee gaue me no meate: I thirsted, and ye gaue me no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and yee tooke me not in vnto you: *I was* naked, and ye clothed me not: sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall he answere them, and say, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as yee did it not to one of the least of these, yee did it not to me.

46 * And these shall goe into euerlasting paines, and the righteous into life eternall. *Dan. 12. 2 iohn 5. 29*

CHAP. XXVI.

3 *The consultation of the Priests against Christ.* 6 *His feete are annointed.* 15 *Iudas selleth him.* 26 *The institution of the Supper.* 34 *and* 69 *Peters denial.* 38 *Christ is heauie.* 47 *He is betrayed with a kisse.* 56 *He is led to Caiaphas.* 64 *He confesseth himselfe to be Christ.* 67 *They spit at him.*

AND * it came to passe when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he said vnto his disciples, *Mar. 14. 1 luke 22. 1*

2 Yee know that after two dayes is the Passeouer, and the Sonne of man shall be delinered to be crucified.

Deut 11. 37. 3 *Then assembled together the chiefe Priests, & the Scribes, and the Elders of the people into the hall of the hie Priest, called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted together, that they might take Iesus by subtiltie, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest any vprore be among the people.

Mar. 14. 3 Iohn 11. 2 6 ¶ * And when Iesus was in Bethania, in the house of Simon the Leper,

7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a boxe of very costly ointment, and powred it on his head, as he sate at the table.

8 And when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, What needed this waste?

9 For this ointment might haue beene solde for much, and beenegiuen to the poore.

10 And Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for shee hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

Deut. 15. 11. 11 * For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me shall ye not haue alwayes.

12 For in that shee powred this ointment on my body, she did it to bury me.

13 Verely I say vnto you, Whersoeuer this Gospell shall bee preached thorowout all the world, there shall also this that shee hath done, be spoken of for a memoriall of her.

Marke 14 10. 14 ¶ * Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests,

15 And said, What will yee giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? And they appointed vnto him thirtie *pieces* of silluer.

16 And from that time he sought opportunitie to betray him.

Marke 14 12. Luke 22. 7. 17 ¶ * Now on the first *day* of the feast of vnleauened bread, the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eate the Passeouer?

18 And hee said, Goe into the citie to such a man, and say to him, The Master saith, My time is at hand: I wil keepe the Passeouer at thine house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Iesus had giuen them charge, and made ready the Passeouer.

Luke 22. 14. 20 * So when the euen was come, he sate down with the twelue.

21 And as they did eat, he said, * Verely I say vnto you, that one

Marke 14 18. Iohn 13. 21. of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorowfull, and began euery one of them to say vnto him, Is it I, Master?

23 And

23 And he answered, and said, *He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, he shall betray me. Psal.41.9

24 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: but woe be to that man, by whome the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bin good for that man if he had neuer bene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered, and said, Is it I, Master? Hee sayd vnto him, Thou hast said it.

26 ¶ *And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had blessed, he brake it, and gaue it to the disciples, and said, Take, eate: this is my body. 1.Cor.11. 24.

27 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thanks, he gaue it them, saying, Drinke yee all of it.

28 For this is my blood of the new Testament, that is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 I say vnto you, that I will not drinke henceforth of this fruit of the viue vntill that day when I shall drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had sung a Psalme, they went out into the mount of Olines.

31 ¶ *Then said Iesus vnto them, All ye shall be offended by me this night: for it is written, I * will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered. *Marke 14. 27.iohn 16. 32.*

32 But * after I am risen againe, I will goe before you into Galile. *and 18.8. Zac.13.7.*

33 But Peter answered, & said vnto him, Though that all men should be offended by thee, yet will I neuer be offended. *Mark.14. 8.and*

34 * Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, that this night before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise. *16.7. Iohn 13.*

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I should die with thee, I will in no case denie thee. Likewise also sayd all the disciples. *38.marke 14.30.*

36 ¶ *Then went Iesus with them into a place which is called Gethsemane, and said vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I goe, and pray yonder. *Luke 22. 39.*

37 And hee tooke vnto him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedeus, and began to waxe sorowfull, and grieuously troubled.

38 Then said Iesus vnto them, My soule is very heauy, euen vnto the death: tary ye here, and watch with me.

39 So he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me, neuertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 After, he came vnto the disciples, and found them asleepe, and said to Peter, What? could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into tentation: the spirit indeede is ready, but the flesh is weake.

42 Againe

42 Againe he went away the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup cannot passe away from me, but that I must drinke it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleepe againe: for their eyes were heauy.

44 So hee left them, and went away againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then came he to his disciples, & said to them, Sleepe henceforth and take your rest: behold, the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is giuen into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs go: behold, he is at hand that betrayeth me.

Mark.14.43.luke 22.47. Iohn 18.3.

47 * And while he yet spake, lo, Iudas one of the twelue came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues, from the hie Priests, and Elders of the people.

48 Now he that betraied him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that is he, lay hold on him.

49 And forthwith he came to Iesus, and saide, God saue thee, Master, and kissed him.

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Iesus, and tooke him.

51 And beholde, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword, and strooke a seruant of the hie Priest, and smote off his eare.

52 Then said Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sword into his place: *Gene.9.6.* * for all that take the sword, shall perish with the sword. *Reuel.13.10.*

53 Either thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he will giue me more then twelue legions of Angels?

Isa.53.10

54 How then should the * Scriptures be fulfilled, *which say* that it must be so?

55 The same houre said Iesus to the multitude, Ye be come out as *it were* against a thiefe, with swords and staues to take me: I sate dayly teaching in the Temple among you, and yee tooke me not.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. * Then all the disciples forsooke him, and fled. *Perse 31. Mark.14.*

Mark.14.53.luke 22.54. Iohn 18.14.

57 ¶ * And they tooke Iesus, and led him to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes and the Elders were assembled.

58 And Peter followed him afarre off vnto the hie Priests hall, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the end.

Mark.14.55.

59 Now * the chiefe Priests and the Elders, and all the whole Counsell sought false witnesse against Iesus to put him to death,

60 But they found none, and though many false witnesses came, yet found they none: but at the last came two false witnesses,

Iob.2.19

61 And said, This man sayd, *I can destroy the Temple of God, and build it in three dayes.

62 The

62 Then t
ything? W
63 But I
and said to
to tell vs, i
64 * Ie
vnto you
right hand
heauen.
65 Th
phemed:
ye haue h
* 66 W
death.
67 *
smote h
68 S
thee?
69
saying,
70
thou s
71
him, a
Iesus
72
man
73
vnto
bew
7
kno
vn
he
2

62 Then the chiefe Priests aroſe, and ſaid to him, Anſwereſt thou nothing? What is the matter that theſe men witneſſe againſt thee?
63 But Jeſus held his peace. Then the chiefe Prieſt anſwered, and ſaid to him, I charge thee ſweare vnto vs by the liuing God, to tell vs, if thou be that Chriſt the Sonne of God, *or no.*
64 * Ieſus ſaid to him, Thou haſt ſaid it: neuer theleſſe I ſay vnto you, hereafter ſhall ye ſee the Sonne of man ſitting at the right hand of the power *of God*, and come in the cloudes of the heauen. *Chap. 16. 27. rom. 14. 10. 1. theſſ. 4.*
65 Then the hie Prieſt rent his clothes, ſaying, Hee hath blaſphemed: what haue we any more need of witneſſes? behold, now ye haue heard his blaſphemie. 14.
66 What thinke ye? They anſwered, and ſaid, He is guiltie of death.
67 * Then ſpet they in his face, and buffeted him: and other ſmote him with rods, *Iſa. 50. 6.*
68 Saying, Propheſie to vs, O Chriſt, who is hee that ſmote thee?
69 ¶ *Peter ſate without in the hall: and a maid came to him,* ſaying, Thou alſo waſt with Ieſus of Galile. *Mark. 14. 66. luke 22. 55. ioh. 18. 25*
70 But hee denyed before them all, ſaying, I wote not what thou ſayeſt.
71 And when hee went out into the porch, another *mayd* ſaw him, and ſayd vnto them that were there, This man was alſo with Ieſus of Nazareth.
72 And againe he denied with an oath, ſaying, I know not the man.
73 So after a while came vnto him they that ſtood by, and ſaid vnto Peter, Surely thou art alſo one of them: for euen thy ſpeech bewrayeth thee.
74 Then began hee to curſe *himſelfe*, and to ſweare, ſaying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crewe.
75 Then Peter remembred the words of Ieſus, which had ſaid vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou ſhalt denie me thriſe. So he went out and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

2 He is deliuered bound to Pilate. 5 Iudas hangeth himſelfe. 19 Pilates wife. 20 Barabbas is asked. 24 Pilate waſheth his hands. 29 Chriſt is crowned with thorne. 34 Hee is crucified. 40 reuiled. 50 He giueth vp the ghoſt. 57 He is buried. 62 The ſouldiers watch him.

WHen * the morning was come, all the chiefe Prieſts and the Elders of the people tooke counſell againſt Ieſus to put him to death. *Mar. 15. 1. luk. 22. 66. ioh. 18. 28*

2 And

2 And led him away bound, and deliuered him vnto Pontius Pilate the gouernour.

3 ¶ Then when Iudas which betrayed him, saw that he was condemned, he repented himselfe, and brought againe the thirtie *pieces* of siluer to the chiefe Priests and Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned betraying the innocent blood. But they said, What is that to vs? see thou to it.

5 And when he had cast downe the siluer *pieces* in the Temple, he departed, and went *and hanged himselfe.

Act.1.18

6 And the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer *pieces*, and said, It is not lawful for vs to put them into the treasure, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them a potters field, for the buriall of strangers.

Act.1.19

8 Wherefore that field is called, *The field of blood vnto this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ieremias the Prophet, saying, * And they tooke thirtie siluer *pieces*, the price of him that was valued, whom *they* of the children of Israel valued,

Zach. 11. 12.

10 And they gaue them for the potters fielde, as the Lord pointed me)

11 ¶ * And Iesus stood before the Gouernour, and the Gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? Iesus said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

Mar.15.2 Luke 23.3 Iohn 18. 33.

12 And when he was accused of the chiefe Priests, and Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then said Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they lay against thee?

14 But hee answered him not to one word, insomuch that the gouernour marueiled greatly.

15 Now at the feast, the gouernour was wont to deliuer vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 When they were then gathered together, Pilate said vnto them, Whether will yee that I let loose vnto you Barabbas, or Iesus which is called Christ?

18 (For he knew well that for enuie they had deliuered him.

19 Also when he was set downe vpon the iudgement seate, his wife sent to him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame by reason of him)

Mar.15. 11.Luke 23.18. Iohn 18. 40.Actes 3.14.

20 *But the chiefe Priests and the Elders had perswaded the people, that they should aske Barabbas, and should destroy Iesus.

21 Then the gouernour answered, and said vnto them, Whether

er of the twaine wil ye that I let loose vnto you? And they said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate said to them, What shal I doe then with Iesus which is called Christ? They all said to him, Let him be crucified.

23 Then said the gouernour, But what euill hath hee done? Then they cried the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 When Pilate saw that hee auailed nothing, but that more tumult was made, hee tooke water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this iust man: looke you to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood *be* on vs, and on our children.

26 Thus let he Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged Iesus, and deliuered him to be crucified.

27 ¶*Then the souldiers of the gouernour tooke Iesus into the common hall, and gathered about him the whole band. *Mar.15. 16. Iohn 19.2.*

28 And they stripped him, and put vpon him a scarlet robe,

29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it vpon his head, and a reede in his right hand, and bowed their knees before him, and mocked him, saying, God saue thee king of the Iewes,

30 And spitted vpon him, and tooke a reede, and smote him on the head.

31 Thus when they had mocked him, they tooke the robe from him, and put his owne raiment on him, and ledde him away to crucifie him.

32 *And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him they compelled to beare his Crosse. *Mar.15. 21. Luke 23.26.*

33 * And when they came vnto the place called Golgotha, (that is to say, the place of *dead mens* sculles) *Mar.15. 22. Iohn 19.17.*

34 They gaue him vineger to drinke mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drinke.

35 ¶ And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, and did cast lots, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, * They diuided my garments among them, and vpon my vesture did cast lots. *Psal.22. 18. Mar. 15.24.*

36 And they sate, and watched him there.

37 ¶They set vp also ouer his head his cause written, THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 ¶ And there were two theeues crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 And they that passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, * Thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe; if thou be the Sonne of God, come downe from the crosse. *Iohn 2.19*

41 Like-

41 Likewise also the hie Priestes mocking him, with the Scribes and Elders, and Pharises, said,

42 He saued others, but he cannot saue himselfe: if hee be the king of Israel, let him now come downe from the crosse, and we will beleeue in him.

Psal.22.9 43 *He trusted in God, let him deliuer him now if he will haue him: for he said, I am the Sonne of God.

44 The selfe same thing also the theeues which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixt houre was there darknesse ouer all the Land vnto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loud voice,

Psal.22.1 saying, * Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani? that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, said, This man calleth Elias.

Psal.69.22. 48 And straightway one of them ranne, and tooke a * sponge, and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke.

49 Other said, Let be: let vs see, if Elias will come and saue him.

50 Then Iesus cryed againe with a loude voice, and yeelded vp the ghost.

2.Chron.3.14. 51 And beholde, * the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the stones were clouen,

52 And the graues did open themselues, and many bodies of the Saints which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy Citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 When the Centurion, and they that were with him watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, and the things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely, this was the Sonne of God.

55 ¶ And many women were there, beholding him afarre off, which had followed Iesus from Galile, ministring vnto him.

56 Among whome was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedeus sonnes.

Mar.15.42. Luke 23.50. Iohn.19.38 57 ¶ * And when the euen was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea named Ioseph, who had also himself bin Iesus disciple,

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be deliuered.

59 So Ioseph tooke the body, and wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth,

60 And put it in his new tombe, which he had hewen out in the rocke,

ke, and rolled a great ſtone to the doore of the ſepulchre, and
parted.
61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary ſitting
er againſt the ſepulchre.
62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the Preparation *of the*
bbath, the hie Prieſtes, and Phariſes, aſſembled to Pilate,
63 And ſaid, Sir, wee remember that that deceiuer ſaid, while
was yet aliue, Within three dayes I will riſe.
64 Commaund therefore that the ſepulchre be made ſure vntil
third day, leaſt his diſciples come by night, and ſteale him a-
y, and ſay vnto the people, Hee is riſen from the dead: ſo ſhall
laſt errour be worſe then the firſt.
65 Then Pilate ſaid vnto them, Yee haue a watch: goe, and
ake it ſure as ye know.
66 And they went and made the ſepulchre ſure with the watch,
d ſealed the ſtone.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The women goe the ſepulchre. 2 The Angel. 9 The women ſee Chriſt. 18 He ſendeth his Apoſtles to preach.

1 NOw * in the ende of the Sabbath, when the firſt *day* of the weeke began to dawne, Mary Magdalene, and the other Ma- came to ſee the ſepulchre. *Mar.16.1 Ioh.20.1*
2 And behold, there was a great earthquake: for the Angel of
e Lord deſcended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the
one from the doore and ſate vpon it.
3 And his countenance was like lightning, and his raiment
hite as ſnow.
4 And for feare of him, the keepers were aſtonied, and became
dead men.
5 But the Angel anſwered, and ſaid to the women, Feare yee
ot, for I know that yee ſeeke Ieſus which was crucified:
6 He is not here: for he is riſen, as he ſaid, Come ſee the place
where the Lord was laid,
7 And go quickly, and tell his diſciples that he is riſen from
he dead: and behold, he goeth before you into Galile: there ye
hall ſee him: loe, I haue told you.
8 So they departed quickely from the ſepulchre, with feare and
reat ioy, and did runne to bring his diſciples word.
9 And as they went to tel his diſciples, behold, Ieſus alſo met
hem, ſaying, God ſaue you. And they came and tooke him by
he feete, and worſhipped him.
10 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them. Be not afraid, Goe *and* tell my
rethren that they goe into Galile, and there ſhall they ſee me.
11 ¶ Now when they were gone, behold, ſome of the watch-

came

came into the city, and shewed vnto the hie Priests all the
that were done.

12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, &
counsell, and gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying. Say, His disciples came by night, and stole him
while we slept.

14 And if this matter come before the gouernour to be
wee will perswade him, and so vse the matter that you shal
need to care.

15 So they tooke the money, & did as they were taught:
this saying is noised among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile, i
mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him: but
doubted.

Hebr. 1.2. chap. 11. 27. John 17.2. Mar. 16. 15. John 14. 26.

18 And Iesus came and spake vnto them, saying, * All po
giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth.

19 * Goe therefore and teach all nations, baptizing the
the Name of the Father, and the Sonne, and the holy Ghost,

20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I
commanded you, and loe, * I am with you alway, vntill the e
the world. AMEN.

¶ THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESUS Christ according to Marke.

CHAP. I.

4 Iohn baptizeth. 6 His apparel and meat. 9 Iesus is baptized. He is tempted. 14 He preacheth the Gospel. 21 and 39 He cheth in the Synagogues. 32 Hee healeth one that had a deuil Peters mother in law. 32 Many diseased persons. 40 The Le

THE beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ
Sonne of God:

Mal. 3.1.

2 As it is written in the Prophets, * Behold
send my messenger before thy face, which shall p
pare thy way before thee.

Esa. 40.3 Luke 3.4. Iohn 1.15 Mat. 3.1

3 * The voice of him that crieth in the wildernes is, Prep
the way of the Lord: make his paths streight.

4 * Iohn did baptize in the wildernes, and preach the baptis
of amendment of life, for remission of sinnes.

5 And all the countrey of Iudea, and they of Ierusalem we
out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuer Iorde
confessing their sinnes.

6 * No

6 *Now Iohn was clothed with camels haire, and with a girdle of a skinne about his loines: and he did eate *locusts and wilde hony, *Mat. 3.4. Leu. 11.22. Mark 1.6*

7 *And preached, saying, A stronger then I commeth after me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to stoupe down and vnloose. *Mat. 3.11. Luke 3.16. Iob. 1.27.*

8 Trueth it is, I haue *baptized you with water: but he will baptize you with the holy Ghost. *acts 1.5. and 2.4.*

9 ¶ *And it came to passe in those dayes, that IESVS came from Nazareth, *a citie* of Galile, & was baptized of Iohn in Iordan. *Mat. 3.13. & 19.4.*

10 And assoone as he was come out of the water, *Iohn* saw the heauens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghost descending vpon him like a doue. *Luke 3.21. Iob. 1.33.*

11 Then there was a voice from heauen, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whome I am well pleased.

12 And *immediatly the Spirit driueth him into the wilderneſſe. *Mat. 4.1. Luke 4.14.*

13 And he was there in the wilderneſſe fourtie dayes, and was tempted of Satan: hee was also with the wild beasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him. *Heb. 2.18.*

14 ¶ *Now after that Iohn was committed *to prison*, Iesus came into Galile, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God, *Mat. 4.12. Luke 4.14.*

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent and beleeue the Gospel. *Iob. 4.43.*

16 ¶ *And as he walked by the sea of Galile, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a nette into the Sea (for they were fishers) *Mat. 4.18. Luke 5.2.*

17 Then Iesus said vnto them, Follow mee, and I will make you to be fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother, as they were in the shippe, mending their nets.

20 And anon he called them: and they left their father Zebedeus in the shippe with his hired seruants, and went their way after him.

21 ¶ So *they entred into Capernaum, and straightway on the Sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue, and taught. *Mat. 4.13. Luke 4.31.*

22 And they were astonied at his doctrine: *for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes. *Mat. 7. 28. Luke 4.32.*

23 ¶ And there was in their Synagogue a man, in whom was an vncleane spirit and he cried out,

24 Saying, Ah, what haue wee to doe with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee what thou art, *euen* that holy One of God,

came into the city, and shewed vnto the hie Priests all that were done.

12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, and counsell, and gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say, His disciples came by night, and stole him while we slept.

14 And if this matter come before the gouernour to be heard, wee will perswade him, and so vse the matter that you shall need to care.

15 So they tooke the money, & did as they were taught: and this saying is noised among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile, into a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

Hebr. 1.2. chap. 11. 27. John 17.2. Mar. 16. 15. John 14. 26.

18 And Iesus came and spake vnto them, saying, * All power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth.

19 * Goe therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and the Sonne, and the holy Ghost,

20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I haue commanded you, and loe, * I am with you alway, vntill the end of the world. AMEN.

¶ THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS Christ according to Marke.

CHAP. I.

4 Iohn baptizeth. 6 His apparel and meat. 9 Iesus is baptized. 12 He is tempted. 14 He preacheth the Gospel. 21 and 39 He teacheth in the Synagogues. 23 Hee healeth one that had a deuil. 30 Peters mother in law. 32 Many diseased persons. 40 The Leper.

THE beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ the Sonne of God:

Mal. 3.1.

2 As it is written in the Prophets, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

Isa. 40.3 Luke 3.4. Iohn 1.15 Mat. 3.1

3 * The voice of him that crieth in the wildernesse, Prepare the way of the Lord: make his paths streight.

4 * Iohn did baptize in the wildernes, and preach the baptisme of amendment of life, for remission of sinnes.

5 And all the countrey of Iudea, and they of Ierusalem went out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuer Iorden, confessing their sinnes.

6 * Ne

6 *Now Iohn was clothed with camels haire, and with a girle of a skinne about his loines: and he did eate *locusts and wilde hony,

Mat. 3.4. *Leu.* 11.22

7 *And preached, saying, A stronger then I commeth after me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to stoupe down and vnloose.

Marke 1. *Iohn.* 1.

8 Trueth it is, I haue *baptized you with water: but he will baptize you with the holy Ghost.

Acts 1.5. *and* 2.4.

9 ¶ *And it came to passe in those dayes, that IESVS came from Nazareth, *a citie* of Galile, & was baptized of Iohn in Iordan.

& 19.4

10 And assoone as he was come out of the water, *Iohn* saw the heauens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghost descending vpon him like a doue.

Mat. 3.13 *luke* 3.21 *Iob.* 1.33

11 Then there was a voice from heauen, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whome I am well pleased.

12 And *immediatly the Spirit driueth him into the wilderneſſe.

Mat. 4.1 *luke* 4.14

13 And he was there in the wilderneſſe fourtie dayes, and was tempted of Satan: hee was also with the wild beasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him.

Heb. 2.18

14 ¶ *Now after that Iohn was committed *to prison*, Iesus came into Galile, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God,

Mat. 4.12 *luke* 4.14

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent and beleeue the Gospel.

Iob. 4.43.

16 ¶ *And as he walked by the sea of Galile, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a nette into the Sea (for they were fishers)

Mat. 4.18 *luke* 5.2.

17 Then Iesus said vnto them, Follow mee, and I will make you to be fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother, as they were in the shippe, mending their nets.

20 And anon he called them: and they left their father Zebedeus in the shippe with his hired seruants, and went their way after him.

21 ¶ So *they entred into Capernaum, and straightway on the Sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue, and taught.

Mat. 4.13 *luke* 4.31

22 And they were astonied at his doctrine: *for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

Mat. 7. 28. *luke* 4.32.

23 ¶ And there was in their Synagogue a man, in whom was an vncleane spirit and he cried out,

24 Saying, Ah, what haue wee to doe with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee what thou art, *euen* that holy One of God,

25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and co
out of him.

26 And the vncleane spirit tare him, and cried with a lo
voice, and came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, so that they demaunded on
another, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is th
for hee commaundeth euen the fonle spirits with authoritie, a
they obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame spread abroad thorowout all
region bordering on Galile.

Mar. 8. 14 *luke* 4. 38. 29 ¶ *And assoone as they were come out of the Synagogue
entred into the house of Simon and Andrew, with Iames and Io

30 And Simons wiues mother lay sicke of a feuer, and a
they tolde him of her.

31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lift her
and the feuer forsooke her by and by, & she ministred vnto the

32 And when euen was come, at what time the sunne setti
they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that w
possessed with deuils.

33 And the whole city was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases: a
he cast out many deuils, and suffered not the deuils to say t
they knew him.

35 And in the morning very early, before day, *Iesus* arose a
went out into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed caref
ly after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said vnto him, All m
seeke for thee.

38 Then hee said vnto them, Let vs goe into the next town
that I may preach there also: for I came out for that purpose.

39 And hee preached in their Synagogues, thorowout all G
lile, and cast the deuils out.

Mat. 8. 2. *luke* 5. 12 40 ¶ * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, a
kneeled downe vnto him, and said to him, If thou wilt, thou ca
make me cleane.

41 And Iesus had compassion, and put forth his hand, and to
ched him, and said to him, I will, be thou cleane.

42 And assoone as he had spoken, immediatly the leprosie d
parted from him, and he was made cleane.

43 And after he had giuen him a strait commandement, he se
him away forthwith,

Leuit. 14. 4. 44 And said vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man, b
get thee hence, *and* shew thy selfe to the * Priest, and offer for
cleansi

clensing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimoniall vnto them.

45 But when he was departed, * he began to tell many things, and to publish the matter: so that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from euery quarter. *Luke 5.15.*

CHAP. II.

3 and 4 One sicke of the palsie, hauing his sinnes forgiuen him, is healed. 14 Matthew is called. 19 Fasting, and afflictions are foretolde. 23 The disciples plucke the eares of corne. 26 The shewbread.

AFter * a fewe daies he entred into Capernaum againe, and it was noised that hee was in the house. *Mat.9.1 luke 5.18*

2 And anon many gathered together, insomuch that the places about the doore could not receiue any more: and he preached the word vnto them.

3 And there came vnto him, that brought one sicke of the palsie, borne of foure men.

4 And because they could not come neere vnto him for the multitude, they vncouered the roofe of the house where he was: and when they had broken it open, they let downe the bed wherein the sicke of the palsie lay.

5 Now when Iesus saw their faith, hee said to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

6 And there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doeth this man speake such blasphemies? * Who can forgiue sinnes, but God onely? *Iob 14.4. isa.43.25*

8 And immediatly when Iesus perceiued in his Spirit, that thus they reasoned with themselues, he said vnto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and walke?

10 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (he said to the sicke of the palsie)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bedde, and get thee hence into thine owne house.

12 And by and by he arose and tooke vp his bedde, and went foorth before them all, in so much that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We neuer saw such a thing.

13 ¶ Then hee went againe toward the sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them. *Mat. 9.9.*

14 *And as Iesus passed by, hee saw Leui *the sonne* of Alpheus *luke 5.27*

sit at the receit of custome, and said vnto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

15 ¶ And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus and his disciples: for there were many that followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharises saw him eate with Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 Now when Iesus heard it, hee said vnto them, They that 1.Tim.1. haue no neede of the Physician, but the sicke. * I came not to call 13. the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.

Mat.9.14 18 * And the disciples of Iohn and the Pharises did fast, and Luke 5.33. came and said vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn and of the Pharises fast, and thy disciples fast not?

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the mariage chamber fast, whiles the bridegrome is with them? as long as they haue the bridegrome with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them, and then shall they fast in those daies.

21 Also no man soweth a piece of newe cloth in an olde garment: for else the new *piece* that filled it vp, taketh away *somewhat* from the olde, and the breach is worse.

22 Likewise, no man putteth new wine into old vessels: for else the new wine breaketh the vessels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels are lost: but new wine must be put into new vessels.

Mat.12.1 Luke 6.1. 23 ¶ * And it came to passe, as hee went thorow the corne on the Sabbath day, that his disciples, as they went on their way, began to plucke the eares of corne.

24 And the Pharises saide vnto him, Behold, why doe they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawfull?

1.Sam.21 6. 25 And he said to them, Haue ye neuer read what * Dauid did when he had neede, and was an hungred, *both* hee, and they that were with him?

26 How hee went into the house of God in the dayes of Abiathar the high Priest, and did eate the Shewbread, which were not Exod.29. 33.leuit. 8.31. and 24.9. lawfull to eate, but for the * Priests, and gaue also to them which were with him?

27 And he said to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.

28 Wherefore the Sonne of man is Lord, euen of the Sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 The withered hand is healed. 6 The Pharises consult with the Herodians. 10 Many are healed by touching Christ. 11 Although the deuils fall downe before him. 14 The twelue Apostles.

24 Th

24 *The kingdome diuided against it selfe.* 29 *Blasphemy against the holy Ghost.* 33 *Christs parents.*

AND * he entred againe into the Synagogue, and there was a man which had a withered hand. *Mat.12.9 luke 6.6.*

2 And they watched him, whether hee would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him.

3 Then hee said vnto the man which had the withered hand, Arise: *stand forth* in the midst.

4 And he said to them, Is it lawfull to do a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to doe euill? to saue the life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

5 Then hee looked round about on them angerly, mourning also for the hardnes of their hearts, and said to the man, Stretch foorth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored as whole as the other.

6 ¶ And the Pharises departed, and straightway gathered a counsell with the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus auoided with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude followed him from Galile, and from Iudea,

8 And from Ierusalem, and from Idumea, and beyond Iordan: and they that dwelled about Tyrus and Sidon, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him in great number.

9 And hee commanded his disciples, that a little ship should wait for him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they preassed vpon him to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And when the vncleane spirits saw him, they fell downe before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And hee sharpely rebuked them, to the end they should not vtter him.

13 ¶ * Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whom hee would, and they came vnto him. *Chap.6.7. mat.10.1*

14 And hee appointed twelue, that they should be with him, *luke.9.1.* and that hee might send them to preach,

15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out deuils.

16 And the first *was* Simon, and hee named Simon, Peter.

17 Then Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn Iames brother (and surnamed them Boanerges: which is, the sonnes of thunder.)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartlemew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, who also betraeyd him, and they came home.

20 And the multitude assembled againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.

21 And when his kinsfolkes heard of it, they went out to hold on him: for they said that hee was beside himselfe.

Mat. 9. 34 & 12. 24 luke 11. 19.

22 ¶ * And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem said, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince of the deuils casteth out deuils.

23 But hee called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, How can Satan driue out Satan?

24 For if a kingdome be diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 Or, if an house be diuided against it selfe, that house cannot continue:

26 So if Satan make insurrection against himselfe, and be diuided, he cannot endure, but is at an ende.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and take away his goods, except he first binde that strong man, and then spoile his house.

Mat. 18. 31. luk. 12 10. 1 Ioh. 5. 16.

28 ¶ * Verely I say vnto you, all sinnes shalbe forgiuen vnto the children of men, and blasphemies, wherewith they blaspheme:

29 But he that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, shall neuer haue forgiuenesse, but is culpable of eternall damnation,

30 Because they said, He had an vncleane spirit.

Mat. 12. 46. luke 8. 19.

31 ¶ * Then came his brethren and mother, and stood without and sent vnto him, and called him.

32 And the people sate about him, and they said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren seeke for thee without.

33 But hee answered them, saying, Who is my mother, and my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them, which sate in compasse about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer doth the will of God, hee is my brother, and my sister, and my mother.

CHAP. IIII.

4 The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof. 18 Thorne. 21 The candle. 26 Of him that sowed, and then slept. 31 The graine of mustard seede. 38 Christ sleepeth in the ship.

Matth. 13 & luk. 8. 4

AND * he began againe to teach by the sea side, & there gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sate in the sea, and all the people was by the sea side on the land.

2 And he taught them many things in parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken: behold, there went out a sower to sowe.
4 And it came to passe as he sowed, that some fell by the way side, and the foules of the heauen came, and deuoured it vp.
5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and by and by sprung vp, because it had not depth of earth.
6 But assoone as the Sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had not root, it withered away.
7 And some fell among the thornes, and the thornes grew vp, and choked it, so that it gaue no fruit.
8 Some againe fell in good ground, and did yeeld fruit that sprang vp and grew, and brought forth, some thirtie fold, some sixtie fold, and some an hundreth fold.
9 Then he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.
10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked him of the parable.
11 And he said vnto them, To you it is giuen to know the mysterie of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all things be done in parables,
12 * That they seeing, may see and not discerne: and they hearing, may heare, and not vnderstand, lest at any time they should turne, and their sinnes should be forgiuen them. *Esa. 6.9. mat. 13. 14. luk. 8.*
13 Againe he said vnto them, Perceiue yee not this parable? how then should yee vnderstand all *other* parables? *10 iohn 12.40. acts 28.*
14 The Sower soweth the word.
15 And these are they that *receiue the seede* by the wayes side, in whom the word is sowen: but when they haue heard it, Satan commeth immediately, and taketh away the word that was sowen in their hearts. *26. rom. 11.8.*
16 And likewise they that receiue the seede in stonie ground, are they, which when they haue heard the word, straightwayes receiue it with gladnesse.
17 Yet haue they no root in themselues, and endure but a time: for when trouble and persecution ariseth for the word, immediatly they be offended.
18 Also they that receiue the seede among the thornes, are such as heare the word:
19 But the cares of this world, and the * deceitfulnesse of riches, and the Lustes of other things enter in, and choke the word, and it is vnfruitfull. *1. Tim. 6. 17.*
20 But they that haue receiued seede in good ground, are they that heare the word, and receiue it, and bring foorth fruite, one *corne* thirtie, and another sixtie, and some an hundreth. *Mat. 5.15 luke 8.16.*
21 ¶ Also he said vnto them, * Commeth the candle in, to be put *& 11.33.*

put vnder a buſhel, or vnder the bed, and not to be put vpon a candlestick?

Mat. 10. 26. *Luke* 8.17. *and* 12.2. 22 * For there is nothing hid that ſhall not be opened: neither is there a ſecret but that it ſhall come to light.

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

*Mat.*7. 2. *Luke* 6.38. 24 And he ſaid vnto them, Take heede what ye heare. * With what meaſure ye mete, it ſhalbe meaſured vnto you: and vnto you that heare, ſhal more be giuen.

*Mat.*13. 12. *and* 25.29. *Luke* 8.18 *and* 19. 26. 25 * For vnto him that hath, ſhall it bee giuen, and from him that hath not, ſhalbe taken away, euen that he hath.

26 ¶ Alſo he ſaid, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man ſhould caſt ſeed in the ground,

27 And ſhould ſleepe, and riſe vp night and day, and the ſeed ſhould ſpring and grow vp, hee not knowing how.

28 For the earth bringeth foorth fruit of it ſelfe, firſt the blade, then the eares, after that full corne in the eares.

29 And aſſoone as the fruit ſheweth it ſelfe, anon he putteth in the ſickle, becauſe the harueſt is come.

*Mat.*13. 31. *luke* 13.19. 30 ¶ * He ſaid moreouer, Whereunto ſhall we liken the kingdome of God, or with what compariſon ſhall we compare it?

31 *It is* like a graine of muſtard ſeed, which when it is ſowen in the earth, is the leaſt of all ſeeds that be in the earth:

32 But after that it is ſowen it groweth vp. & is greateſt of herbes, and beareth great branches, ſo that the foules of heauen may build vnder the ſhadow of it.

*Mat.*13. 34. 33 * And with many ſuch parables he preached the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 And without parables ſpake he nothing vnto them: but when they were alone he expounded all things to his diſciples apart.

*Mat.*8.23 *luke* 8.22 35 * Now the ſame day when euen was come, hee ſaid vnto them, Let vs paſſe ouer vnto the other ſide.

36 And they left the multitude, and tooke him as he was in the ſhippe: and there were alſo with him other little ſhips.

37 And there aroſe a great ſtorme of winde, and the waues beat into the ſhip, ſo that it was now full.

38 And hee was in the ſterne aſleepe on a pillow: and they awoke him, & ſaid to him, Maſter, careſt thou not that we periſh?

39 And he roſe vp, and rebuked the winde, and ſaid vnto the Sea, Peace, and be ſtill. So the winde ceaſed, and it was a great calme.

40 Then he ſaid vnto them, Why are ye ſo fearefull? How is it that ye haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and ſaid one to another, What is this, that both the winde and the Sea obey him?

CHA

CHAP. V.

One possessed is healed. 7 The deuill acknowledgeth Christ. 9 A legion of deuils 13 entreth into swine. 22 Iairus daughter. 25 A woman is healed of a bloody issue. 26 Physicians. 34 Faith. 39 Sleepe.

AND *they came ouer to the other side of the sea into the countrey of the Gardarens. *Mat.8.28 luke 8.26*

2 And when hee was come out of the ship, there met him incontinently out of the graues a man which had an vncleane spirit:

3 Who had his abiding among the graues, and no man could binde him, no not with chaines,

4 Because that when hee was often bound with fetters and chaines, he plucked the chaynes asunder, and brake the fetters in pieces, neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwaies both night and day he cried in the mountaines, and in the graues, and strooke himselfe with stones.

6 And when he saw Iesus afarre off, he ranne and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud voyce, and said, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the sonne of the most high God? I will that thou sweare to me by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he sayd vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name *is* Legion: for we are many.

10 And he prayed him instantly that hee would not send them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there in the mountaines a great heard of swine feeding:

12 And all the deuils besought him, saying, Send vs into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And incontinently Iesus gaue them leaue. Then the vncleane spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ran headlong from the high banke into the sea (and there were about two thousand swine) and they were choked vp in the Sea.

14 And the swineheards fled, and told it in the citie, & in the countrey, and they came out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they came to Iesus, and saw him that had been possessed with the deuil, and had the Legion, sit both clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, tolde them what was done to him that was possessed with the deuill, and concerning the swine.

17 Then they began to pray him, that hee would depart from their coasts.

18 And

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been
possessed with the deuill, prayed him that he might be with him.
19 Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer him, but said vnto
Goe thy way home to thy friendes, and shew them what
things the Lord hath done vnto thee, and *how* hee hath had
passion on thee.
20 So hee departed, and began to publish in Decapolis
great things Iesus had done vnto him: and all men did marue
21 ¶ And when Iesus was come ouer againe by ship vnto
other side, a great multitude gathered together to him, and
was neere vnto the sea.
22 * And behold, there came one of the rulers of the
Mat. 9. 18 Luke 8. 41. gogue, whose name was Iairus: and when hee sawe him, hee
downe at his feete,
23 And besought him instantly, saying, My little daughter
at point of death: *I pray thee* that thou wouldest come and
thine handes on her, that she may be healed, and liue.
24 Then hee went with him, and a great multitude follow
him, and thronged him.
25 (And there was a certaine woman, which was diseased
an issue of blood twelue yeeres,
26 And had suffered many things of many Physicians, and
spent all that she had, and it auailed her nothing, but she becam
much worse.
27 When shee had heard of Iesus, shee came in the preasse
hinde, and touched his garment.
28 For she said, If I may but touch his clothes, I shalbe whol
29 And straightway the course of her blood was dried vp, a
she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.
30 And immediatly, when Iesus did know in himselfe
vertue that went out of him, hee turned him round about in
preasse, and said, Who hath touched my clothes?
31 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitu
throng thee, and sayest thou, Who did touch me?
32 And he looked round about, to see her that had done that
33 And the woman feared, and trembled: for she knew wha
was done in her, and she came and fell downe before him, and
told him the whole trueth.
34 And hee said to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee
whole: goe in peace, and bee whole of thy plague.)
35 While hee yet spake, there came from the *same* ruler of the
Synagogues house *certaine*, which said, Thy daughter is dead:
why diseasest thou the Master any further?
36 Assoone as Iesus heard that word spoken, hee said vnto the

of the Synagogue, Be not afraid: onely beleeue.
37 And he suffered no man to follow him, saue Peter and
Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames.
38 So hee came vnto the house of the ruler of the Synagogue,
and saw the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.
39 And he went in, and said vnto them, Why make ye this
trouble and weepe? the child is not dead, but sleepeth.
40 And they laughed him to scorne: but hee put them all out,
and tooke the father and the mother of the child, and them that
were with him, and entred in where the child lay,
41 And tooke the child by the hand, and said vnto her, Talitha
cumi, which is by interpretation, Maiden, I say vnto thee, arise.
42 And straightway the maiden arose, & walked: for she was of
the age of twelue yeeres: and they were astonied out of measure.
43 And he charged them straitly that no man should know of
it, and commanded to giue her meate.

CHAP. VI.

Christ preaching in his country, his owne contemne him. 6 The vnbeliefe of the Nazarites. 7 The Apostles are sent. 13 They cast out deuils: they anoint the sicke with oyle. 14 Herods opinion of Christ. 18 The cause of Iohns imprisonment. 22 Dauncing. 27 Iohn beheaded, 29 buried. 30 The Apostles returne from preaching. 34 Christ teacheth in the desart. 37 He feedeth the people with fiue loaues. 48 The Apostles are troubled on the sea. 56 The sicke that touch Christs garment are healed.

AND hee * departed thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples followed him. *Mat.13. 54. Iuke.4. 16.*
2 And when the Sabbath was come, he began to teach in the
Synagogue: and many that heard him were astonied, and said,
From whence hath this man these things? and what wisedome is
this that is giuen vnto him, that euen such great workes are done
by this hands?
3 Is not this that Carpenter, Maries sonne, the brother of
Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda, and Simon? and are not his sisters
here with vs? And they were offended in him.
4 Then Iesus said vnto them, * A Prophet is not without ho- *Mat.13.*
nour but in his owne country, and among his owne kinred, and *57 Iuke 4.*
in his owne house. *24. Iohn*
5 And he could there doe no great workes, saue that he laide *4.44.*
his hands vpon a few sicke folke, and healed *them.* *Mat.4.23*
6 And he marueiled at their vnbeliefe, * and went about by *Iuk.13.22*
the townes on euery side, teaching. *Cha 3. 14.*
7 ¶ * And he called vnto him the twelue, & began to send them *mat. 10.1.*
foorth two and two, and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits, *Iuke 9.1.*

8 And commanded them, that they should take nothing for *their* iourney saue a staffe onely: neither scrip, neither bread, neither money in their girdles:

*Act.*12.8 9 But that they should bee shodde with * sandales, and that they should not put on two coates.

10 And he said vnto them, Whereſoeuer ye shall enter into an house, there abide till ye depart thence.

*Mat.*10. 14.*luke* 9 5. *Act.*13. 51.*and* 18.6. 11 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when yee depart thence, * shake off the dust that is vnder your feete, for a witnesse vnto them. Verely I say vnto you, it shall be easier for Sodome or Gomorrha at the day of iudgement, than for that citie.

12 ¶ And they went out, and preached that *men* should repent.

their liues.

*Iam.*5.14 13 And they cast out many deuils: and they * annointed with oyle many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed *them*.

*Mat.*14.1 *luke* 9.7. 14 ¶ *Then King Herod heard of *him* (for his name was made manifest) and said, Iohn Baptist is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great workes are wrought by him.

15 Other said, It is Elias: and some said, It is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets.

Luke 3. 19. 16 *So when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent forth, and had taken Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which was his brother Philips wife, because he had married her.

Leuit. 18. 16.*and* 20.21. 18 For Iohn said vnto Herod, *It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therfore Herodias laid waite against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that he *was* a iust man, and an holy, and reuerenced him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod on his birthday made a banket to his princes, and captaines, and chiefe estates of Galile,

22 And the daughter of the same Herodias came in and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate at table together, the King said vnto the maid, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.

23 And hee sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will giue it thee, *euen* vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

*Mat.*14.8 24 *So she went foorth, and said to her mother, What shall I aske? And shee said, Iohn Baptists head.

25 The

25 Then ſhe came in ſtraightway with haſte vnto the King, and
ked, ſaying, I would that thou ſhouldeſt giue me euen now in a
ger the head of Iohn Baptiſt.
26 Then the King was very ſory: yet for his oths ſake, and for
r ſakes which ſate at table with him, he would not refuſe her.
27 And immediatly the King ſent the hangman, and gaue
ge that his head ſhould be brought in. So hee went and be-
aded him in the priſon,
28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the maid,
d the maid gaue it to her mother.
29 And when his diſciples heard it, they came and tooke vp
body, and put it in a tombe.
30 ¶ * And the Apoſtles gathered themſelues together to Ie- *Luk.9.10*
and tolde him all things, both what they had done, and what
y had taught.
31 And he ſaid vnto them, Come ye apart into the wildernes,
d reſt a while: for there were many commers and goers, that
y had not leaſure to eate.
32 * So they went by ſhip out of the way into a deſert place. *Matt.14.*
33 But the people ſawe them when they departed, and many *13.luke 9*
ew him, and ran aſoot thither out of all cities, and came thither *10.*
fore them, and aſſembled vnto him.
34 * Then Ieſus went out, and ſawe a great multitude, and had *Mat.9.36*
mpaſſion on them, becauſe they were like ſheepe which had *and 14.14*
o ſhepheard: * and he began to teach them many things. *Luk.9.11*
35 * And when the day was now farre ſpent, his diſciples came *Mat. 14.*
nto him, ſaying, This is a deſert place, and now the day is farre *15.*
paſſed.
36 Let them depart, that they may goe into the countrey and
townes about, and buy them bread: for they haue nothing to
eate.
37 But he anſwered and ſaid vnto them, Giue ye them to eate.
And they ſaid vnto him, Shall we goe and buy two hundreth pe-
ny worth of bread, and giue them to eate?
38 * Then he ſaid vnto them, How many loaues haue ye? goe *Matt.14.*
and looke. And when they knew it, they ſaid, Fiue, and two fiſhes. *17.luke 9.*
39 So hee commanded them to make them all ſit downe by *13.iohn*
companies vpon the greene graſſe. *6.9.*
40 Then they ſate downe by rowes, by hundreds, and by fifties.
41 And he tooke the fiue loaues and the two fiſhes, and looked
vp to heauen, and gaue thankes, and brake the loaues, and gaue
them to his diſcilpes to ſet before them, and the two fiſhes he di-
uided among them all.
42 So they did all eate, and were ſatiſfied.

43 And

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fra
and of the fishes.

44 And they that had eaten were about fiue thousand

45 ¶ And straightway he caused his disciples to goe
shippe, and to go before vnto the other side vnto Bethsaid
he sent away the people.

46 Then assoone as he had sent them away, hee departe
mountaine to pray.

Mat. 14. 23. Iohn 6. 15. 47 * And when euen was come, the ship was in the mid
sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And hee saw them troubled in rowing (for the win
contrary vnto them) and about the fourth watch of the n
came vnto them walking vpon the sea, and would haue pa
them.

49 And when they saw him walking vpon the sea, they
sed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 For they all saw him, and were sore afraid: but
talked with them, and said vnto them, Bee yee of good com
is I, Be not afraid.

51 Then he went vp vnto them into the ship, and the win
sed, & they were much more amazed in themselues, & mar

52 For they had not considered *the matter* of the loaue
cause their hearts were hardened.

Mat. 14. 34. 53 ¶ * And they came ouer, and went into the land of G
saret, and arriued.

54 So when they were come out of the ship, straightway
knew him,

55 And ran about throughout all that region round abou
began to carry hither and thither in couches all that were si
where they heard that he was.

55 And whithersoeuer he entred into townes, or cities, or v
ges, they laid their sicke in the streetes, and prayed him that
might touch at the least the edge of his garment: And as ma
touched him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

2 *The Apostles are found faults with, for eating with vnwa
hands* 4 *The Pharises traditions about washings.* 6 *Hypocri
8 Mens traditions more set by then Gods.* 10 *Parents ma
honoured.* 14 *The things that doe indeede defile a man.* 25
woman of Canaane. 32 *The deafe dumbe man is healed.*

Mat. 15. 2 THen * gathered vnto him the Pharises, and certaine o
Scribes which came from Ierusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eate meate w
common hands (that is to say, vnwashen) they complained.

3 (F

3 (For the Phariſes and all the Iewes, except they waſh their
hands oft, eate not, holding the tradition of the Elders.
4 And *when they come* from the market, except they waſh they
eate not: and many other things there be, which they haue taken
on them to obſerue, *as* the waſhing of cuppes, and pots, and of
braſen veſſels and of beds)
5 Then asked him the Phariſes and Scribes, Why walke not
thy diſciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate
meate with vnwaſhen hands?
6 Then he anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Surely * Eſay hath *Iſa.29.13*
prophecied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people
honoureth me with lips, but their heart is farre away from me.
7 But they worſhip mee in vaine, teaching *for* doctrines the
commandements of men.
8 For yelay the commandement of God apart, and obſerue
the tradition of men, *as* the waſhing of pots and of cups, and many
other ſuch like things ye doe.
9 And he ſaid vnto them, Well, ye reiect the commandement
of God, that ye may obſerue your owne tradition.
10 For Moſes ſaid, * Honour thy father and thy mother: and, *Exod.20.*
Whoſoeuer ſhall ſpeake euill of father or mother, let him die *12.deut.5*
the death: *16.Leu.*
11 But yee ſay, if a man ſay to father or mother Corban, *that is,* *20.2.*
by the gift that is *offered* by me, thou mayeſt haue profit, *he ſhall* *Exod.21.*
be free. *17.Leu.20*
12 So ye ſuffer him no more to doe any thing for his father, or *9.Prou.*
his mother, *20.20.*
13 Making the word of God of none authoritie, by your tradi-
tion, which ye haue ordeined: and ye doe many ſuch like things.
14 *Then hee called the whole multitude vnto him, and ſaid *Mat.15.*
vnto them, Hearken you all vnto me, and vnderſtand. *10.*
15 There is nothing without a man that can defile him when it
entreth into him: but the things which proceed out of him, are
they which defile the man.
16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.
17 And when he came into an houſe *away* from the people, his
diſciples asked him concerning the parable.
18 And he ſaid vnto them, What? are ye without vnderſtan-
ding alſo? Doe ye not know that whatſoeuer thing from without
entreth into a man, cannot defile him,
19 Becauſe it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and
goeth out into the draught, which is the purging of all meates?
20 Then he ſaid, That which commeth out of man, that defi-
leth man,

21 * For

Gen.6. 5. & 8.21. 21 *For from within, *euen* out of the heart of men, proceed euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, couetousnesse, wickednesse, deceite, vnclean-nesse, a wicked eye, backbiting, pride, foolishnesse.

23 All these euill things come from within, and defile a man.

Mat.15. 21. 24 ¶ * And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would haue no man should haue knowen: but he could not be hid.

25 For a certaine woman whose little daughter had an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feet,

26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syrophenissian by nation) and she besought him that he would cast out the deuill out of her daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first be fed: for it is not good to take the childrens bread, & to cast it vnto whelpes.

28 Then shee answered and said vnto him, Trueth, Lord: yet indeed the welpes eate vnder the table of the childrens crumbes.

29 Then he said vnto her, For this saying goe thy way, the deuill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home to her house, shee found the deuill departed, and her daughter lying on the bed.

31 ¶ And he departed againe from the coasts of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto the sea of Galile thorow the mids of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they brought vnto him one that was deafe, and had an impediment in his speach, and prayed him to put his hand vpon him.

33 Then hee tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers in his eares, and did spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking vp to heauen, hee sighed, and said vnto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and hee spake plaine.

36 And he commanded them that they should tel no man: but how much soeuer he forbade them, the more a great deale they published it,

Gen.1.31. eccles.39 16. 37 And were beyond measure astonied, saying, *He hath done all things well, he maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumme to speake.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The miracle of the seuen loaues. 11 The Iewes seeke signes. To beware of the leauen of the Pharisees. 22 A blinde man healed. 27 The peoples sundry opinions of Christ. 29 The Apostles knowledge Christ. 31 He foretelleth his death. 33 Peter, Satan. 35 To saue and lose the life. 38 To be ashamed of Christ.

IN * those dayes, when there was a very great multitude, and had nothing to eate, Ieſus called his diſciples to him, and ſaid vnto them, *Mat.15. 32.*

2 I haue compaſsion on the multitude, becauſe they haue now continued with me three daies, and haue nothing to eat.

3 And if I ſend them away faſting to their owne houſes, they would faint by the way: for ſome of them came from farre.

4 Then his diſciples anſwered him, Whence can a man ſatisfie theſe with bread here in the wildernes?

5 And he asked them, How many loaues haue ye? And they ſaid, Seuen.

6 Then hee commanded the multitude to ſit downe on the ground: and hee tooke the ſeuen loaues, and gaue thanks, brake *them*, and gaue to his diſciples to ſet before *them*, and they did ſet *them* before the people.

7 They had alſo a few ſmall fiſhes: and when he had giuen thanks, he commanded them alſo to be ſet before *them*.

8 So they did eate and were ſufficed, and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left, ſeuen baskets full.

9 (And they that had eaten, were about foure thouſand) ſo he ſent them away.

10 ¶ * And anon he entred into a ſhip with his diſciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha. *Mat.15. 39.*

11 * And the Phariſes came forth, and began to diſpute with him, ſeeking of him a ſigne from heauen, and tempting him. *Mat.16.1*

12 Then he ſighed deepely in his ſpirit and ſaid, Why doeth this generation ſeeke a ſigne? Verely I ſay vnto you, a ſigne ſhall not be giuen vnto this generation.

13 ¶ So he left them, and went into the ſhip againe, and departed to the other ſide.

14 ¶ * And they had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ſhippe with them but one loafe. *Mat.16. 5.*

15 And he charged them, ſaying, Take heed and beware of the leauen of the Phariſes, and of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reaſoned among themſelues, ſaying, *It is* becauſe we haue no bread.

17 And when Ieſus knew it, hee ſaid vnto them, Why reaſon you *thus*, becauſe ye haue no bread? perceiue ye not yet, neither vnderſtand? haue yee your hearts yet hardened?

18 Haue ye eyes and ſee not? and haue ye eares and heare not? and doe ye not remember?

19 * When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thouſand, how many baskets full of broken meate tooke ye vp? They ſaid vnto him, Twelue. *Ioh.6.11.*

20 And when *I brake* seuen among foure thousand, how many baskers of the leauings of broken meat tooke yee vp? And they said, Seuen.

21 Then he said vnto them. How *is it* that yee vnderstand not?

22 And hee came to Bethsaida, and they brought a blinde man vnto him, and desired him to touch him.

23 Then hee tooke the blinde by the hand, and led him out of the town, and spat in his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, and asked him, if he saw ought.

24 And hee looked vp, and said, I see men: for I see them walking like trees.

25 After that he put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke againe. And he was restored to his sight, and saw euery man a farre off clerely.

26 And he sent him home to his house, saying, Neither go into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne.

Matt. 16. 13. Luke 9. 18.

27 ¶ * And Iesus went out, and his disciples into the townes of Cesarea Philippi. And by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe men say that I am?

28 And they answered, *Some say*, Iohn Baptist, and some, Elias, and some, One of the Prophets.

29 And hee said vnto them, But whom say yee that I am? Then Peter answered and said vnto him, Thou art that Christ.

30 And hee sharpely charged them, that concerning him they should tell no man.

31 Then hee beganne to teach them that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and should bee reproued of the Elders, and of the hie Priests, and of the Scribes, and be slaine, and within three dayes rise againe.

Mat. 10. 38. & 16. 24. Luke 9. 23. & 14. 27.

32 And he spake that thing boldly. Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him.

33 Then he turned backe, and looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

Mat. 10. 39. & 16. 25. Luke 9. 24. & 17. 33. Mat. 10. 33. Luke 9. 26. and 12. 9.

34 ¶ And he called the people vnto him, with his disciples also, and said vnto them, * Whosoeuer will follow mee, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me.

35 For whosoeuer will * saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, he shall saue it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, though hee should winne the whole world, if he lose his soule?

37 Or what exchange shall a man giue for his soule?

38 * For whosoeuer shall bee ashamed of mee, and of my wordes

among this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed also, when he commeth in the glorie of his Father with the holy Angels.

CHAP. IX.

Christ transfiguration. 7 Christ must be heard. 11 Of Elias and Iohn Baptist. 14 The possessed is healed. 23 Faith can doe all things. 31 Christ foretelleth his death. 33 Who is greatest among the Apostles. 36 Christ taketh a childe in his armes. 42. To offend. 50 Salt. Peace.

AND * he saide vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power. *Mat.16. 28.luke 9. 27.*

2 * And sixe dayes after, Iesus taketh vnto him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and carieth them vp into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and his shape was changed before them. *Mat.17.1 luke 5.28.*

3 And his rayment did shine, *and was* very white, as snow, so white as no fuller can make vpon the earth.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses, and they were talking with Iesus.

5 Then Peter answered, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be heere, let vs make also three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 Yet he knew not what he said: for they were afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that shadowed them, and a voyce came out of the cloude, saying, * This is my beloued Sonne: heare him. *Mat 3.17 and 17.5.*

8 And suddenly they looked round about, and saw no more any man, saue Iesus onely with them. *luke 3. 22 chap.1.11*

9 * And as they came downe from the mountaine, he charged them that they should tell no man what they had seene, saue when the Sonne of man were risen from the dead againe. *Mat.17 9*

10 So they kept that matter to themselues, and demanded one of another, what the rising from the dead againe should meane?

11 Also they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes, that * Elias must first come? *Mal.4.5.*

12 And he answered and said vnto them, Elias verely shal first come, and restore all things, and * as it is written of the Sonne of man, he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. *Isa.53.4.*

13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come, (and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would) as it is written of him.

14 ¶ * And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes disputing with them. *Mat.17. 14 luke 9*

15 And straightway all the people when they beheld him, were amazed, and ranne to him, and saluted him. *37.38.*

16 Then hee asked the Scribes, What dispute you a
your selues?

17 And one of the company answered, and said, Master,
brought my sonne vnto thee, which hath a dumbe spirit:

18 And wheresoeuer he taketh him, hee teareth him, a
someth, and gnasheth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spa
thy disciples that they should cast him out, and they could n

19 Then hee answered him, and said, O faithlesse gener
how long now shall I bee with you! how long now shall I
you! Bring him vnto me.

20 So they brought him vnto him: and assoone as the
saw him, he tare him, and he fell downe on the ground, walle
and froming.

21 Then he asked his father, How long time is it since h
bene thus? And he said, Of a child.

22 And often times he casteth him into the fire, and int
water to destroy him: but if thou canst doe any thing, help
and haue compassion vpon vs.

23 And Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleeue it, all th
are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straightway the father of the child, crying with te
said, Lord I beleeue, helpe mine vnbelefe.

25 When Iesus sawe that the people came running toge
hee rebuked the vncleane spirit, saying vnto him, Thou d
and deafe spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and ente
more into him.

26 Then *the spirit* cried, and rent him sore, and came out,
he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke his hand and lift him vp, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples a
him secretly, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said vnto them, This kind can by no other me
come foorth, but by prayer and fasting.

Mat.17. 30 ¶ * And they departed thence, and went together thro
22.Luke 9 Galile, and hee would not that any should haue knowen it.
22.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The So
of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men, and they shall
him, but after that hee is killed, he shall rise againe the third

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afrai
aske him.

Mat.18.1 33 * After, hee came to Capernaum: and when hee was in
Luke 9.46. house, hee asked them, What was it that ye disputed among
by the way?

34 And they held their peace: for by the way they reaso
ame

among themselues, who *should be* the chiefest.
35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and said to them, any man desire to be first, the same shalbe last of all, and seruant vnto all.
36 And he tooke a little child, and set him in the mids of them, and tooke him in his armes, and said vnto them,
37 Whosoeuer shall receiue one of such little children in my name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer receiueth mee, receiueth not me, but him that sent me.
38 ¶ *Then Iohn answered him, saying, Master, wee saw one *Luk.9.49*
casting out deuils by thy Name, which followed not vs, and wee forbad him, because he followeth vs not.
39 * But Iesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man that *1.Cor.12.*
can do a miracle by my Name, that can lightly speake euill of me. *3.*
40 For whosoeuer is not against vs, is on our part.
41 * And whosoeuer shall giue you a cup of water to drinke for *Mat.10.*
my Names sake, because yee belong to Christ, verely I say vnto *42.*
you, he shall not lose his reward.
42 * And whosoeuer shall offend one of these little ones, that *Mat.11.6*
beleeue in me, it were better for him rather, that a milstone were *luke 17.*
hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea. *1.*
43 * Wherefore if thine hand cause thee to offend, cut it off: *Mat.5.29*
it is better for thee to enter into life, maimed, then hauing two *and 18.8.*
hands to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shalbe quenched,
44 * Where their worme dieth not, & the fire neuer goeth out. *Isa.66.*
45 Likewise, if thy foot cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is bet- *24.*
ter for thee to goe halt into life, then hauing two feete to bee cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shalbe quenched,
46 Where their worme dieth not and the fire neuer goeth out.
47 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, it is better for thee to goe into the kingdome of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes to be cast into hell fire,
48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.
49 For euery man shall be salted with fire: and * euery sacri- *Leui.2.13*
fice shalbe salted with salt.
50 *Salt is good: but if the salt be vnsauory, wherewith shall *Mat.5.13*
it be seasoned? Haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with *luk.14.34*
another.

CHAP. X.

The wife only for fornication is to be put away. 13 Little children are brought to Christ. 17 A rich man asketh Iesus how he may possesse eternall life. 28 The Apostles forsooke all things for Christs sake. 33 Christ foreshoweth his death. 35 Zebedeus his sonnes request. 46 Blinde Bartimeus healed.

Mat.19.1 AND * he arose from thence, and went into the coasts of Iudæa by the farre side of Iordan, and the people resorted vnto him againe: and as he was wont, he taught them againe.

2 Then the Pharises came and asked him, if it were lawfull for a man to put away *his* wife, and tempted him.

Deu.24.1 3 And he answered and said vnto them, What did * Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, For the hardnes of your heart hee wrote this precept vnto you.

Gen.1.27 6 But at the beginning of the creation, * God made them male *mat.19.4* and female:

Gen.2.24 7 * For this cause shall man leaue his father and mother, and *1.cor.6.* cleaue vnto his wife,

16.ephe. 8 And they twaine shalbe one flesh: so that they are no more *5.31.* twaine, but one flesh.

1.Cor.7. 9 * Therefore what God hath coupled together, let no man *10.* separate.

10 And in that house his disciples asked him againe of the same matter.

Mat.5.32 11 And hee said vnto them, * Whosoeuer shall put away his *and 19.9* wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. *luke 16.* *18.*

12 And if a woman put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

Matt.19. 13 ¶ * Then they brought little children to him, that he should *13.luke* touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. *18.15.*

14 But when Iesus saw it, he was displeased, and said vnto them, Suffer the little children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little childe, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he tooke them vp in his armes, and put *his* hands vpon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ And when he was gone out on the way, there came one * *Matth.19* running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good master, what *16.luke* shall I doe, that I may possesse eternall life? *18.18.*

18 Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, *euen* God.

Exod.20. 19 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou shalt not commit *13.* adultery. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witnesse. Thou shalt hurt no *man*. Honour thy father and mother.

20 Then hee answered and sayde to him, Master, all these

things haue I obserued from my youth.
21 And Iesus looked vpon him, and loued him, and said vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee, Goe, *and* sell all that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come follow me, and take vp the crosse.
22 But he was sad at that saying, and went away sorowfull, for he had great possessions.
23 And Iesus looked round about, and said vnto his disciples, How hardly doe they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!
24 And his disciples were afraid at his words. But Iesus answered againe, and said vnto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!
25 It is easier for a camell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.
26 And they were much more astonied, saying with themselues, Who then can be saued?
27 But Iesus looked vpon them, and said, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.
28 ¶ Then Peter began to say to him, Loe, we haue forsaken all, and haue followed thee. *Matth.19 27.luke*
29 Iesus answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath forsaken house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the Gospels, 18.28.
30 But hee shall receiue an hundreth fold now at this present: houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions, and in the world to come, eternall life.
31 * But many *that are* first, shall be last, and the last, first. *Mat.19.*
32 ¶ * And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem, and Iesus went before them, and they were troubled, and as they followed, they were afraid. And Iesus tooke the twelue againe, and began to tell them what things should come vnto him, *30.luke 13.30. Mat.20. 17.luke*
33 *Saying*, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be deliuered vnto the high Priests and to the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles. 18.31.
34 And they shall mocke him, and scourge him, and spit vpon him, and kill him: but the third day he shall rise againe.
35 ¶ * Then Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus came vnto him, saying, Master, wee would that thou shouldest doe for vs that that we desire. *Mat.20. 20.*
36 And he said vnto them, What would ye I should do for you?
37 And they said to him, Grant vnto vs, that we may sit, one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy glory.

38 But Iesus said vnto them, Yee know not what ye aske: can ye drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and be baptized with the baptisme that I shalbe baptized with?

39 And they said vnto him, We can. But Iesus said vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede of the cup that I shall drinke of, and be baptized with the baptisme wherewith I shall be baptized:

40 But to sit at my right hand, and at my left, is not mine to giue, but *it shall be giuen* to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard that, they began to disdaine at Iames and Iohn.

Luke 22. 25. 42 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said to them, Ye know that they which are princes among the Gentiles, haue dominion ouer them, and they that be great among them, exercise authoritie ouer them.

43 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoeuer will be great among you, shall be your seruant.

44 And whosoeuer will be chiefe of you, shall be the seruant of all.

45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to bee serued, but to serue, and to giue his life for the ransome of many.

Mat. 20. 29. Luke 18. 35. 46 ¶ *Then they came to Iericho: and as he went out of Iericho with his disciples, and a great multitude, Bartimeus the sonne of Timeus, a blinde man, sate by the wayes side begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he began to cry and to say, Iesus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

48 And many rebuked him, because he should hold his peace: but he cried much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

49 Then Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they called the blinde, saying vnto him, Be of good comfort, arise, he calleth thee.

50 So he threw away his cloake, and rose, and came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus answered, & said vnto him, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And the blinde said vnto him, Lord, that I may receiue sight.

52 Then Iesus said vnto him, Goe thy way: thy faith hath saued thee. And by and by he receiued *his* sight, and followed Iesus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

1 *Christ entreth into Ierusalem riding on an asse.* 13 *The fruitlesse figge tree is cursed.* 15 *Sellers and buyers are cast out of the Temple.* 23 *The force of faith.* 24 *Faith in prayer.* 25 *The brother his offences must be pardoned.* 27 *The Priests aske by what authoritie he wrought those things that he did.* 30 *Whence Iohns baptisme was.*

ye aske. AND *when they came neere to Hierusalem, to Bethphage *Mat.21.1.*
baptized and Bethania vnto the mount of Olives, he sent foorth two of *Luke 19.*
disciples, 29.

id vnto 2 And said vnto them, Go your wayes into that towne that is
nke of, and against you, and assoone as ye shall enter into it, ye shall find
ptized: a colt tyed, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him.
s not mine 3 And if any man say vnto you, Why doe ye this? Say that the
repared. Lord hath need of him, and straightway he will send him hither.
o disdain 4 And they went their way, and found a colt tied by the doore
without, in a place where two wayes met, and they loosed him.
them, * 5 Then certaine of them that stood there, saide vnto them,
s, have What doe ye loosing the colt?
hem, exc 6 And they said vnto them, as Iesus had commanded them.
Then they let them goe.
euer will 7 ¶ *And they brought the colt to Iesus, and cast their garments *Iohn 12.*
him, and he sate vpon him. 14.
e the sent 8 And many spread their garments in the way: and other cut
downe branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way.
rued, bee 9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed,
saying, Hosanna: blessed *be* hee that commeth in the Name of the
at of Iehoud. Lord.
the sonne 10 Blessed *be* the kingdom that commeth in the Name of the
God of our father Dauid: Hosanna, *O thou which art* in the high-
h, he beh *heauens.*
cy on m 11 *So Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple: and *Mat.21*
his eyes when he had looked about on all things, and now it was euening, *10. Luke*
y on mee went foorth vnto Bethania with the twelue. *19.45.*
be calle 12 * And on the morrow when they were come out from Be- *Mat.21.*
d comfo thania, he was hungry. *19.*
13 And seeing a figge tree afarre off that had leaues, he went *to*
o Iesus if he might find any thing thereon: but when he came vnto it,
t thou he found nothing but leaues: for the time of figges was not yet.
hat In 14 Then Iesus answered, and said to it. Neuer man eate fruite
of thee hereafter while the world standeth: and his disciples
h hath heard it.
wed Ie 15 ¶ And they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the
Temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the
Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the
fruit of seates of them that sold doues.
the Te 16 Neither would he suffer that any man should carie a vessell
brother through the Temple.
auth 17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, * Mine *Isa.56.7.*
ons be house shall be called the house of prayer vnto all nations? * but *Ier.7.11*
you haue made it a denne of theeues.

A 18 And

18 And the Scribes and hie Priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because the whole multitude was astonied at his doctrine.

19 But when euen was come, *Iesus* went out of the citie.

Mat.21. 19. 20 ¶ * And in the morning as they iourneyed together, they saw the figgetree dried vp from the rootes.

21 Then Peter remembred, and said vnto him, Master, behold the figgetree which thou cursedst, is withered.

22 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Haue the right faith in God.

23 For verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou taken away, and cast into the sea, and shall not wauer in his heart, but shall beleeue that those things which he saith shall come to passe, whatsoeuer hee saith, shall be done vnto him.

Mat.7.7. luke 11.9 24 *Therfore I say vnto you, whatsoeuer yee desire when yee pray, beleeue that ye shall haue it, and it shalbe *done* vnto you.

Mat.6.14 25 *But when yee shall stand and pray, forgiue, if ye haue ought against any man, that your Father also which is in heauen may forgiue you your trespasses.

26 For if yee will not forgiue, your Father which is in heauen will not pardon you your trespasses.

Mat.21. 23.luke 20.1. 27 ¶ *Then they came againe to Ierusalem: and as he was in the Temple, there came to him the hie Priests, and the Scribes and the Elders,

28 And said vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authority, that thou shouldest doe these things?

29 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, I will also aske of you a certaine thing, and answere ye me, and I will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? answere me.

31 And they thought with themselues, saying, If wee shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then did ye not beleeue him?

32 But if we say, Of men, we feare the people: for all men counted Iohn, that hee was a Prophet indeed.

33 Then they answered, and said vnto Iesus, Wee cannot tell. And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Neither will I tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Of the vineyard.* 10 *Christ the stone refused of the Iewes.* 13 *Of tribute to bee giuen to Cesar.* 18 *The Sadducees demand of the resurrection.* 28 *The first Commandement.* 31 *To*

God and the neighbour is better then sacrifices. 36 Christ Dauids sonne. 38 To beware of the Scribes and Pharises. 42 The poore widow.

ND he began to speake vnto them in parables, * A certaine man planted a vineyard, and compassed it with an hedge, and digged a pit for the winepresse, and built a tower in it, and let it to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey. *Isa 5.1. ier.2.21. mat. 21. luke 20.9.*

2 And at the time, he sent to the husbandmen a seruant, that he might receiue of the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 But they tooke him, and beat him, and sent him away emptie.

4 And againe, hee sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe hee sent another, and him they slewe, and many other, beating some, and killing some.

6 Yet had he one sonne, his deare beloued: him also he sent last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

7 But the husbandmen said among themselues, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shalbe ours.

8 So they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shal then the Lord of the vineyard doe? He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and giue the vineyard to others.

10 Haue yee not read so much as this Scripture? * The stone which the builders did refuse, is made the head of the corner? *Psal. 118 22. isa. 28*

11 This was done of the Lord, and it is marueilous in our eies. *1 mat.*

12 Then they went about to take him, but they feared the people: for they perceiued that hee spake that parable against them: therefore they left him, and went their way. *21.42. act. 4.11. rom. 9.33*

13 ¶ * And they sent vnto him certaine of the Pharises, and of the Herodians, that they might take him in *his* talke. *1. pet. 2. 7.8.*

14 And when they came they said vnto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou considerest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God truely: Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not? *Mat. 22. 15. luke 20.20.*

15 Should wee giue it, or should we not giue it? But he knew their hypocrisie, and said vnto them, Why tempt yee me? Bring mee a penie, that I may see it.

16 So they brought it, and hee sayd vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said vnto him, Cesars.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Giue to Cesar the things that are Cesars, and to God those that are Gods: and they marueiled at him. *Rom. 13.7*

18 ¶ * Then

*Matth.*22 23. *luke* 20.27. *Deu.* 25.5 *mat.*22. 24. 18 ¶ *Then came the Sadduces vnto him (which say no resurrection) and they asked him, saying,

19 Master, *Moyses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother leaue *his* wife, and leaue no children, that his brother should his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

20 There were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife when he died left no issue.

21 Then the second tooke her, and he died, neither did leaue issue: and the third likewise.

22 So those seuen had her, and left no issue: last of all died also.

23 In the resurrection then, when they shall rise againe, wife shall she be of them? for seuen had her to wife.

24 Then Iesus answered and said vnto them, Are ye not fore deceiued, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither wer of God?

25 For when they shal rise againe from the dead, neither marrie, nor wiues are maried, but are as the Angels which heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they shal rise againe not read in the booke of Moyses, how in the bush God spake *Exod* 3.6. him, saying, I *am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac *matth.*22 the God of Iacob?

32. 27 God is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing Ye are therefore greatly deceiued.

*Matth.*22 35. 28 ¶ *Then came one of the Scribes that had heard them puting together. *and* perceiuing that he had answered them he asked him, Which is the first commandement of all?

29 Iesus answered him, The first of all the commandemen *Exo.*20.2 *deut.* 6.4. * Heare Israel, the Lord our God is the onely Lord.

30 Thou shalt therefore loue the Lord thy God with all heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy mind, and with thy strength: this is the first Commandement.

Leuit. 19. 18 *matt.* 22.39. *rom.*13.9 *gal.*5.14. *iames* 2.8 31 And the second *is* like, that is, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. There is none other Commaundement then these.

32 Then the Scribe said vnto him, Well, Master, thou said the trueth, that there is one God, and that there is none but hee.

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and loue *his* neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings, and sacrifices.

34 Then when Iesus saw that hee answered discreetly,

vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. and no man after that durst aske him any question.

Matth.22 35 ¶ * And Iesus answered and said, teaching in the Temple, how say the Scribes that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid?

41.luke 20.41. 36 For Dauid himselfe said by the holy Ghost, * The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole.

Psal.110. 1. 37 Then Dauid himselfe called him Lord: by what meanes is he then his sonne? and much people heard him gladly.

Mat.23.6. luk.11.43 & 20.46. 38 *Moreouer, he said vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the Scribes which loue to goe in long robes, and *loue* salutations in markets,

39 And the chiefe seats in the Synagogues, and the first roumes at feasts.

Mat.23. 14.luke 20.47. 40 Which * deuoure widowes houses euen vnder a colour of long praiers. These shall receiue the greater damnation.

41 * And as Iesus sate ouer against the treasurie, he beheld how people cast money into the treasury, and many rich men cast in much.

Luk.21.1 42 And there came a certaine poore widow, and shee threw in two mites, which make a quadrin.

43 Then he called vnto him his disciples, and said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast more in, than all they which haue cast into the treasury.

44 For they all did cast in of their superfluitie: but shee of her penurie did cast in all that she had, *euen* all her liuing.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the destruction of Hierusalem. 9 Persecutions for the Gospel. 10 The Gospel must bee preached to all nations. 26 Of Christs comming to iudgement. 33 We must watch and pray.

Mat.24.1 luk.21.5. AND * as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples said vnto him, Master, see what manner stones and what manner buildings *are here.*

Luke 19. 43. 2 * Then Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon a stone, that shall not be throwen downe.

3 And as he sate on the mount of Olives, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him secretly,

4 Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what *shall bee* the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled?

Eph.5.6. 2.thes.2.3 5 And Iesus answered them, and began to say, * Take heede lest any man deceiue you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and shall deceiue many.

7 Further-

7 Furthermore, when yee shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres, be ye not troubled: for *such things* must needs be: but the end *shall* not *be* yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shall bee earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there shall be famine and troubles: these *are* the beginnings of sorowes.

9 But take yee heede to your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp to the Councils, and to the Synagogues: yee shall be beaten, and brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimoniall vnto them.

10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

Matth. 10. *19. Luke* 12. 11. *and* 21. 14.

11 * But when they leade you, and deliuer you vp, be not full beforehand, neither study what ye shall say, but what is giuen you at the same time, that speake: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy Ghost.

12 Yea, and the brother shall deliuer the brother to death, and the father the sonne, and the children shal rise against their parents, and shall cause them to die.

13 And yee shall bee hated of all men for my Names sake: but whosoeuer shall endure vnto the end, hee shalbe saued.

Matth. 24. *15. Luke* 21. 20. *Dan.* 9. 27.

14 *Moreouer, when ye shall see the abomination of desolation (spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet) set where it ought not, (let him that readeth consider it) then let them *that be* in Iudea flee into the mountaines.

15 And let him that is vpon the house, not come down into the house, neither enter therein, to fetch any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the fielde, not turne backe again to take his garment.

17 Then woe *shall be* to them that are with child, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

18 Pray therefore that your flight bee not in the winter.

19 For those dayes shall bee such tribulation, as was not from the beginning of the creation, which God created, vnto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the elects sake which he hath chosen, he hath shortened those dayes.

Matt. 24. 23. *Luke* 21. 8.

21 Then * if any say to you, Loe, here is Christ, or Loe, here, beleeue it not.

Isa. 13. 10. *Ezek.* 32. 7. *Ioel.* 2. 10. *& 3. 9.*

22 For false Christs shall rise, and false prophets, and shall shew signes and wonders to deceiue, if it were possible, the very elect.

23 But take ye heed. Behold, I haue shewed you all things before.

24 ¶ Moreouer, in those dayes, after that tribulation, *the*

Sun

shall waxe darke, and the Moone shall not giue her light,
25 And the starres of heauen shall fall: and the powers which
are in heauen, shall shake,
26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in the
clouds, with great power and glory.
27 * And he shall then send his Angels, and shall gather toge- *Matt.24.*
ther his elect from the foure winds, *and* from the vtmost part of 31.
the earth to the vtmost part of heauen.
28 Now learne a parable of the figtree. When her bough is yet
tender, & it bringeth forth leaues, ye know that Summer *is* neere.
29 So in like maner, when yee see these things come to passe,
know that *the kingdom of God* is nere, *euen* at the doores.
30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generation shall not passe,
till all these things be done.
31 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not
passe away.
32 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the An-
gels which are in heauen, neither the Son himselfe, but the Father.
33 * Take heed: watch and pray: for yee know not when the *Matt.24.*
time is. 13.
34 *For the sonne of man is* as a man going into a strange coun-
trey, and leaueth his house, and giueth authoritie to his seruaunts,
and to euery man his worke, & commandeth the porter to watch.
35 Watch therefore (for ye know not when the Master of the
house will come, at euen, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or
in the dawning)
36 Lest if he come suddenly, he should find you sleeping.
37 And those things that I say vnto you, I say vnto all men,
Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Priests conspiracie against Christ. 3 The woman powring oyle on Christs head. 12 The preparing of the Passeouer. 22 The institution of the Supper. 41 Christ deliuered into the handes of man. 43 Iudas betrayeth him with a kisse. 53 Christ is before Caiphas. 46 Peters denial.

AND * two daies after followed *the feast of* the Passeouer, and *Mat.26.2*
of vnleauened bread: and the hie Priests and Scribes sought *luke 22.1.*
how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.
2 But they said, Not in the feast *day*, lest there be any tumult a-
mong the people.
3 * And when hee was in Bethania in the house of Simon the *Mat.26.6*
leper, as hee sate at table, there came a woman hauing a boxe of *iohn 12.2*
ointment of Spikenard, very costly, and shee brake the boxe, and
powred it on his head.

4 Therefore

4 Therefore some disdained among themselues, and
what end is this waste of ointment?
5 For it might haue been sold for more then three
pēce, and been giuen to y poore. And they murmured
6 But Iesus said, Let her alone: why trouble ye her?
wrought a good worke on me.
7 For yee haue the poore with you alwayes, and when
ye may do them good, but me ye shall not haue alwayes.
8 She hath done that she could: shee came aforehand
my body to the burying.
9 Verely I say vnto you, wheresoeuer this Gospel shall
ched throughout the whole world, this also that shee
shall be spoken of in remembrance of her.
Mat. 26 14. luke 22.4. 10 ¶ * Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went
the high Priests, to betray him vnto them.
11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and
they would giue him money: therefore hee sought how
conueniently betray him.
Matth. 26 17. luke 22.8. 12 ¶ *Now the first day of vnleauened bread, when
ficed the Passeouer, his disciples said vnto him, Where
that wee goe and prepare, that thou mayest eate the
13 Then he sent forth two of his disciples, and said
Goe ye into the citie, and there shall a man meete you
pitcher of water: follow him.
14 And whithersoeuer he goeth in, say ye to the good
the house, The Master saith, Where is the lodging,
eate the Passeouer with my disciples?
15 And hee will shewe you an vpper chamber *which*
trimmed and prepared: there make it ready for vs.
16 So his disciples went forth, and came to the citie,
as he had said vnto them, and made ready the Passeouer.
17 ¶ And at euen he came with the twelue.
Psal. 41. 10. mat. 26.20.23 18 *And as they sate at table & did eate, Iesus said, Verely
vnto you, that one of you shall betray me, which eateth
19 Then they began to be sorrowfull, and to say to him
ioh. 22.14 ioh. 13. 18, 21. one, Is it I? And another, Is it I?
20 And hee answered, and sayd vnto them, *It is* one
twelue that dippeth with me in the platter
21 Truely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is
Act. 1.26 him: * but woe *bee* to that man, by whom the Sonne of man
traied: it had bene good for that man, if he had neuer
Matt. 26. 26.1.cor. 11.24. 22 * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and
had giuen thanks, he brake it, and gaue it to them, and said,
eate, this is my body.

23 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thanks, gaue
to them: and they all dranke of it.
24 And he said vnto them, This is my blood of that new Testa-
ment, which is shed for many.
25 Verely I say vnto you, I will drinke no more of the fruit of
the vine, vntill that day that I drinke it new in the kingdome of
God.
26 And when they had sung a Psalme, they went out to the
mount of Oliues.
27 ¶ * Then Iesus said vnto them, All ye shall bee offended by *Ioh.16.32
me this night: for it is written, † I will smite the shepheard, and *Zech.13.7
the sheepe shall be scattered.
28 But after that I am risen, I will goe into * Galile before you. *Mat.26.32
29 And Peter said vnto him, Although all men should be offen-
ded at thee, yet would not I.
30 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, this day,
*euen in this night before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt denie
me thrise.
31 But he said more earnestly, If I should die with thee, I will
not denie thee: likewise also said they all.
32 ¶ * After they came into a place named Gethsemane: then *Matth.26.
he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, till I haue prayed. 36. Luke
33 And he tooke with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and hee 22.39.
began to be troubled, and in great heauinesse,
34 And said vnto them, My soule is very heauy, *euen* vnto the
death: tary here, and watch.
35 So he went forward a little, & fell down on the ground, and
prayed, that if it weee possible, that houre might passe from him.
36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible vnto thee:
take away this cup from me, neuertheless not that I will, but that
thou wilt, *be done.*
37 Then he came, and found them sleeping, and said to Peter,
Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one houre?
38 ¶ Watch ye and pray, that yee enter not into tentation: the
spirit in deede is ready, but the flesh is weake.
39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and spake the same
words
40 And hee returned, and found them asleepe againe: for
their eyes were heauie: neither knew they what they should an-
swere him.
41 And he came the third time, and said vnto them, Sleepe
henceforth, and take your rest: it is enough: the houre is come:
behold, the Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of sinners.
42 Rise vp: let vs goe, lo he that betrayeth me, is at hand.

Matth.26 47.luk.22 47.iohn 18.3.

43 * And immediatly while he yet spake, came Iudas that was one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues from the hie Priests and Scribes and Elders.

44 And he that betraied him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, he it is: take him and leade him away safely.

45 And assoone as he was come, hee went straightway to him and said, Haile Master, and kissed him.

46 Then they layd their hands on him, and tooke him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew out a sword, and smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Ye be come out against a thiefe with swords and with staues to take mee.

49 I was daily with you teaching in the Temple, and ye took me not: but *thus is done* that the Scriptures should bee fulfilled.

50 Then they all forsooke him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, clothed in linnen vpon his bare *body*, and the yong men caught him.

52 But he left his linnen cloth, and fled from them naked.

Matth.26 57.luk.22 54.iohn 18.24.

53 * So they led Iesus away to the hie Priest, and to him came together all the hie Priests, and the Elders, and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him a farre off, euen into the hall of the hie Priest, & sate with the seruants, & warmed *himselfe* at the fire.

Matt.26 59.

55 And the * hie Priestes, and all the Councill sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death, but found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 Then there arose certaine, and bare false witnesse against him, saying,

Iohn 2. 19.

58 Wee heard him say, * I will destroy this Temple made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But their witnesse yet agreed not together.

60 Then the hie Priest stood vp amongst them, and asked Iesus saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is the matter that these beare witnesse against thee?

61 But he held his peace and answered nothing. Againe the hie Priest asked him, and said vnto him, Art thou that Christ the son of the Blessed?

Matt.24. 30.

62 And Iesus said, I am *he*, * and ye shall see the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power *of God*, and come in the cloudes of heauen.

63 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, and said, What haue we any more neede of witnesses?

64 Ye

64 Ye haue heard the blasphemie: what thinke yee? And they all condemned him to be worthy of death.

65 And some began to spit at him, and to couer his face, and to beat him with fistes, and to say vnto him, Prophecie. And the seruants smote him with *their* rods.

66 *And as Peter was beneath in the hall, there came one of the maides of the hie Priest. *Matth.*26 69 *luke*

67 And when shee saw Peter warming *himselfe*, shee looked on him and said, Thou wast also with Iesus of Nazareth. 22.55. *ioh.*18.25

68 But he denied it, saying, I know him not, neither wot I what thou sayest. Then hee went out into the porch, and the cocke crew.

69 *Then a maide saw him againe, and began to say to them that stood by, This is *one* of them. *Matth* 26 71 *luke*

70 But he denied it againe: and anon after, they that stood by, said againe to Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art of Galile and thy speech is like. 22.58.

71 And he began to curse, and sweare, *saying*, I know not this man of whom yee speake.

72 *Then the second time the cocke crew, and Peter remembred the word that Iesus had sayd vnto him, Before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt denie me thrise, and weying that with himselfe, he wept. *Matth.*26 75 *ioh.* 13.38.

CHAP. XV.

1 *Of the things that Christ suffered vnder Pilate.* 11 *Barabbas preferred before Christ.* 15 *Pilate deliuereth Christ to be crucified.* 17 *Hee is crowned with thorne.* 19 *They spit on him, and mocke him.* 21 *Simon of Cyrene carieth Christs crosse.* 27 *Christ is crucified betweene two theeues.* 36 *He is railed at.* 37 *Hee giueth vp the Ghost.* 43 *Ioseph buryeth him.*

AND *anon in the dawning, the hie Priestes held a Councill with the Elders, and the Scribes and the whole Councill, and bound Iesus, and led him away, and delinered him to Pilate. *Mat.*27.1 *luk.*22.66 *ioh.*18.19

2 Then Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he answered, and said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the hie Priests accused him of many things.

4 *Wherfore Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witnesse against thee. *Mat.*27. 12.*luke* 23.3.*ioh.*

5 But Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate marueiled. 18.38.

6 Now at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto them, whomsoener they would desire.

7 Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bound with his fellowes, that had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murther.

8 And the people cried aloude, and began to desire *that he would doe* as he had euer done vnto them.

9 Then Pilate answered them, and said, Wil ye that I let loose vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 For he knew that the hie Priests had deliuered him of enuie.

11 But the hie Priests had moued the people *to desire* that he would rather deliuer Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them, What will ye then that I doe *with him*, whom ye call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said vnto them, But what euill hath hee done? And they cried the more fermently, Crucifie him.

15 So Pilate willing to content the people, loosed them Barabbas, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, that he might be crucified.

16 Then the souldiers led him away into the hall, which is the common hall, and called together the whole band,

17 And clad him with purple, and platted a crowne of thorne, and put it about *his head*.

18 And began to salute him, *saying*, Haile King of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and spat vpon him, and bowed the knees, *and* did him reuerence.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke the purple off him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

Matth.27 32. Luke 23.26. 21 * And they compelled one that passed by, *called* Simon of Cyrene (which came out of the country, and was father of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his crosse.

Matth.27 33. Luke 23.33. Ioh.19.17 22 ♭ And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place of *a dead mans* skull.

23 And they gaue him to drinke wine mingled with myrrhe, but he receiued it not.

Luke 23 34. 24 * And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots for them, what euery man should haue.

25 And it was the third houre when they crucified him.

26 And the title of his cause was written aboue, THE KING OF THE IEWES.

27 They crucified also with him two theeues, the one on the right hand, and the other on his left.

Isa.53.12 28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, * And he was counted among the wicked.

29 And they that went by, rail'ed on him, wagging their heads, *Ioh 2.19.* and saying, * Hey, thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Saue thy selfe, and come downe from the Crosse.

31 Likewise also euen the hie Priests mocking, said among themselues with the Scribes, he saued other men, himselfe he cannot saue.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel now come downe from the crosse, that we may see and beleeue. They also that were crucified with him reuiled him.

33 ¶ Now when the sixt houre was come, darkenesse arose ouer all the land vntil the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loud voice, saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lamma-sabachthani? which is by interpretation, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? *Psal. 22.1. mat. 27. 46.*

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ranne, and filled a * spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let him alone: Let vs see if Elias will come and take him downe. *Psal. 69. 22.*

37 And Iesus cried with a loud voice, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the teppe to the bottome.

39 Now when the Centurion, which stood ouer against him, saw that he thus crying gaue vp the ghost, he sayd, Truely this man was the Sonne of God.

40 ¶ There were also women which beheld afarre off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary (the mother of Iames the lesse, and of Ioses) and Salome,

41 Which also when he was in Galile, * followed him, and ministred vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem. *Luke 8.2.*

42 *And now when the night was come (because in it was the day of the preparation that is before the Sabbath)

43 * Ioseph of Arimathea an honourable counseller, which also looked for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus. *Matth. 27. 57. Luke 23. 50. iohn 19. 38.*

44 And Pilate marueiled, if he were already dead, and called vnto him the Centurion, and asked of him whether he had beene any while dead.

45 And when he knew *the trueth* of the Centurion, he gaue the body to Ioseph:

46 Who bought a linnen cloth, and tooke him downe, & wrapped him in the linen cloth, & laid him in a tombe that was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary Ioses *mother*, beheld where he should be layd.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *Of Christs resurrection.* 9 *He appeareth to Mary Magdalene & others.* 15 *He sendeth his Apostles to preach.* 19 *His ascension.*

*Luk.24.1 *Joh.20.1.* AND * when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of Iames, and Salome, bought sweete ointments that they might come, and anoint him.

2 Therefore early in the morning, the first day of the week they came vnto the sepulchre, when the sunne was now risen.

3 And they said one to another, Who shall roll vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away (for it was a very great one)

*Mat.28.1 *Joh.20.12* 5 * So they went into the sepulchre, and saw a yong man sitting at the right side, clothed in a long white robe: and they were sore troubled.

6 But he said vnto them, Be not so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which hath been crucified: hee is risen, hee is not here: behold the place where they put him.

7 But goe your way, and tell his disciples and Peter, that he *Chap 14. 28. matth.* will goe before you into Galile: there shall ye see him, * as he said vnto you.

26.32. * 8 And they went out quickely, and fled from the sepulchre: for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man: for they were afraid.

9 ¶ And when Iesus was risen againe, early the first day of the *Joh.20.16 duke 8.2.* weeke, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, * out of whome he had cast seuen deuils.

10 And shee went and tolde them that had been with him, which mourned and wept.

11 And when they heard that he was aliue, and had appeared to her, they beleeued it not.

Luke 24. 13,15. 12 ¶ * After that hee appeared vnto two of them in another forme, as they walked and went into the countrey.

13 And they went and told it to the remnant, neither beleeued they them.

Luke 24. 36. John 20.19. Matth.28 19. John 12. 48. Acts 16 18. 14 ¶ * Finally, he appeared vnto the eleuen as they sate together, and reproched them for their vnbeliefe and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeued not them which had seene him, being risen vp againe.

15 And he said vnto them, * Goe yee into all the world, and preach the Gospel to euery creature.

16 He that shall beleeue and be baptized, shal be saued: * but he that will not beleeue shall be damned.

17 And these tokens shall follow them that beleeue, * In my

Name

Name they ſhall caſt out deuils, and * ſhall ſpeake with new tongues, *Mar.* 2.9. *and* 10.46

18 * And ſhall take away ſerpents, and if they ſhall drinke any deadly thing it ſhall not hurt them: * they ſhall lay their hands on the ſicke, and they ſhall recouer. *Act.*28.5 *Act.*28.8

19 * So after the Lord had ſpoken vnto them, he was receiued into heauen, and ſate at the right hand of God. *Luke* 24. 51.

20 And they went foorth, and preached euery where. And the * Lord wrought with them, and confirmed the word with ſignes that followed, AMEN. *Heb.*2.4

¶THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS Chriſt according to Luke.

CHAP. I.

1 *Luke's Preface.* 9 *Zacharias and Eliſabet.* 15 *What an one Iohn ſhould be.* 20 *Zacharias ſtrooken dumbe for his incredulity.* 26 *The Angel ſalueth Mary, and foretelleth Chriſts nativity.* 39 *Mary viſiteth Eliſabet.* 46 *Maries ſong.* 68 *The ſong of Zacharias ſhewing that the promiſed Chriſt is come.* 76 *The office of Iohn.*

FOraſmuch as many haue taken in hand to ſet forth the ſtorie of thoſe things, whereof wee are fully perſwaded,

2 As they haue deliuered them vnto vs which from the beginning ſawe them their ſelues, and were miniſters of the word,

3 It ſeemed good alſo to me (moſt noble Theophilus) aſſoone as I had teached out perfectly all things from the beginning, to write vnto thee thereof from point to point,

4 That thou mighteſt acknowledge the certaintie of thoſe things whereof thou haſt been inſtructed.

5 IN the time of Herod King of Iudea, there was a certaine Prieſt named Zacharias, of the * courſe of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Eliſabet. 1. *Chron.* 24.1.

6 Both were iuſt before God, and walked in all the commandements and ordinances of the Lord, without reproofe.

7 And they had no childe, becauſe that Eliſabet was barren: and both were well ſtriken in age.

8 And it came to paſſe, as he executed the Prieſts office before God, as his courſe came in order,

9 * According to the cuſtome of the Prieſts office, his lot was to burne incenſe, when he went into the Temple of the Lord. *Exo.*30.7

10 And the whole multitude of the people were without
Leuit.16. prayer,* while the incense was burning.
27. 11 Then appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord standing
the right side of the altar of incense.
12 And when Zacharias saw *him*, hee was troubled, and fear
fell vpon him.
13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias: for thy
prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabet shall beare thee a sonne, and
thou shalt call his name Iohn.
14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and many shall re
ioyce at his birth.
15 For he shalbe great in the sight of the Lord, and shal neither
drinke wine, nor strong drinke: and he shalbe filled with the holy
Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.
Mal.4.5 16 * And many of the children of Israel shall he turne to their
Lord God,.
Matth.11 17 *For he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias
14. to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobe-
dient to the wisedom of the iust men, to make ready a people pre-
pared for the Lord.
18 Then Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Whereby shal I know
this? for I am an old man, and my wife is of a great age.
19 And the Angel answered, and said vnto him, I am Gabriel
that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee,
and to shew thee these good tidings.
20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, and not be able to speak,
vntill the day that these things be done, because thou beleeuedst
not my words, which shalbe fulfilled in their season.
21 Now the people waited for Zacharias, and marueiled that
he taried so long in the Temple.
22 And when hee came out, hee could not speake vnto them:
then they perceiued that he had seene a vision in the Temple: for
he made signes vnto them, and remained dumbe.
23 And it came to passe, when the dayes of his office were ful-
filled, that he departed to his owne house.
24 And after those dayes his wife Elizabet conceiued, and hid
her selfe fiue moneths, saying,
25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the dayes wherein hee
looked on *me*, to take from me my rebuke among men,
26 ¶ And in the sixth moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from
God vnto a citie of Galile, named Nazareth.
Mat.1.18 27 * To a virgine affianced to a man whose name *was* Ioseph,
of the house of Dauid, and the virgins name *was* Mary.
28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and said, Haile thou *that*
art

art freely beloued: the Lord *is* with thee: blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and thought what maner of salutation that should be.

30 Then the Angel said vnto her, Feare not, Mary: for thou hast found fauour with God,

31 * For loe, thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe, and beare a Sonne,* and shalt call his Name IESVS. *Isa.7.14. Chap 2.21*

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Sonne of the most High, and the Lord God shall giue vnto him the throne of his father Dauid. *mat.1.21.*

33 * And he shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for euer, and of his kingdome shall be none end. *Dan.7.14. 27.micah*

34 Then said Mary vnto the Angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not man? 4.7.

35 And the Angel answered, and said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the most High shall ouershadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be borne of thee, shall be called the Sonne of God.

36 And behold thy cousin Elisabet, she hath also conceiued a sonne in her old age: and this is her sixt moneth, which was called barren.

37 For with God shall nothing be vnpossible.

38 Then Mary said, Behold the seruant of the Lord: be it vnto me, according to thy word. So the Angel departed from her.

39 ¶ And Mary arose in those daies, and went into the hill *country* with haste to a citie of Iuda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabet.

41 And it came to passe as Elisabet heard the salutation of Mary, the babe sprang in her belly, and Elisabet was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she cried with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, because the fruit of thy wombe is blessed.

43 And whence *commeth* this to mee, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For loe, assoone as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe sprang in my belly for ioy.

45 And blessed *is* she that beleeued: for those things shall be performed, which were told her from the Lord.

46 Then Mary sayd, My soule magnifieth the Lord.

47 And my spirit reioyceth in God my Sauiour.

48 For he hath looked on the poore degree of his seruant: for behold, from henceforth shall all ages call me blessed,

49 Because

49 Because he that is mightie, hath done for me great thi
and holy is his Name.

50 And his mercie is from generation to generation on th
that feare him.

Isa.51.9. 51 * He hath shewed strength with his armes: * he hath scatte
Psa.33.10. the proude in the imagination of their hearts.
Isa.19.15 52 * He hath put downe the mighty from their seates, and
1.Sam.2.6 alted them of low degree.
Psa.34.10. 53 * Hee hath filled the hungrie with good things, and sen
Isa.30.18 way the rich emptie.
and 41.8. 54 * He hath vpholden Israel his seruant to bee mindfull of
and 54.5. mercie.
ver.3 1.3, 55 (*As he hath spoken to our fathers, to wit to Abraham, a
20. his seede) for euer.
Gen. 17. 56 ¶ And Mary abode with her about three monethes: aft
29. and she returned to her owne house.
32. 17. 57 ¶ Now Elisabets time was fulfilled that she should be de
Psal. 132. uered, and she brought foorth a sonne.
11.
58 And her neighbors & cousins heard tell, how the Lord h
Vers. 14. shewed his great mercie vpon her, and they * reioyced wi
her.

59 And it was so that on the eight day, they came to circu
cise the babe, and called him Zacharias, after the name of h
Father.

60 But his mother answered, and said, Not so, but hee shall
called Iohn.

61 And they said vnto her, There is none of thy kinred, that
named with this name.

62 Then they made signes to his Father, how hee would hav
him called.

63 So he asked for writing tables, and wrote, saying, His nam
is Iohn, and they marueiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue,
and he spake and praised God.

was re- 65 Then feare came on all them that dwelt neere vnto them,
stored to and all those words were noysed abroad throughout all the hil
it former *countrey* of Iudea,
state. *u*
read in 66 And all they that heard them, laid *them* vp in their hearts,
some co- saying, What maner child shall this be? and the hand of the Lord
pies. was with him.

67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost,
and prophecied, saying,

Psa.2.30. 68 Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel, because hee hath visited
mat.1.21. and * redeemed his people,

69 *And

69 * And hath raised vp the horne of saluation vnto vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid. *Psal.* 132. 18.

70 * As hee spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which were since the world began, *saying*, *Ier.* 23.6. & 30.10.

71 *That hee would send vs* deliuerance from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate vs,

72 That hee might shew mercie towards our fathers, and remember his holy couenant,

73 * *And* the oath which he sware to our father Abraham. *Gen.* 22.

74 *Which was*, that hee would graunt vnto vs, that we being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies should serue him without feare, *Ier.* 32. 33. *heb.* 8. 13, 17.

75 All the dayes of our life: in * holinesse and righteousnesse before him. 1. *Pet.* 1. 15.

76 And thou babe, shalt be called the Prophet of the most High: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes,

77 *And* to giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes,

78 Through the tender mercie of our God, whereby * the day spring from an high hath visited vs, *Zech.* 3.8. & 6.12. *mala.* 4.2.

79 To giue light to them that sit in darkenesse, and in the shadow of death and to guide our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grewe, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the wildernesse, till the day came that he should shew himselfe vnto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 *Augustus Cesar taxeth all the world.* 7 *Christ is borne.* 13 *The Angels song.* 21 *Christ is circumcised.* 22 *Mary purified.* 28 *Simeon taketh Christ in his armes.* 29 *His song.* 36 *Anna the Prophetesse.* 40 *The childe Christ.* 46 *Jesus disputeth with the Doctours.*

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there came a decree from Augustus Cesar, that all the world should be taxed.

2 (This first taxing was made when Cyrenius was gouernour of Syria)

3 Therefore went all to be taxed, euery man to his owne city.

4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile, out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the citie of * Dauid, which is called Beth-lehem (because he was of the house and linage of Dauid) *Ioh.* 7.42.

5 To be taxed with Mary that was giuen him to wife, which was with child.

6 ¶ And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that shee should be deliuered,

7 And

7 And she brought forth her first begotten Sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laide him in cratch, because there was no roome for them in the Inne.

8 ¶ And there were in the same countrey shepheards, abiding in the field, and keeping watch by night ouer their flocke.

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord shone about them, and they were sore afraid.

10 Then the Angel said vnto them, Be not afraid: for behold, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy, that shalbe to all the people:

11 *That is*, that vnto you is borne this day in the citie of Dauid, a Sauiour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this *shall be* a signe to you, Ye shall find the babe swadled, and laid in a cratch.

13 And straightway there was with the Angel a multitude of heauenly souldiers, praysing God, and saying.

14 Glory *be* to God in the hie *heauens*, and peace in earth, and towards men good will.

15 And it came to passe whē the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, that the shepheards said one to another, Let vs goe then vnto Beth-lehem, and see this thing that is come to passe, which the Lord hath shewed vnto vs.

16 So they came with haste, and found both Mary and Ioseph, and the babe laid in the cratch.

17 And when they had seen it, they published abroad the thing, that was told them of that childe.

18 And all that heard it, wondered at the things which were told them of the shepheards.

19 But Mary kept all those sayings, and pondered *them* in her heart.

20 And the shepheards returned glorifying and praising God, for all that they had heard and seene, as it was spoken vnto them.

Gen. 17. 21 ¶ *And when the eight daies were accomplished, that they
*12. *leuit.* should circumcise the child, his name was then called *IESVS,
12.3. *iohn* which was named of the Angel, before he was conceiued in the
7.22. wombe.

Cha. 1.31. 22 * And when the dayes of her purification after the Law of
mat. 1.21. Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to
Leu. 12.6. present him to the Lord,

Exo. 13.2. 23 (As it is written in the Law of the Lord, * Euery man child
num 8.16 that *first* openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy to the Lord)

Leu. 12.6. 24 And to giue an oblation, * as it is commanded in the Lawe of the Lord, a paire of turtle doues, or two yong pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name

was

was Simeon: this man *was* iuſt, and feared God, and waited for the conſolation of Iſrael, and the holy Ghoſt was vpon him.

26 And it was declared to him from God by the holy Ghoſt, that he ſhould not ſee death, before he had ſeene that Anointed of the Lord.

27 And he came by *the motion* of the Spirit into the Temple, and when the parents brought in the babe Ieſus, to doe for him after the cuſtome of the Law,

28 Then he tooke him in his armes, and praiſed God, and ſaid,

29 Lorde, now letteſt thou thy ſeruant depart in peace, accordig to thy word,

30 For mine eyes haue ſeene thy ſaluation.

31 Which thou haſt prepared before the face of all people,

32 A light to be reuealed to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Iſrael.

33 And Ioſeph and his mother marueiled at thoſe things, which were ſpoken touching him.

34 And Simeon bleſſed them, and ſaid vnto Mary his mother, Behold, this *child* is appointed for the * fall and riſing againe of many in Iſrael, and for a ſigne which ſhalbe ſpoken againſt: *Eſa. 8.14. rom. 9. 33*

35 (Yea and a ſword ſhall pearce through thy ſoule) that the thoughts of many hearts may be opened. *1. pet. 2. 8.*

36 And there was a Propheteſſe, one Anna the daughter, of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aſer, which was of a great age, after ſhee had liued with an husband ſeuen yeeres from her virginitie:

37 And ſhe *was* widow about foureſcore and foure yeeres, and went not out of the Temple, but ſerued *God* with faſtings and prayers, night and day.

38 She then comming at the ſame inſtant vpon them confeſſed likewiſe the Lord, & ſpake of him to all that looked for redemption in Hieruſalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned into Galile to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the child grew, and waxed ſtrong in Spirit, and was filled with wiſedome, and the grace of God was with him.

41 ¶ Now his parents went to Hieruſalem euery yeere, * at the feaſt of the Paſſeouer. *Deu. 16.1*

42 And when he was twelue yeere old, and they were come vp to Hieruſalem, after the cuſtome of the feaſt,

43 And had finiſhed the dayes *thereof*, as they returned, the child Ieſus remained in Hieruſalem, and Ioſeph knew not, not his mother.

44 But they ſuppoſing that he had been in the company, went a dayes

a dayes iourney, and sought him among *their* kinsfolke, and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned backe to Hierusalem and sought him.

46 And it came to passe three dayes after that they found him in the Temple, sitting in the middes of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them question.

47 And all that heard him, were astonied at his vnderstanding, and answeres.

48 So when they saw him, they were amazed, and his mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? beholde, thy Father and I haue sought thee with very heauy hearts.

49 Then sayd he vnto them, How is it that ye sought me? knew ye not that I must go about my Fathers businesse?

50 But they vnderstood not the word that he spake to them.

51 Then he went downe with them, & came to Nazareth, and was subiect to them, and his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisedome, and stature, and in fauour with God and men.

CHAP. III.

4 Iohn exhorteth to repentance. 15 His testimonie of Christ. 20 Herode putteth him in prison. 21 Christ is baptized. 23 His pedegree.

NOw in the fifteenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galile, & his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, & Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

Acts 4.6. 2 (*When Annas & Caiaphas were the hie Priests) the word of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias in the wildernes.

Mat. 3.2. mar. 1.4. 3 * And he came into all the coasts about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of sinnes.

Isa. 40. 3. Iohn 1.23. 4 As it is written in the booke of the sayings of Esaias the Prophet, which saith, *The voice of him that crieth in the wildernesse *is*, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his paths straight.

5 Euery valley shall be filled, and euery mountaine and hill shall be brought low, and crooked things shall be made straight, and the rough wayes *shall be made* smooth.

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God.

Matt. 3.7. 7 Then said he to the people that were come out to be baptized of him, O *generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy amendment of life, and begin

begin not to say with your selues, Wee haue Abraham to *our* Fa-
ther: for I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise
vp children vnto Abraham.

9 Now also is the axe laid vnto the roote of the trees, there-
fore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, shalbe hewen
downe, and cast into the fire.

10 ¶ Then the people asked him, saying, What shall wee doe
then?

11 And he answered and said vnto them, * Hee that hath two *Iam.2.15*
coates, let him part with him that hath none: and hee that hath *1 iohn 3.*
meate, let him doe likewise. *17.*

12 Then came there Publicanes also to be baptized, and sayd
vnto him, Master, What shall we doe?

13 And hee said vnto them, Require no more then that which
is appointed vnto you.

14 The souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what
shall we doe? And he said vnto them, Doe violence to no man,
neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 As the people waited, and all men mused in their hearts
of Iohn, if he were not that Christ,

16 Iohn answered, and said to them all, *Indeed I baptize you *Mat.3.11*
with water, but one stronger then I commeth, whose shoes latchet *mar.* 1. 8.
I am not worthy to vnloose: hee will baptize you with the holy *ioh.* 1.16.
Ghost, and with fire. *acts* 1.5.

17 Whose fanne *is* in his hand, and hee will make cleane his *and* 8.4.
floore, and will gather the wheate into his garner, but the chaffe *and* 11.
will he burne vp with fire that neuer shall be quenched. *16. and*

18 Thus then exhorting with many other things, he preached *19.4.*
vnto the people.

19 * But when Herod the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for *Mat.* 14.3
Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which He- *mar.6.* 17
rod had done,

20 He added yet this aboue all that he shut vp Iohn in prison.

21 *Now it came to passe as all the people were baptized, and *Mar.3.13*
that Iesus was baptized and did pray: that the heauen was o- *mark.* 1.9
pened: *ioh.* 1. 32.

22 And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodily shape like a
doue vpon him, and there was a voice from heauen, saying, Thou
art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am well pleased.

23 ¶ And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirtie yeere of
age, being as men supposed the sonne of Ioseph, *which was the*
sonne of Eli,

24 *The sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui, *the sonne* of Melchi,
the sonne of Ianna, *the sonne* of Ioseph,

25 *The*

25 *The sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Amos, *the sonne* of Na-
hum, *the sonne* of Esli, *the sonne* of Nagge,
26 *The sonne* of Maath, *the sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Se-
mei, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Iuda,
27 *The sonne* of Ioanna, *the sonne* of Rhesa, *the sonne* of Zorobo-
bel, *the sonne* of Salathiel, *the sonne* of Neri.
28 *The sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Addi, *the sonne* of Cosam,
the sonne of Elmodam, *the sonne* of Er,
29 *The sonne* of Iose, *the sonne* of Eliezer, *the sonne* of Iorim,
the sonne of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui,
30 *The sonne* of Simeon, *the sonne* of Iuda, *the sonne* of Ioseph,
the sonne of Ionan, *the sonne* of Eliacim,
31 *The sonne* of Melea, *the sonne* of Mainan, *the sonne* of Mat-
tatha, *the sonne* of Nathan, *the sonne* of Dauid,
42 *The sonne* of Ieſſe, *the sonne* of Obed, *the sonne* of Booz, *the*
sonne of Salmon, *the sonne* of Naasson,
33 *The sonne* of Aminadab, *the sonne* of Aram, *the sonne* of Es-
rom, *the sonne* of Phares, *the sonne* of Iuda,
34 *The sonne* of Iaakob, *the sonne* of Isaac, *the sonne* of Abra-
ham, *the sonne* of Thara, *the sonne* of Nachor,
35 *The sonne* of Saruch, *the sonne* of Ragau, *the sonne* of Phalec,
the sonne of Eber, *the sonne* of Sala.
36 *The sonne* of Cainan, *the sonne* of Arphaxad, *the sonne* of Sem,
the sonne of Noe, *the sonne* of Lamech,
37 *The sonne* of Mathusala, *the sonne* of Enoch, *the sonne* of Ia-
red, *the sonne* of Maleleel, *the sonne* of Cainan.
38 *The sonne* of Enos, *the sonne* of Seth, *the sonne* of Adam, *the*
sonne of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Of Christs temptation and fasting.* 16 *He teacheth in Nazareth*
to the great admiration of all. 24 *A Prophet that teacheth in his*
owne country is contemned. 33 *One possessed of the deuill is cu-*
red. 38 *Peters mother in lawe healed,* 40 *And diuers sicke*
persons are restored to health. 41 *The deuils acknowledge*
Christ.

AND Iesus full of the holy Ghost returned from Iordan, and
was led by that Spirit into the wildernesse,
Matt.4.1. mar.1.12 2 * And was there fourty dayes tempted of the deuill, and in
those dayes he did eate nothing: but when they were ended, hee
afterward was hungry.
3 Then the deuill said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God,
command this stone that it be made bread.
Deut.8.3. mat.4.4. 4 But Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, * That man
shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery word of God.

5 Then

5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into an high mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, in the twinckling of an eye.

6 And the deuil sayde vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glory of those *kingdomes*: for that is deliuered to me: and to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, they shalbe all thine.

8 But Iesus answered him, and said, Hence from me, Satan: for it is written, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him alone thou shalt serue. *Deu.6.13 & 10.20.*

9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence.

10 For it is written, *That he wil giue his Angels charge ouer thee to keepe thee: *Psal.91. 12.*

11 And with *their* handes they shall lift thee vp, lest at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone.

12 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, It is said, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deu.6.16*

13 And when the deuill had ended all the tentation, he departed from him for a little season.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned by the power of the spirit into Galile: and there went a fame of him throughout all the region round about.

15 For hee taught in their Synagogues, and was honoured of all men.

16 *And he came to Nazareth where he had bene brought vp, and (as his custome was) went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood vp to read. *Mat.13. 54. marke 6.1. iohn 4.43.*

17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of the Prophet Esaias: and when hee had opened the booke, hee found the place, where it was written,

18 *The Spirit of the Lord *is* vpon me, because he hath anointed me, that I should preach the Gospel to the poore: he hath sent mee that I should heale the broken hearted, that I should preach deliuerance to the captiues, and recouering of sight to the blind, that I should set at libertie them that are bruised, *Isa 61.1.*

19 And that I should preach the acceptable yeere of the Lord.

20 And he closed the booke, and gaue it againe to the minister, and sate downe, and the eyes of all that were in the Synagogue, were fastened on him.

21 Then he began to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondered at the gratious

words, which proceeded out of his mouth, and said, Is not this Iosephs sonne?

23 Then he said vnto them, Ye will surely say vnto me this Parable, Physician, heale thy selfe: whatsoeuer we haue heard done in Capernaum, doe it here likewise in thine owne country.

Ioh.4.44. 24 And he said, Verely I say vnto you, * No Prophet is accepted in his owne country.

25 But I tell you of a truth, many widowes were in Israel in the dayes of * Elias, when heauen was shut three yeeres and sixe moneths, when great famine was throughout all the land,

2. Kings 17.9. Luk. 5.17.

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue into Sarepta *citie of* Sidon, vnto a certaine widow.

2. Kings 5.14.

27 And many lepers were in Israel, in the time of * Eliseus the Prophet: yet none of them was made cleane, saue Naaman the Syrian.

28 Then all *that were* in the Synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, and ledde him vnto the edge of the hill, whereon their citie was built, to cast him downe headlong.

30 But he passed thorow the mids of them, and went his way,

Mat.4.13 Mar.1.21 31 ¶ * And came downe vnto Capernaum a citie of Galile, and there taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

Mat.7.29 Mar.1.22 32 * And they were astonied at his doctrine: for his word was with authoritie.

Mar.1.23 33 * And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, which cryed with a loude voice,

34 Saying, Oh, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe who thou art, *euen* the holy One of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. Then the deuill throwing him in the middes *of them*, came out of him, and hurt him nothing at all.

36 So feare came on them all, & they spake among themselues, saying, What thing is this? for with authoritie and power hee commandeth the foule spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him spread abroad throughout all the places of the country round about.

Mat.8.14 Mar.1.30 38 ¶ * And hee rose vp, and came out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons house. And Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, and they required him for her.

39 Then he stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and it left her, and immediatly she arose, and ministred vnto them.

40 Now at the Sunne setting, all they that had sicke *folkes* of diuers

diuers diseases, brought them vnto him, and he laid his hands on euery one of them, and healed them.

41 * And deuils also came out of many, crying, and saying: Thou art that Christ that Sonne of God: but he rebuked them, and suffered them not to say, that they knew him to be that Christ. *Mar.1.34*

42 And when it was day, he departed and went foorth into a desert place, and the people sought him and came to him, and kept him that he should not depart from them.

43 But he said vnto them, Surely I must also preach the kingdome of God to other cities: for therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ teacheth out of the shippe. 6 Of the draught of fish. 12 The Leper. 16 Christ prayeth in the desert. 18 One sicke of the palsie. 27 Leui the Publicane. 34 The fastings and afflictions of the Apostles after Christs ascension. 36. 37. 38 Faint hearted and weake disciples are likened to olde bottles and worne garments.

THen * it came to passe, as the people pressed vpon him to heare the word of God, that hee stood by the lake of Genesaret, *Mat.4.18 mar.1.16*

2 And saw two ships stand by the lake side, but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets

3 And he entred into one of the ships, which was Simons, and required him that he would thrust off a little from the land: and he sate downe, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Nowe when hee had left speaking, hee sayd vnto Simon, Launch out into the deepe, and let downe your nets to make a draught.

5 Then Simon answered, and said vnto him, Master, we haue trauailed sore all night and haue taken nothing: neuertheless at thy word I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had so done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, so that their net brake.

7 And they beckened to their partners which were in the other ship that they should come and help them, who came then, and filled both the ships, that they did sinke.

8 Now when Simon Peter saw it, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying, Lord, goe from me: for I am a sinfull man.

9 For hee was vtterly astonished, and all that were with him, for the draught of fishes which they tooke.

10 And so was also Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus said vnto Simon, Feare not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought the ships to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

Matt. 8. 2. *mar.* 1. 40 12 ¶ * Now it came to passe, as he was in a certaine citie, behold, *there was* a man full of leprosie, and when he saw Iesus, hee fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 So hee stretched foorth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he commanded him that he should tell it no man: but go *saith he*, and shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing as * Moses hath commanded, for a witnesse vnto them.

Leuit. 14. 4. 15 But so much more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed of him of their infirmities.

16 But he kept himselfe apart in the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 ¶ And it came to passe on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that the Pharises and doctors of the Law sate by, which were come out of euery towne of Galile, and Iudea, and Hierusalem, and the power of the Lord was *in him* to heale them.

Mat. 9 2. *mar.* 2, 3. 18 * Then behold, men brought a man lying in a bed, which was taken with a palsie, and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in because of the preasse, they went vp on the house, and let him downe through the tyling, bed and all, in the middes before Iesus.

20 And when hee saw their faith, he said vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

21 Then the Scribes and the Pharises began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies: who can forgiue sinnes, but God onely?

22 But when Iesus perceiued their reasoning, he answered, and said vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Rise and walke?

24 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath authoritie to forgiue sinnes in earth, (he said vnto the sicke of the palsie) I say to thee, Arise: take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house.

25 And immediatly hee rose vp before them, and tooke vp *his couche* whereon hee lay, and departed to his owne house, praising God.

26 And they were all amazed, and praised God and were filled with feare, saying, Doubtlesse we haue seene strange things to day.

27 ¶ * And

27 ¶ *And after that he went foorth, and saw a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the receit of custome, and said vnto him, Follow me. *Mat. 9.9. mar.2.14*

28 And he left all, rose vp, and followed him.

29 Then Leui made him a great feast in his owne house, where there was a great company of Publicanes, and of other that sate at table with them.

30 But they that were Scribes and Pharises among them, murmured against his disciples, saying, Why eate ye and drinke yee with Publicanes and sinners?

31 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, They that are whole neede not the Physician, but they that are sicke.

32 * I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. *1. Tim.1.*

33 ¶ *Then they said vnto him, Why do the disciples of Iohn fast often, and pray, and the *disciples* of the Pharises also, but thine eate and drinke? *Mat 9 14 mar.2.18*

34 And he said vnto them Can ye make the children of the wedding chamber to fast, as long as the bridegrome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, euen when the bridegrome shall be taken away from them: then shall they fast in those dayes.

36 Againe he spake also vnto them a parable. No man putteth a piece of a new garment into an olde vesture: for then the new rendeth it, and the piece *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the olde.

37 Also no man powreth new wine into olde vessels: for then the new wine will breake the vessels, and it wil runne out, and the vessels will perish.

38 But new wine must be powred into new vessels: so both are preserued.

39 Also no man that drinketh olde wine, straightway desireth new: for he sayth, The olde is more profitable.

CHAP. VI.

1 The disciples pull the eares of corne on the Sabbath. 6 Of him that had a withered hand. 13 The election of the Apostles. 20 The blessings and curses. 27 Wee must loue our enemies. 46 With what fruit the word of God is to be heard.

AND * it came to passe on a second solemne Sabbath, that hee went through the corne fields, and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, and rubbe them in *their* hands. *Mat. 12.1 mar.2.23*

2 And certaine of the Pharises said vnto them, Why doe yee that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes?

3 Then Iesus answered them, and said, * Haue yee not read this, that Dauid did when hee himselfe was an hungred, and they which were with him, *1. Sam. 21.6.*

4 How he went into the house of God, and tooke, and ate the shewbread, and gaue also to them which were with him, which
*Exod.29. was not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priests onely?
33.leuit. 5 And hee said vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord also of
8.31.and the Sabbath day.
24 9. 6 ¶ * It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that hee en-
Matt.12. tred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man, whose
19 marke right hand was dried vp.
3.1. 7 And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether hee would heale on the Sabbath day, that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Arise and stand vp in the mids. And he arose, and stood vp.

9 Then said Iesus vnto them. I will aske you a question, Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy?

10 And hee beheld them all in compasse, and said vnto the man, Stretch foorth thine hand. And he did so, and his hand was restored againe, as whole as the other.

11 Then they were filled full of madnesse, and communed one with another what they might doe to Iesus.

12 ¶ And it came to passe in those dayes, that hee went into a mountaine to pray, and spent the night in prayer to God.
Chap.9.1 13 And when it was day, * he called his disciples, and of them
mat.10.1 he chose twelue, which also he called Apostles.
mar.3.13 14 (Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his bro-
and 6.7. ther, Iames and Iohn, Philip, and Bartlemew:

15 Matthew and Thomas: Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Simon called Zealous,

16 Iudas Iames *brother*, and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traitour)

17 Then hee came downe with them, and stood in a plaine place, with the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Iudea, and Hierusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyrus and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases:

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.
Mat.5.3. 20 ¶ * And hee lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, and sayd, Blessed *be* ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God.
Isa 65.13 21 * Blessed *are* ye that hunger now; for ye shall be satisfied.

* Blessed

*Blessed *are* ye that weepe now: for ye shall laugh. *Isa.61.3.*
22 *Blessed are ye when men hate you, and when they separate *Mat.5.11.*
you, and reuile *you*, and put out your name as euill, for the Sonne
of mans sake.
23 Reioyce yee in that day, and be glad: for behold, your re-
ward *is* great in heauen: for after this maner their fathers did to
the Prophets.
24 *But woe *be* to you *that are* rich: for ye haue receiued your *Amos*
consolation. *6.1.*
25 *Woe *be* to you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe *be* *Isa.65.13*
to you *that* now Laugh: for ye shall waile and weepe.
26 Woe *be* to you when all men speake well of you: for so
did their fathers to the false prophets.
27 ¶ *But I say vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies: *Mat.5.44*
doe well to them which hate you.
28 Blesse them that curse you, and pray for them which hurt
you.
29 *And vnto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheeke, offer *Mat.5.39*
also the other: * and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not *1.Cor.6.7*
to take thy coat also.
30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee: and of him that ta-
keth away the *things that be* thine, aske them not againe.
31 *And as ye would that men should doe to you, so doe yee *Mat.7.12*
to them likewise.
32 *For if ye loue them which loue you, what thanke shall ye *Mat.5.46*
haue? for euen the sinners loue those that loue them.
33 And if ye doe good for them which doe good for you, what
thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners doe the same.
34 *And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receiue, what *Mat.5.42*
thanke shall yee haue? for euen the sinners lend to sinners, to re- *deut.18.5*
ceiue the like
35 Wherefore loue ye your enemies and doe good, and lend,
looking for nothing againe, and your reward shall be great, and
ye shalbe the children * of the most High: for hee is kinde vnto *Mat.5.45*
the vnkind, and to the euill.
36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.
37 *Iudge not, and yee shall not be iudged: condemne not, *Mat.7.1.*
and ye shall not be condemned: forgiue, and ye shalbe forgiuen.
38 Giue, and it shall be giuen vnto you: *a good measure, *Mat.7.2*
prest downe, shaken together, and running ouer shall men giue *mar 4.24*
into your bosome: for with what measure ye mete, with the same
shall men mete to you againe.
39 And he spake a parable vnto them, * Can the blinde leade *Matt.15.*
the blinde? shall they not both fall into the ditch? *14.*

Mat.10. 24.*ioh* 13.16.& 15.20. 40 * The disciple is not aboue his master: but whosoeuer *be* a perfect disciple, shalbe as his master.

41 ¶ * And why seest thou a mote in thy brothers eye, a considerest not the beame, that is in thine owne eye?

Mat.7.3. 42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou seest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite, cast out the beam out of thine owne eye first, and then shalt thou see perfectly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

Mat.7.17 43 ¶ * For it is not a good tree that bringeth forth euill fruit neither an euill tree that bringeth foorth good fruit

Mat.12. 33. 44 * For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruit: * for neither of thornes gather men figs, nor of bushes gather they grapes.

Mat.7.16 45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth foorth good, and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart bringeth foorth euill. for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

Mat.7.21 *rom.2.13.* *iam.1.21.* 46 ¶ * But why call ye me Lord, Lord, and doe not the thing that I speake?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, and heareth my wordes, and doeth the same, I will shew you to whom he is like:

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and laid the foundation on a rocke: and when the waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, and could not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth & doeth not, is like a man that built an house vpon the earth without foundation, against which the flood did beat, and it fell by and by: & the fall of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 Of the Centurions seruant. 9 The Centurions faith. 11 The widowes sonne raised from death at Nain. 19 Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ. 33 His peculiar Rule of liuing. 37 The sinnefull woman washeth Iesus feete.

Mat.8.5. WHen * hee had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruant was sicke and readie to die, which was deare vnto him.

3 And when hee heard of Iesus, hee sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that he would come, and heale his seruant.

4 So they came to Iesus, and besought him instantly, saying, that he was worthy that he should doe this for him:

5 For he loueth, *sayd they*, our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then

6 Then Iesus went with them: but when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe:

7 Wherefore I thought not my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say the word, and my seruant shalbe whole:

8 For I likewise am a man set vnder authoritie, and haue vnder me souldiers, and I say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he commeth, and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, hee marueiled at him, and turned him, and said to the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10 And when they that were sent, turned backe to the house, they found the seruant that was sicke, whole.

11 And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and a great multitude.

12 Now when he came neere to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man caried out, *who was* the onely begotten sonne of his mother, which was a widow, and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And hee went and touched the coffin (and they that bare him, stood still) and he said, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake, and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 Then there came a feare on them all, and they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet is risen among vs, and God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went foorth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things.

19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or shall we wait for another?

20 And when the men were come vnto him, they said, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we wait for another?

21 And at that time he cured many of their sicknesses & plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many blind men he gaue sight freely.

22 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Goe your wayes and shew Iohn what things yee haue seene and heard: that the blinde

blinde see, the halt goe, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, *and* the poore receiue the Gospel.

23 And blessed is he, that shall not be offended in me.

24 And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to speake vnto the people of Iohn. What went yee out into the wilderneſſe to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

25 But what went yee out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and liue delicately, are in Kings courts.

26 But what went ye forth to see? A Prophet? yea, I say to you, and greater then a Prophet.

Mat.3.1. 27 This is he of whom it is written, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuertheleſſe, hee that is the least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes iuſtified God, being baptized with the baptiſme of Iohn.

30 But the Phariſes and the expounders of the Lawe deſpiſed the counſell of God againſt themſelues, and were not baptized of him.

Mat.11. 16. 31 * And the Lord ſaid, Whereunto ſhall I liken the men of this generation? and what *thing* are they like vnto?

32 They are like vnto little children ſitting in the market place, and crying one to another, and ſaying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced, wee haue mourned to you, and yee haue not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptiſt came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine: and ye ſay, He hath the deuill.

34 The Sonne of man is come, and eateth and drinketh: and ye ſay, Behold a man *which is* a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friend of Publicanes and ſinners:

35 But Wiſedome is iuſtified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Phariſes deſired him that he would eate with him: and he went into the Phariſes houſe, and ſate downe at table.

37 And behold, a woman in the citie which was a ſinner, when ſhe knew that Ieſus ſate at table in the Phariſes houſe, ſhe brought a box of ointment.

Mar.15. 42.iohn 20.11. 38 * And ſhee ſtood at his feete behind him weeping, and began to waſh his feete with teares, and did wipe them with the haires of her head, and kiſſed his feete, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Phariſe which bade him, ſawe it, hee ſpake within

w'thin himselfe, saying, If this man were a Prophet, he would surely haue knowen who, and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answered and said vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he said, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine lender which had two debters: the one ought fiue hundreth pence, and the other fiftie:

42 When they had nothing to pay, hee forgaue them both: Which of them therefore, tell *me*, will loue him most?

43 Simon answered, and said, I suppose that he, to whom hee forgaue most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast truely iudged.

44 Then he turned to the woman, and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, and thou gauest me no water to my feete, but shee hath washed my feete with teares, and wiped them with the haires of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but shee, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feete.

46 Mine head with oyle thou diddest not anoynt: but shee hath anoynted my feete with oyntment

47 Wherfore I say vnto thee, Many sinnes are forgiuen her: for she loued much. To whom a little is forgiuen, he doth loue a little.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

49 And they that sate at table with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that euen forgiueth sinnes?

50 And hee said to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

2 *Women that ministred vnto Christ of their substance.* 4 *The parable of the sower.* 16 *The candle.* 19 *Christs mother and brethren.* 22 *Hee rebuketh the windes.* 26 *Of Legion:* 37 *The Gadarenes reiect Christ.* 41 *Iairus daughter healed.* 43 *The woman deliuered from the issue of blood.* 52 *Weeping for the dead.*

AND it came to passe afterward, that he himselfe went thorow euery city and towne, preaching and publishing the kingdom of God, and the twelue *were* with him,

2 And certaine women which were healed of euil spirits and infirmities, *as* * Mary which was called Magdalene, out of whom went seuen deuils. *Mar.16.9*

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many other which ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 *Nowe when much people were gathered together and were come vnto him out of all cities, he spake by a parable. *Mat.13.3* *mar.4.14*

5 A sower went out to sow his seed, and as he sowed, some fell by the

by the way side, and it was troden vnder feete, and the foules of the heauen denoured it vp.

6 And some fell on the stones, and when it was sprung vp, it withered away, because it lacked moisteneſſe.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choked it.

8 And some fell on good ground, & sprang vp and bare fruit an hundreth fold. And as he said these things, hee cryed, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 Then his disciples asked him, demanding what parable this was.

10 And he said, Vnto you it is giuen to know the secrets of the
Isa. 6. 9. kingdome of God, but to other in parables, that when * they see
mat. 13. 14 they should not see, & whē they heare, they should not vnderstād
mar. 4. 12 11 *The parable is this, The seede is the word of God.
joh 12. 40 12 And they that are beside the way, are they that heare: af-
act. 28. 26 terward commeth the deuill, and taketh away the word out of
rom. 11. 8 their hearts, lest they should beleeue, and be saued.
Matt. 13. 13 But they that are on the stones, *are they* which when they
18. mar. haue heard, receiue the word with ioy: but they haue no roote
4. 15. which for a while beleeue, but in the time of tentation goe away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares and with riches, and voluptuous liuing, and bring forth no fruit.

15 But that *which fell in* good ground, are they which with an honest and good heart heare the word, and keepe it, and bring foorth fruit with patience.

Cha. 11. 33 16 ¶ *No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it vn-
mat. 5. 15. der a vessell, neither putteth it vnder the bed, but setteth it on a
mar. 4. 21 candelsticke, that they that enter in may see the light.
Cha. 12. 2. 17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not bee euident: neither
mat 10. 26 any thing hid, that shall not be knowen, and come to light.
mar. 4. 22 18 Take heede therefore how ye heare: for * whosoeuer hath,
Cha. 19. 26 to him shalbe giuen: and whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be
matth. 13. taken euen that which it seemeth that he hath.
12. and 19 ¶ *Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and
25. 29. could not come neere to him for the preasse.
mar. 4. 25 20 And it was tolde him *by certaine*, which said, Thy mother
Matt. 12. and thy brethren stand without, and would see thee.
46. mar. 21 But hee answered, and said vnto them, My mother, and my
3. 32. brethren are these which heare the word of God, and doe it.
Mat. 8. 33 22 ¶ *And it came to passe on a certaine day, that he went into
mar. 4. 36 a ship with his disciples, and hee said vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake. And they launched foorth.

23 And

23 And as they sailed, he fell asleepe, and there came downe a
stormé of winde on the lake and they were filled with water, and
were in ieopardie.

25 Then they went to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Mas-
ter, we perish. And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and the waues
of water: and they ceased, and it was calme.

25 Then he said vnto them, Where is your faith? and they fea-
red and wondered among themselues, saying, Who is this that
commandeth both the winds and water, and they obey him!

26 ¶ * So they sailed vnto the region of the Gadarenes, which *Mat.8.28*
is ouer against Galile. *mar.5.1.*

27 And as he went out to land, there met him a certaine man
out of the citie, which had deuils long time, and he ware no gar-
ment, neither abode in house, but in the graues.

28 And when he saw Iesus, he cryed out, and fell downe before
him, and with a loud voice sayd, What haue I to doe with thee,
Iesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment
me not:

29 For hee commaunded the foule spirit to come out of the man:
(for oft times he had caught him: therefore he was bound with
chaines and kept in fetters but he brake the bāds, and was caried
of the deuill into wildernesses.)

30 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? and hee
said Legion, because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that hee would not commaunde
them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was there by an herde of many swine, feeding on
an hill: and the *deuils* besought him, that he would suffer them to
enter into them. So he suffered them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the
swine: and the herd was caried with violence from a steepe down
place into the lake and was choked.

34 When the herdmen saw what was done, they fled, & when
they were departed, they told it in the citie, and in the countrey.

35 Then they came out to see what was done, and came to
Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were depar-
ted, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed, and in his right minde,
and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what meanes he that
was possessed with the deuill, was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gada-
rens, besought him that he would depart from them: for they
were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ship, and re-
turned.

38 Then

38 Then ỹ man, out of whō ỹ deuils were departed, besought him that he might be with him, but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne into thine owne house, and shew what great things God hath done to thee. So he went his way, & preached throughout all the citie, what great things Iesus had done vnto him.

40 ¶ And it came to passe when Iesus was come againe, that the people receiued him: for they all waited for him.

Mat. 9.18 Mar. 5.22

41 ¶ And behold, there came a man named Iairus, and he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fell downe at Iesus feete, and besought him that he would come into his house.

42 For he had but a daughter only, about twelue yeres of age, and she lay a dying, (and as he went the people thronged him.

43 And a woman hauing an issue of blood, twelue yeres long, which had spent all her substance vpon Physicians, and could not be healed of any:

44 When she came behind *him*, she touched the hemme of his garment, and immediatly her issue of blood stanched.

45 Then Iesus said, Who is it that hath touched mee? When euery mā denied, Peter said, and they that were with him, Master, the multitude thrust thee, and tread on thee, and saiest thou, Who hath touched me?

46 And Iesus said, Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman saw that shee was not hid, shee came trembling and fell downe before him, and told him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediatly.

48 And he said vnto her, Daughter, bee of good comfort: thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace.)

49 While he yet spake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues house, which said to him, Thy daughter is dead: disease not the Master.

50 When Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not: beleeue onely, and she shalbe saued.

51 And when hee went into the house, hee suffered no man to goe in with him, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and mother of the maid.

52 And all wept and sorowed for her: but he said, Weepe not: for she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laugh him to scorne knowing that she was dead.

54 So hee thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and cryed, saying, Maide, arise.

55 And her spirit came againe, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to giue her meate.

56 Then

56 Then her parents were astonied: but he commanded them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 *The Apostles are sent to preach.* 7 *and* 19 *The common people's opinion of Christ.* 12 *O the five loaues and two fishes.* 20 *The Apostles confession.* 24 *To lose the life.* 35 *Wee must heare Christ.* 37 *The possessed of a spirit.* 46 *Strife among the Apostles for the Primacie.* 49 *One casting out deuils in Christs Name.* 52 *The Samaritanes will not receiue Christ.* 55 *Reuenge forbidden.* 57 59. 61 *Of three that would follow Christ, but on diuers conditions.*

THen * called he his twelue disciples together, and gaue them power and authority ouer all deuils, and to heale diseases. *Mat.10.1 mar.3.13 and 6.7.*

2 * And he sent them foorth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the sicke. *Mat.10.7*

3 And he said to them, * Take nothing to your iourney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, nor siluer, neither haue two coates apiece. *Mat.10.9 mar. 6. 8.*

4 And what soeuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And how many soeuer will not receiue you, when yee goe out of that city, * shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimonie against them. *Chap.10. 11. matt. 10. 14. mar.6.11*

6 And they went out, and went thorow euery towne preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where.

7 ¶ * Now Herod the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he doubted, because that it was said of some, that Iohn was risen againe from the dead: *act.13.51 Mat.14.1 mar.6.14*

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the old Prophets was risen againe.

9 Then Herod said, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is this of whom I heare such things? and he desired to see him.

10 ¶ * And when the Apostles returned, they tolde him what great things they had done. * Then hee tooke them to him, and went aside into a solitary place, *neere* to the city called Bethsaida. *Mar.6.30 Matt. 14. 13. mar.*

11 But when the people knew it, they followed him: and he receiued them, and spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had needs to be healed. *6 32.*

12 * And when the day began to weare away, the twelue came, and said vnto him. Send the people away that they may goe into the townes and villages round about, and lodge, and get meate: for we are here in a desert place. *Mat. 14. 15 mar. 6 35. iohn 6.5.*

13 But he said vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they said,

We

We haue no more but fiue loaues & two fishes, except we should goe and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about fiue thousand men. Then he said to his disciples, Cause them to sit downe by fifties in a companie.

15 And they did so, and caused all to sit downe.

16 Then hee tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and blessed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples, to set before the people.

17 So they did all eat, & were satisfied: and there was taken vp of that remained to them, twelue baskets full of broken meat.

Mat.16. 13.mar. 8.27. 18 ¶* And it came to passe as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

Mat.17. 22.mar. 8.31. 19 They answered and said, Iohn Baptist: and others say, Elias: and some say, that one of the old Prophets is risen againe.

20 And he said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answered and said, That Christ of God.

Chap. 14. 27.mat. 10.38. 21 And he warned and commanded them, that they should tell that to no man,

& 16.14. mar.8.34 22 Saying, *The Sonne of man must suffer many things and be reprooued of the Elders and of the high Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine, and the third day rise againe.

Chap. 17. 33.mat. 10.39.& 16.25. Ioh.12.25 Mat.16. 26.mar. 8.36. 23 ¶* And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him denie himselfe, & take vp his crosse daily, and follow me.

24 * For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake, the same shall saue it.

25 * For what aduantageth it a man, if hee winne the whole world, and destroy himselfe, or lose himselfe?

26 * For whosoeuer shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his glory, and *in the glory* of the Father, and of the holy Angels.

Cha.12.9. mat. 10. 33.mark. 8.38. 27 * And I tell you of a suretie, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God.

2. tim.2.12. Mat.16. 28.mar. 9.1. 28 * And it came to passe about an eight dayes after those words that he tooke Peter and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray.

Mat 17.2 mar.9.2. 29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, and his garment *was* white and glistered.

30 And behold, two men talked with him, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Which appeared in glory and told of his departing, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heauie with sleepe,

sleepe, and when they awoke, they saw his glory, and the two men standing with him.

33 And it came to passe as they departed from him, Peter said vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to bee here: let vs therefore make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias, and wist not what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, & ouershadowed them, and they feared when they were entring into the cloud.

35 * And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloued Sonne, heare him. *2.Pet.1. 17.*

36 And when the voice was past, Iesus was found alone, and they kept it close, and tolde no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.

37 ¶ And it came to passe on the next day, as they came downe from the mountaine, much people met him.

38 * And behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, behold my sonne: for he is all that I haue. *Mat.17. 14.mar. 9.17.*

39 And loe a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, and hee teareth him, that hee foameth, & hardly departeth from him, when he hath bruised him.

40 Now I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they could not.

41 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse and crooked, how long now shall I be with you and suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 And whiles hee was yet comming, the deuill rent him, and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, and healed the child, and deliuered him to his Father.

43 ¶ And they were all amased at the mighty power of God: and while they all wondred at all things, which Iesus did, he said vnto his disciples,

44 Marke these words diligently: * for it shall come to passe, that the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men. *Mat. 17. 22.mar. 9.31.*

45 But they vnderstoode not that word: for it was hid from them, so that they could not perceiue it: and they feared to aske him of that word.

46 ¶ * Then there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be the greatest. *Mat.18.1 mar.9.35*

47 When Iesus saw the thoughts of their hearts, hee tooke a little child, and set him by him,

48 And said vnto them, Whosoeuer receiueth this little child in my name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shall receiue me, receiueth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, he shall be great.

Mar.9.38 49 ¶* And Iohn answered, and said, Master, we saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because he followeth thee not with vs.

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Forbid ye *him* not: for hee that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 ¶And it came to passe, when the dayes were accomplished, that he should be receiued vp, he setled himselfe fully to goe to Hierusalem,

52 And sent messengers before him: and they went and entred into a towne of the Samaritanes, to prepare him *lodging*.

53 But they would not receiue him, because his behauiour was as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames and Iohn saw it, they said, Lord, wilt thou that wee command, that fire come downe from
2.King.1. heauen and consume them, euen as * Elias did?
Ezo,12,13 55 But Iesus turned about, and rebuked them, and said, Yee know not of what spirit ye are.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. Then they went to another towne.

Mat.8.19 57 ¶And it came to passe that as they went in the way, * a certaine man said vnto him, I will follow thee, Lord, whithersoeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birds of the heauen nests, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay his head.

59 But hee said vnto another, Follow me. And the same said, Lord, suffer me first to goe and bury my father.

60 And Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but goe thou, and preach the kingdome of God.

61 Then another said, I will follow thee, Lord: but let me first goe bid them farewell, which are at mine house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man that putteth his hand to the plough, and looketh backe, is apt to the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

1 *The seuentie disciples.* 10 *The vnthankfull cities charged with impietie.* 17 *The disciples returning home, are warned to be humble.* 30 *Who is our neighbour.* 38 *Of Martha and her sister Marie.*

Mat.10.1 AFter *these things the Lord appointed other seuenty also, and sent them two and two before him into euery city and place, whither he himselfe should come.

Mat.9.37 2 And hee said vnto them, * The harueſt *is* great, but the labourers *are* few: pray therefore the Lord of the harueſt to send foorth labourers into his harueſt.

3 * Goe

3 *Goe your wayes: behold, I send you foorth as lambes a- *Mat. 10.
mong wolues. 16.

4 Beare no bagge, neither scrippe, nor shooes, and *salute no 2. Kings
man by the way. 4.29.

5 *And into whatsoeuer house ye enter, first say, Peace *bee* to *Mat. 10.
this house. 12. marke

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vp- 6.10.
on him: if not, it shall turne to you againe.

7 And in that house tary still, eating and drinking such things
as by them *shall be set before you*, *for the labourer is worthy of *Deut. 24.*
his wages. Goe not from house to house. 14. mat.

8 *But into whatsoeuer city ye shall enter, if they receiue you, 10.10.
eate such things as are set before you, 1. tim. 5.

9 And heale the sicke that are there, and say vnto them, The 18.
kingdome of God is come neere vnto you. *Mat. 10.*

10 But into whatsoeuer city ye shall enter, if they will not re- 11.
ceiue you, goe your wayes out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Euen the very *dust, which cleaueth on vs of your citie, we *Chap. 9. 5.*
wipe off against you: notwithstanding know this, that the king- *act. 13, 51*
dome of God was come neere vnto you *and 18 6.*

12 For I say vnto you, that it shall be easier in that day for them
of Sodom, then for that citie.

13 *Woe *be* to thee, Chorazin: woe *be* to thee, Bethsaida: for *Mat. 11.*
if the miracles had beene done in Tyrus and Sidon, which haue 21.
beene done in you, they had a great while agoe repented, sitting
in sackcloth and ashes.

14 Therefore it shall bee easier for Tyrus and Sidon, at the
iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt
be thrust downe to hell.

16 *He that heareth you, heareth me: & he that despiseth you, *Matt. 10.*
despiseth me: & he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me. 40. *ioh.*

17 ¶And the seuenty turned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen 13.20.
the deuils are subdued to vs through thy Name.

18 And hee said vnto them, I saw Satan, like lightning, fall
downe from heauen.

19 Behold, I giue vnto you power to tread on Serpents, and
Scorpions, and ouer all the power of the enemie, and nothing shall
hurt you.

20 Neuertheless, in this reioyce not, that the spirits are sub-
dued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are writ-
ten in heauen.

21 ¶That same houre reioyced Iesus in the spirit, and said, I
confesse vnto thee, Father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast

hid these things from the wise and vnderstãding, and hast reuealed them to babes: euen so, Father, because it so pleased thee.

22 All things are giuen mee of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: neither who the Father is, saue the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueale him.

23 ¶ And hee turned to his disciples, and said secretly, *Blessed are the eyes, which see that ye see.

24 For I tell you, that many Prophets and Kings haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene *them*, and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard *them*.

25 ¶ *Then behold, a certaine Lawyer stood vp, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I doe, to inherite eternall life?

26 And he said vnto him, What is written in the Law? how readest thou?

27 And he answered, and said, *Thou shalt loue thy Lord God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, & with all thy strength, and with all thy thought, * and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 Then he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this doe, and thou shalt liue.

29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answered, and said, A certaine man went downe from Hierusalem to Iericho, & fell among theeues, & they robbed him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 Now so it fell out, that there came downe a certaine Priest that same way, & when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise also a Leuite, when he was come neere to the place, went and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side.

33 Then a certaine Samaritane, as hee iourneyed, came neere vnto him, and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, and powred in oyle and wine, and put him on his own beast, and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him.

35 And on the morrow when hee departed, hee tooke out two pence, and gaue them to the host, and said vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe, I will recompense thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercie on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe and doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe as they went, that he entred into a certaine

Mat. 13. 16. — *Mat. 22. 35. mar. 12. 28. Deu. 6. 5. Leuit. 19. 18.*

certaine towne, and a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sate at Iesus feete, and heard his preaching.

40 But Martha was cumbred about much seruing, and came to him, and said, Master, doest thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou caresst, and art troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needfull, Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 Hee teacheth his Apostles to pray. 14 The dumbe deuill driuen out. 27 A woman of the company lifteth vp her voyce. 29 The Iewes require signes. 37 He being feasted of the Pharise, reproueth the outward shewe of holinesse.

AND so it was, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

2 * And he said vnto them, When yee pray, say, Our Father, *Mat.6.9.* which art in heauen, halowed bee thy Name: Thy kingdome come: Let thy will be done, euen in earth, as *it is* in heauen:

3 Our dayly bread giue vs for the day:

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euen wee forgiue euery man that is indebted to vs: and lead vs not into temptation: but deliuer vs from euill.

5 ¶ Moreouer he said vnto them, Which of you shal haue a friend, and shall goe to him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues?

6 For a friend of mine is come out of the way to mee, and I haue nothing to set before him:

7 And he within should answere, and say, Trouble mee not: the doore is now shut, and my children are with mee in bed: I cannot rise and giue them to thee.

8 I say vnto you, Though he would not arise and giue him, because he is his friend, yet doubtlesse because of his importunitie, he would rise, and giue him as many as he needed. *Matt.7.7. and 21.22*

9 * And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shall be giuen you: seeke, and ye shall find: knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you. *mark. 11. 24. ioh. 14. 13. & 16. 23. iames 1.5.*

10 * For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

11 * If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he giue him a stone? or if *hee aske* a fish, will he for a fish giue him a serpent? *Mat. 7.8. Mat.7.9.*

13 If yee then which are euill can giue good gifts vnto your children, how much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghost, to them that desire him?

Mat.9.32 and 12.22 14 ¶*Then he cast out a deuill which was dumbe: and when the deuill was gone out, the dumbe spake, & the people wondred.

Mat.9.34 & 12.24 15 But some of them said, *He casteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils.

mar.3.22 Mat. 12. 16 And others tempted him, seeking of him a signe from heauen.

25 marke 3.24. 17 But hee knew their thoughts, and said vnto them, * Euery kingdome diuided against it selfe, shall be desolate, and an house *diuided* against an house, falleth.

18 So if Satan also be diuided against himselfe, how shall his kingdome stand, because ye say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub?

19 If I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore shall they be your iudges.

20 But if I by the finger of God cast out deuils, doubtlesse the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

21 When a strong man armed, keepeth his palace, the things that he possesseth, are in peace.

22 But when a stronger then he commeth vpon him, and ouercommeth him, hee taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and diuideth his spoiles.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

Mat.12. 43. 24 *When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and when he findeth none, he saith, I will returne vnto mine house whence I came out.

25 And when he commeth, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seuen other spirits worse *Heb.6.4. 2 pet.2. 20.* than himselfe: and they enter in, and dwell there: * so the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶And it came to passe as he said these things, a certaine woman of the company lifted vp her voice, & said vnto him, Blessed *is* the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But he said, Yea, rather, blessed *are* they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

Mat.12. 38,39. Iona 1.12 29 ¶*And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is a wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen them, but the signe of * Ionas the Prophet.

30 For as Ionas was a signe to the Niniuites: so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

31 *The

31 *The Queene of the South shall rise in iudgement with the men of this generation, and shall condemne them: for shee came from the vtmost parts of the earth to heare the wisedome of Salomon, and behold, a greater then Salomon is here. 1. Kings 10. 1. 2. chr. 9. 1

32 The men of Nineue shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for they repented * at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas is here. Iona 3. 5.

33 ¶ * No man when hee hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priuie place, neither vnder a bushell: but on a candlesticke, that they which come in, may see the light. Cha. 8. 16. mat. 5. 15 mar. 4. 21

34 *The light of the body is the eye: therfore when thine eye is single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye be euill, then thy body is darke. Mat. 6. 22

35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkenesse.

36 If therefore thy whole body *shall be* light, hauing no part darke, then shall all be light, euen as when a candle doeth light thee with the brightnesse.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certaine Pharise besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sate downe at table.

38 And when the Pharise saw it, he marueiled that he had not first washed before dinner.

39 *And the Lord said to him, Indeed ye Pharises make cleane the outside of the cup, and of the platter: but the inward part is full of rauening and wickednesse. Mat. 23. 25.

40 Yee fooles, did not hee that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 Therefore giue almes of those things which you haue, and behold, all things shall be cleane to you.

42 But wo *be* to you, Pharises: for ye tithe the mint, & the rew, and al maner herbs, and passe ouer iudgement & the loue of God: these ought ye to haue done, & not to haue left the other vndone.

43 * Woe *be* to you Pharises: for ye loue the vppermost seats in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets. Chap. 20. 46. mat.

44 Woe *be* to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: * for yee are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke ouer them, perceiue not. 23. 6. mar. 12. 38, 39.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and said vnto him, Master, thus saying thou puttest vs to rebuke also. Mat. 23. 27.

46 And he said, Woe *be* to you also, ye Lawyers: * for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, and ye your selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. Mat. 23 4 act. 15. 10

47 Woe *be* to you: * for ye build the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them. Mat. 23. 29.

48 Truely ye beare witnesse, and allow the deeds of your fathers: for they killed them,and ye build their sepulchres

49 Therefore saide the wisedome of God, I will send them Prophets and Apostles,and of them they shall slay and persecute away,

50 That the blood of all the Prophets,shed from the foundation of the world,may be required of this generation,

Gene.4.8 *2.Chr.24.21.* 51 From the blood of * Abel vnto the blood of * Zacharias, which was slaine betweene the Altar and the Temple: verely I say vnto you,it shalbe required of this generation.

52 Woe *bee* to you Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your selues, and them that came in,ye forbade.

53 And as hee saide these things vnto them, the Scribes and Pharises began to vrge him sore, and to prouoke him to speake of many things,

54 Laying waite for him, and seeking to catch some thing of his mouth,whereby they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

1 *The leauen of the Pharises.* 5 *Who is to be feared.* 8 *To confesse Christ.* 17 *The parable of the rich man,whose land was very fertil.* 22 *Not to care for earthly things,* 31 *but to seeke the kingdome of God.* 39 *The theefe in the night.* 51 *Debate for the Gospel sake.*

Mat.16.5 *mar 8.14* IN * the meane time, there gathered together an innumerable multitude of people,so that they trode one another: and he began to say vnto his disciples first,Take heed to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisie.

Matth 10 26.mar. 2 For there is nothing couered,that shall not bee reuciled: neither hid, that shall not be knowen.

4.22. 3 Wherfore whatsoeuer ye haue spoken in darknes,it shalbe heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare,in secret places,shalbe preached on the houses.

Mat.10. 28. 4 * And I say vnto you,my friends,be not afraid of them that kill the body and after that are not able to do any more.

5 But I will forewarne you,whom ye shall feare: feare him, which after he hath killed,hath power to cast into hell: yea,I say

2.Sam.14 45.actes 27.34. vnto you,him feare.

6 Are not fiue sparowes bought for two farthings,*and* yet not one of them is forgotten before God?

Cha.9.26 *matt. 10. 32.mar. 8.38.2. tim.1.12.* 7 * Yea,and all the haires of your head are numbred: feare not therefore,ye are of more value then many sparowes.

8 *Also I say vnto you,Whosoeuer shall confesse me before men,him shall the Sonne of man confesse also before the Angels of God.

9 But

9 But he that ſhall deny me before men, ſhalbe denied before the Angels of God.

10 * And whoſoeuer ſhall ſpeake a word againſt the Sonne of man, it ſhalbe forgiuen him: but vnto him that ſhall blaſpheme the holy Ghoſt, it ſhall not be forgiuen. *Matt. 12. 31. mar. 3. 28.*

11 * And when they ſhal bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto the rulers and princes, take no thought how, or what thing ye ſhall anſwere, or what ye ſhall ſpeake. *1. iohn 5. 15. Matth. 10.*

12 For the holy Ghoſt ſhal teach you in the ſame houre, what ye ought to ſay. *19. mark. 13. 11.*

13 And one of the company ſaide vnto him, Maſter, bid my brother diuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he ſaid vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a diuider ouer you?

15 Wherefore he ſaid vnto them, Take heede, and beware of couetouſnes: for though a man haue abundance, *yet* his life ſtandeth not in his riches.

16 And he put forth a parable vnto them, ſaying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought forth fruits plenteouſly.

17 Therefore he thought with himſelfe, ſaying, What ſhall I doe, becauſe I haue no *roome*, where I may lay vp my fruits?

18 And he ſaid, This will I doe, I will pull downe my barnes and build greater, and therein will I gather all my fruits and my goods,

19 And I will ſay to my ſoule, Soule, thou haſt much goods laide vp for many yeeres: liue at eaſe, eat, drinke, and take thy paſtime.

20 But God ſaid vnto him, O foole, this night will they fetch away thy ſoule from thee: then whoſe ſhal thoſe things be which thou haſt prouided?

21 So *is* hee that gathereth riches to himſelfe, and is not rich in God.

22 And he ſpake vnto his diſciples, Therefore I ſay vnto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye ſhall eate: neither for your body what ye ſhall put on. *Mat. 6. 25 1. pet. 5. 7.*

23 The life is more then meate: and the body *more* then the raiment. *pſa. 55. 22*

24 Conſider the rauens: for they neither ſow nor reap: which neither haue ſtorehouſe nor barne, and *yet* God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then foules?

25 And which of you with taking thought can adde to his ſtature one cubite?

26 If ye then be not able to doe the leaſt thing, why take yee thought for the remnant?

27 Conſi-

27 Consider the lilies how they grow: they labour not, neither spinne they: yet I say vnto you, that Salomon himselfe in all his royaltie was not clothed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grasse which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the ouen, how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

29 Therefore aske not what yee shall eate, or what yee shall drinke, neither hang you in suspense.

30 For all such things the people of the world seeke for: and your Father knoweth that ye haue neede of these things.

31 But rather seeke ye after the kingdome of God, and all these things shalbe cast vpon you.

32 Feare not, little flocke: for it is your Fathers pleasure, to giue you the kingdome.

Mat.6.20 33 ¶ *Sell that ye haue, and giue almes: make you bags which waxe not olde, a treasure that can neuer faile in heauen, where no thiefe commeth, neither moth corrupteth.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your hearts be also.

1.Pet.1.13. 35 ¶ * Let your loynes be girt about, and your lightes burning,

36 And yee your selues like vnto men that waite for their master, when he will returne from the wedding, then when he commeth and knocketh, they may open vnto him immediatly.

37 Blessed *are* those seruants, whom the Lord when hee commeth shall finde waking: Verely I say vnto you, he *will* gird himselfe about, and make them to sit downe at table, and will come foorth, and serue them.

38 And if he come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and shall finde them so, blessed are those seruants.

Mat.24.43. *mel.* *26.15.* *and 3.3.* 39 * Now vnderstand this, that if the good man of the house had knowen at what houre the thiefe would haue come, he would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to be digged through.

40 Be yee also prepared therefore: for the Sonne of man will come at an houre when ye thinke not.

41 Then Peter said vnto him, Master, tellest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who is a faithfull steward, and wise, whom the master shall make ruler ouer his household to giue them their portion of meate in season?

43 Blessed *is* that seruant, whom his master when he commeth, shall finde so doing.

44 Of a trueth I say vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But

45 But if that seruant say in his heart, My master doeth deferre his commiug, ann shall begin to smite the seruants, and maidens, and to eate, and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The Master of that seruant will come in day when he thinketh not, and at an houre when he is not ware of, and will cut him off, and giue him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

47 ¶ And that seruant that knewe his master well, and prepared not himselfe, neither did according to his will, shalbe beaten with many *stripes*.

48 But hee that knew it not, and yet did commit things worthy of stripes, shall bee beaten with few *stripes*: for vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen, of him shalbe much required, and to whom men much commit, the more of him will they akse,

49 ¶ I am come to put fire on the earth, and what is my desire, if it be already kindled?

50 Notwithstanding I must be baptized with a baptisme, and how am I grieued till it be ended?

51 *Thinke yee that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tell you, nay, but rather debate. *Matt.* 10. 34.

52 For from henceforth there shalbe fiue in one house diuided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The Father shalbe diuided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, & the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ *Then said he to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the West, straightway ye say, A showre commeth: and so it is. *Mat.* 16. 2

55 And when *ye see* the South winde blow, ye say, that it will be hote: and it commeth to passe.

56 Hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the earth, and of the skie: but why discerne ye not this time?

57 Yea, and why iudge ye not of your selues what is right?

58 ¶ *While thou goest with thine aduersarie to the ruler, as thou art in the way, giue diligence in the way, that thou maiest be deliuered from him, lest he draw thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the gaoler, and the gaoler cast thee into prison. *Mat.* 5. 25

59 I tell thee thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payed the vtmost mite.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Of the Galileans,* 4 *and those that were slaine vnder Siloam.* 6 *The figtree that bare no fruit.* 11 *The woman vexed with the spirit of infirmitie, that is, with a disease brought on her by Satan,* 15 *is healed.*

Wheeled. 19. *The parable of the graine of muſtard ſeed.* 21 *Of leauen.* 23 *How few ſhall be ſaued.* 32 *Herod that fox.*

THere were certaine men preſent at the ſame ſeaſon, that ſhewed him of the Galileans, whoſe blood Pilate had mingled with their ſacrifices.

2 And Ieſus anſwered and ſaid vnto them, Suppoſe yee, that theſe Galileans were greater ſinners then all the *other* Galileans, becauſe they haue ſuffered ſuch things?

3 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye ſhal all likewiſe periſh.

4 Or thinke you that thoſe eighteene, vpon whom the towre in Siloam fell, and ſlew them, were ſinners aboue all men that dwell in Hieruſalem?

5 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.

6 ¶ He ſpake alſo this parable. A certaine man had a figtree planted in his vineyard: and hee came and ſought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then ſaid he to the dreſſer of his vineyard, Behold, this three yeres haue I come and ſought fruit of this figtree, and find none: cut it downe: why keepeth it alſo the ground barren?

8 And he anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yeere alſo, till I digge round about it, and dung it.

9 And if it beare fruit, *well*: if not, then after thou ſhalt cut it downe.

10 ¶ And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath day.

11 And behold, there was a woman which had a ſpirit of infirmitie eighteene yeeres, and was bowed together, and could not lift vp *her ſelfe* in any wiſe.

12 When Ieſus ſaw her, he called her to him, and ſaid to her, Woman, thou art looſed from thy diſeaſe.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly ſhe was made ſtraight againe, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue anſwered with indignation, becauſe that Ieſus had healed on the Sabbath *day*, and ſaid vnto the people, There are ſix daies in which mẽ ought to worke: in them therefore come & be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 Then anſwered him the Lord, and ſaid, Hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the Sabbath *day* looſe his oxe or his aſſe from the ſtall, and leade him away to the the watter?

16 And ought not this Daughter of Abraham whom Satan had bound loe, eighteene yeeres, be looſed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And

17 And when he said these things, all his aduersaries were a-
shamed: but all the people reioyced at all the excellent things,
that were done by him.

18 ¶ *Then said hee What is the kingdome of God like? or *Mat.13.
whereto shall I compare it? 31.mar.
4.31.

19 It is like a graine of mustard see de which a man tooke and
sowed in his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree, and the
foules of the heauen made nestes in the branches thereof.

20 ¶ * And againe hee saide, Whereunto shall I liken the *Mat.13.
kingdome of God? 33.

21 It is like leauen which a woman tooke, and hidde in three
peckes of flowre, till all was leauened.

22 ¶ *And hee went through all cities and townes, teaching *Mat.9.35
and iourneying towards Hierusalem. mar.6.6.

23 Then said one vnto him, Lord, *are there* fewe that shall bee
saued? And he said vnto them,

24 * Striue to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say vn- *Mat.7.13
to you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When the goodman of the house is risen vp, and hath shut
to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the
doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, and he shall answere and say
vnto you, I know you not whence ye are,

26 Then shall ye begin to say, Wee haue eaten and drunke in
thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 * But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are: *Mat.7.23
depart from me, all ye workers of iniquitie. & 25.41.

28 There shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall *psal.6.8.
see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the
kingdome of God, and your selues thrust out at doores.

29 Then shall come *many* from the East, and from the West,
and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit at table in
the kingdome of God.

30 *And behold, there are last, which shalbe first, and there are *Mat.19.
first, which shalbe last. 30. and
20.16.
mar.10.

31 The same day there came certaine Pharises, and said vnto
him, Depart and goe hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32 Then said he vnto them, Goe ye and tell that foxe, Behold, 31.
I cast out deuils, and will heale still to day, and to morowe, and
the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Neuertheless, I must walke to day, and to morrow, and the
day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet should perish out
of Hierusalem.

34 *O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and *Mat.23.
stonest them that are sent to thee, how often would I haue gathe- 37.
red

red thy children together, as the henne *gathereth* her brood vnder *h r* wings, and ye would not!

35 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tell you, ye shall not see me vntill *the time* come that ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 *The dropsie healed on the Sabbath.* 8 *The chiefe places at bankets.* 12 *The poore must be called to our feasts.* 16 *Of those that were bidde to the great Supper.* 23 *Some compelled to come in.* 28 *One about to build a towre.*

AND it came to passe, that when hee was entred into the house of one of the chiefe Pharises on the Sabbath *day*, to eat bread, they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharises, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath *day*?

4 And they held their peace. Then he tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe,

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you *shall haue* an asse or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to those things.

7 ¶ He spake also a parable to the guests, when hee marked how they chose out the chiefe roumes, and said vnto them,

8 When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, set not thy selfe downe in the chiefest place, lest a more honourable man then thou, be bidden of him,

9 And he that bade both him and thee come, and say to thee, Giue this man roume, and thou then begin with shame to take the lowest roume.

Pro.25.7 10 *But when thou art bidden, go and sit downe in the lowest roume, that when hee that bade thee commeth, hee may say vnto thee, Friend, sit vp higher: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee.

Chap.18.14. mat.23.12. 11 *For whosoeuer exalteth himselfe, shall be brought low, and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then said he also to him that had bidden him, * When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsemen, nor the rich neighbours, lest they also bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee. *Pro.3.27 Ecclus.4.7.*

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maimed, the lame, *and* the blinde.

14 And thou shalt bee blessed, because they cannot recompence

pence thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ Now when one of them that sate at table, heard these things, hee sayd vnto him, Blessed *is* hee that eateth bread in the kingdome of God.

16 Then said he to him, * A certaine man made a great supper, and bad many, *Mat.22.1 reuel.19.9*

17 And sent his seruant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come: for all things are now ready.

18 But they all with one *mind* began to make excuse: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a farme, and I must needes goe out and see it: I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another said, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I go to proue them: I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife, and therfore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant returned, and shewed his Master these things. Then was the good man of the house angry, & said to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the streetes and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maymed, and the halt, and the blind.

22 And the seruant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is roome.

23 Then the Master said to the seruant, Goe out into the hie wayes, and hedges, and compell them to come in, that mine house may be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 Now there went great multitudes with him, and he turned and said vnto them,

26 * If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children and brethren, and sisters: yea, and his owne life also, he cannot be my disciple. *Matt. 10. 37.*

27 * And whosoeuer beareth not his crosse, and commeth after me, cannot be my disciple. *Chap. 9. 23. mat. 16. 24. mar. 8. 34*

28 For which of you minding to builde a tower, sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to performe it,

29 Lest that after he hath laide the foundation and is not able to performe it, all that behold it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to make an ende?

31 Or what king going to make warre against another king, sitteth not downe first, and taketh counsell, whether he be able with ten

ten thousand, to meete him that commeth against him with twen-
tie thousand?

32 Or else while he is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambas-
sage, and desireth peace.

33 So likewise, whosoeuer he bee of you, that forsaketh not all
that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

Mat.5.13 34 *Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith
Mar.9.50 shall it be salted?

35 It is neither meete for the land, nor yet for the dunghill,
but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

4 The parable of the lost sheepe. 8 Of the groat. 11 And of the prodigall sonne.

THen ‖ resorted vnto him all the Publicanes, and sinners to
heare him. ‖ *Or, drew neere.*

2 Therefore the Pharises and Scribes murmured, saying, He
receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 Then spake he this parable to them, saying,

Mat.18.12. 4 *What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if hee lose
one of them, doth not leaue ninety and nine in the wildernesse, and
goe after that which is lost, vntill he find it?

5 And when he hath found it, hee layeth it on his shoulders
with ioy.

6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friends
and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with mee: for I haue
found my sheepe which was lost.

7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shall be in heauen for one
sinner that conuerteth, *more* then for ninety and nine iust men,
which neede none amendement of life.

8 Either what woman hauing tenne groates, if shee lose one
groat, doth not light a candle, and sweepe the house, and seeke di-
ligently till shee finde it?

9 And when shee hath found it, shee calleth her friends and
neighbours, saying, Reioyce with mee, for I haue found the groat
which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy in the presence of the
Angels of God, for one sinner that conuerteth.

11 ¶ He said moreouer, A certaine man had two sonnes.

12 And the yonger of them said to his Father, Father, giue mee
the portion of the goods that falleth to me. So hee diuided vnto
them *his* substance.

13 So not many dayes after, when the yonger sonne had gathe-
red all together, hee tooke his iourney into a farre country, and
there he wasted his goods with ryotous liuing.

14 Now

14 Now when hee had spent all, there arose a great dearth throwout that land: and he began to be in necessitie.

15 Then he went and claue to a citizen of that countrey, and he sent him to his farme to feede swine.

16 And hee would faine haue filled his belly with the huskes that the swine ate: but no man gaue *them* him.

17 Then he came to himselfe, and said, How many hired seruants at my fathers haue bread enough, and I die for hunger?

18 I will rise, and goe to my Father, and say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired seruants.

20 So he arose and came to his father, and when hee was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ranne and fell on his necke and kissed him.

21 And the sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 Then the father said to his seruants Bring forth the best robe and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, & shooes on his feet.

23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him, and let vs eate, and be merrie.

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was lost, but hee is found. And they began to be merrie.

25 Now the elder brother was in the field, and when he came and drew neere to the house, he heard melody and dancing,

26 And called one of his seruants, and asked what those things meant.

27 And he said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed ỹ fat calfe, because he hath receiued him safe & sound.

28 Then he was angry, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out and intreated him.

29 But hee answered, and said to his father, Loe, these many yeeres haue I done thee seruice, neither brake I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gauest me a kid, that I might make merrie with my friends.

30 But when this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goods with harlots, thou hast for his sake killed the fat calfe.

31 And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue is thine. It was meete that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was lost, but he is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *The parable of the Steward accused to his master.* 13 *To serue*

two masters. 16 The Law and the Prophets. 19 Of Dives and Lazarus.

AND he said also vnto his disciples, There was a certaine rich man, which had a steward, and he was accused vnto him, that he wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said vnto him, How *is it* that I heare this of thee? Giue an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward sayd within himselfe, What shall I doe? For my master taketh away from mee the stewardship. I cannot digge, *and* to begge I am ashamed.

4 I know what I will doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses.

5 Then hee called vnto him euery one of his masters debtors, and said vnto the first, How much owest thou vnto my master?

6 And he said, An hundred measures of oyle. And he said vnto him, Take thy writing, and sit downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then said he to another, How much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheate. Then he said to him, Take thy writing, and write fourescore.

8 And the Lord commended the vniust steward, because he had done wisely. Wherefore the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say vnto you, Make you friends with the riches of iniquity, that when yee shall want, they may receiue you into euerlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in the least, hee is also faithfull in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much.

11 If then you haue not been faithfull in the wicked riches, who will trust you in the true *treasure*.

12 And if yee haue not been faithfull in another mans *goods*, who shall giue you that which is yours?

Mat.6.24 13 * No seruant can serue two masters: for either he shall hate the one, and loue the other: or else hee shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serue God and riches.

14 All these things heard the Pharises also which were couetous, and they scoffed at him.

15 Then hee said vnto them, Yee are they, which iustifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.

Mat.11. 12. 16 * The Lawe and the Prophets *endured* vntill Iohn: and since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and euery man preasseth into it.

17 * Now

17 * Now it is more easie that heauen and earth should passe away, then that one title of the Law should fall. *Mat.5.18*

18 ¶ * Whosoeuer putteth away his wife, and marieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoeuer marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery. *Mat.5.32 and 19.9. 1.cor.7.11.*

19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man which was clothed in purple, and fine linen, and fared well and delicately euery day.

20 Also there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was layd at his gate full of sores,

21 And desired to be refreshed with the crummes that fel from the rich mans table: yea, and the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it was so that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also died, and was buried.

23 And being in hell in torments, hee lift vp his eyes, and saw Abraham a farre off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 Then hee cried, and sayd, Father Abraham, haue mercie on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receiuedst thy pleasures, and likewise Lazarus paines: now therefore is he comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Besides all this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulfe set, so that they which would goe from hence to you cannot: neither can they come from thence to vs.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house,

28 (For I haue fiue brethren) that hee may testifie vnto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham sayd vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets: let them heare them.

30 And he say, Nay, father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they will amend their lines.

31 Then he said vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they bee perswaded, though one arise from the dead againe.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Offences. 3 Wee must forgiue him that trespasseth against vs. 10 We are vnprofitable seruants. 11 Of the ten lepers. 20 Of the comming of the kingdome of heauen. 33 False christes. 26 After what maner Christs comming shall be.

THen said hee to the disciples, * It cannot bee auoided, but that offences will come, but woe *bee* to him by whome they come. *Mat.18.7. mar.9.42*

2 It is better for him that a great millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea, then that hee should offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heed to your selues: if thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him: and if he repent, forgiue them.

Matth. 18 21. 4 * And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, I repent: thou shalt forgiue him.

5 ¶ And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.

Matth. 17 20. 6 And the Lord said, * If ye had faith *as much as is* a graine of mustard seede, and should say vnto this mulbery tree, Plucke thy selfe vp by the rootes, and plant thy selfe in the sea, it should euen obey you.

7 ¶ Who is it also of you, that hauing a seruant plowing or feeding cattell, would say vnto him by and by, when hee were come from the field, Goe, and sit downe at table?

8 And would not rather say to him, Dresse wherewith I may suppe, and gird thy selfe, and serue mee, till I haue eaten and drunken, and afterward eate thou and drinke thou?

9 Doth he thanke that seruant, because hee did that which was commanded vnto him? I trow not.

10 So likewise yee, when yee haue done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are vnprofitable seruants: we haue done that which was our duety to doe.

11 ¶ And so it was when he went to Hierusalem, that hee passed through the mids of Samaria and Galile.

12 And as he entred into a certaine towne, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afarre off.

13 And they lift vp their voices, and sayd, Iesus, Master, haue mercie on vs.

Leu. 14. 2. 14 And when he saw *them*, he said vnto them, * Goe, shew your selues vnto the Priests. And it came to passe, that as they went they were cleansed.

15 Then one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned backe, and with a loud voice praised God,

16 And fell down on his face at his feete, and gaue him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Iesus answered, and sayd, Are there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine?

18 There is none found that returned to giue God praise, saue this stranger.

18 And he said vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath saued thee.

20 ¶ And when hee was demanded of the Pharises, when the kingdom

kingdome of God should come, he answered them, and said, The kingdome of God commeth not with obseruation.

21 Neither shall men say, Loe here, or loe there: for behold, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And he said vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 * Then they shall say to you, Behold here, or behold there: *but* goe not thither, nei ther follow them. *Matt.24. 23.marke 13.21.*

24 For as the lightning that lightneth ont of the one *part* vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other *part* vnder heauen, so shall the Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and bee reprooued of this generation.

26 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so shall it bee in the dayes of the Sonne of man. *Gen.7.5. mat.24.*

27 They ate, they dranke, they married wines, and gaue in mariage vnto the day that Noe went into the Arke: and the flood came, and destroyed them all. *38. 1.per. 3.20.*

28 * Likewise also, as it was in the dayes of Lot, they ate, they dranke, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built. *Gen.19. 24.*

29 But in the day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heauen, and destroyed them all.

30 After these *ensamples* shall it be in the day when the Sonne of man is reuealed.

31 At that day hee that is vpon the house, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it out: and hee that is in the feeld likewise, let him not turne backe, to that he left behind. *Gen.19.*

32 * Remember Lots wife. *26.*

33 * Whosoeuer will seeke to saue his soule, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose it, shall get it life. *Cha.9.24.*

34 * I tell you, in that night there shall be two in one bed: the one shall be receiued, and the other shalbe left. *mat.10.39 mar.8.35*

35 Two women shalbe grinding together: the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. *Ioh.12.25 Mat.24.*

36 Two shalbe in the field: one shalbe receiued, and another shalbe left. *41.*

37 And they answered, and said vnto him, Where, Lord? And he said vnto them, * Where soeuer the bodie is, thither shall also the egles be gathered together. *Matth.24 28.*

CHAP. XVIII.

1 *The parable of the vnrighteous iudge and the widow.* 10 *Of the Pharise and the Publicane.* 15 *Children are of the kingdome of heauen.* 22 *To sell all and giue to the poore.* 28 *The Apostles*

forsake all. 31 *Christ foretelleth his death.* 35 *The blinde receiueth sight.*

Rom. 12. 12.1.thes. 5.17.

AND he spake also a parable vnto them *to this ende*, that they * ought alwayes to pray, and not to waxe faint,

2 Saying, There was a iudge in a certaine citie, which feared not God, neither reuerenced man.

3 And there was a widow in that citie, which came vnto him, saying, Doe me iustice against mine aduersary.

4 And he would not of a long time: but afterward hee said within himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor reuerence man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will doe her right, lest at the last she come and make me weary.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the vnrighteous iudge saith.

7 Now shall not God auenge his elect, which crie day and night vnto him, yea though he suffer long for them?

8 I tell you, hee will auenge them quickely: but when the Sonne of man commeth, shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 ¶ He spake also this parable vnto certaine which trusted in themselues that they were iust, and despised other.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray: the one a Pharise, and the other a Publicane.

11 The Pharise stood and prayed thus with himselfe, O God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men, extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke: I giue tithe of all that euer I possesse.

13 But the Publicane standing afarre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes to heauen, but smote his breast, saying, O God, be mercifull vnto me a sinner.

14 I tell you this man departed to his house iustified, rather then the other: * for euery man that exalteth himselfe, shall bee brought low, and he that humbleth himselfe, shalbe exalted.

Chap. 14. 11. matt. 23.12.

15 ¶ * They brought vnto him also babes that he should touch them. And when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

Matth. 19 marke 10.13.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said. Suffer the babes to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verely I say vnto you, whosoeuer receiueth not the kingdome of God as a babe, he shall not enter therein.

Matth. 19 19. mar. 10.17.

18 * Then a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what ought I to doe to inherite eternall life?

19 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good saue one, *euen* God.

Exod. 20. 13.

20 Thou knowest the Commaundements, * Thou shalt not commit

commit adultery. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witnesse. Honor thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these haue I kept from my youth.

22 Now when Iesus heard that, he sayd vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing. Sell all that euer thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come follow me.

23 But when he heard those things he was very heauie: for hee was marueilous rich.

24 And when Iesus saw him very sorowful, he said, With what difficultie shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!

25 Surely it is easier for a camell to goe thorow a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 Then said they that heard it, And who then can be saued?

27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 ¶ * Then Peter sayd, Loe, wee haue left all, and haue followed thee. *Matt.19. 27.marke 10.28.*

29 And he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Which shall not receiue much more in this world, and in the world to come life euerlasting.

31 ¶ * Then Iesus tooke vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and all things shall be fulfilled to the Sonne of man that are written by the Prophets. *Matth.20 17.marke 10.32.*

32 For he shall be deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shall bee mocked, and shall be spitefully entreated, and shall be spitted on.

33 And when they haue scourged him, they will put him to death: but the third day he shall rise againe.

34 But they vnderstood none of these things, and this saying was hidde from them, neither perceiued they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ * And it came to passe, that as hee was come neere vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man sate by the way side begging. *Matth.20 29.marke 10.46.*

36 And when he heard the people passe by, hee asked what it meant.

37 And they sayd vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 Then he cried, saying, Iesus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him that hee should hold his peace, but he cried much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

40 And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought vnto him. And when he was come neere, he asked him,

41 Saying, what wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And hee said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee.

43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, praising God: and all the people, when they saw *this*, gaue praise to God.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Zaccheus the Publicane. 13 Ten pieces of money deliuered to seruants to occupie withall. 29 Iesus entreth into Hierusalem. 41 He foretelleth the destruction of the citie with teares. 45 He casteth the sellers out of the Temple.

NOw when Iesus entred and passed through Iericho,

2 Behold, there was a man named Zaccheus, which *was* the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Iesus, who he should be, and could not for the preasse, because he was of a low stature.

4 Wherefore he ran before, and climed vp into a wilde figge tree, that he might see him: for he should come that *way*.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, hee looked vp, and saw him, and said vnto him, Zaccheus, come down at once: for to day I must abide at thine house.

6 Then he came downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when all they sawe it, they murmured, saying, that hee was gone in to lodge with a sinfull man.

8 And Zaccheus stood foorth, and said vnto the Lord, Behold Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I restore him foure fold.

9 Then Iesus said to him, This day is saluation come vnto this house, forasmuch as he is also become the sonne of Abraham.

Matth. 18 31. 10 *For the Sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which was lost.

11 And whiles they heard these things, he continued and spake a parable, because he was neere to Hierusalem, and because also they thought that the kingdome of God should shortly appeare.

Matt. 25. 14. 12 Hee sayd therefore, *A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and *so* to come againe.

13 And he called his ten seruants, and deliuered them ten pieces of money, and said vnto them, Occupie till I come.

14 Now his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him,

him,saying, Wee will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe when hee was come againe, and had receiued his kingdome,that hee commanded the seruants to bee called to him to whom he gaue his money, that hee might knowe what euery man had gained.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy piece hath increased ten pieces.

17 And hee said vnto him, Well, good seruant: because thou hast beene faithfull in a very little thing, take thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy piece hath increased fiue pieces.

19 And to the same he said, Be thou also *ruler* ouer fiue cities.

20 So the other came, and said, Lord, behold thy piece, which I haue layd vp in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art a straite man: thou takest vp that thou layedst not downe, and reapest that thou didst not sowe.

22 Then he said vnto him, Of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, O euill seruant. Thou knewest that I am a straite man, taking vp that I laid not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe.

23 Wherefore then gauest not thou my money into the banke, that at my comming I might haue required it with vantage?

24 And hee said to them that stood by, Take from him that piece, and giue it him that hath ten pieces.

25 (And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pieces)

26 * For I say vnto you, that vnto all them that haue, it shall be giuen: and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, shall be taken from him. *Chap.8.18 matth.13 12.& 25. 29.marke 4.25.*

27 Moreouer, those mine enemies, which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, hee went foorth before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

29 * And it came to passe, when hee was come neere to Bethphage, and Bethania, besides the mount which is called *the mount* of Olines, he sent two of his disciples, *Mat.21.1 mar.11.1*

30 Saying, goe ye to the towne which is before *you*, wherein assoone as ye are come, yee shall finde a colt tied, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him *hither*.

31 And if any man aske you, why yee loose *him*, thus shall yee say vnto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 So they that were sent, went their way, and found it as hee had sayd vnto them.

33 And

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof sayd vnto them, Why loose yee the colt?

34 And they sayd, The Lord hath neede of him.

Mat.21.7 *Iob.12.14* 35 ¶ * So they brought him to Iesus, and they cast their garments on the colt, and set Iesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spred their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was now come neere to the going downe of the mount of Oliues, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce and to praise God with a lowd voyce, for all the great workes that they had seene,

38 Saying, Blessed *bee* the King that commeth in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen, and glory in the highest *places*.

39 And some of the Pharises of the company sayd vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 But he answered, and said vnto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would crie.

Che.21.6. *mat 24.1* *mar.13.1* 41 ¶ * And when he was come neere, he beheld the Citie, and wept for it,

42 Saying, O if thou hadst euen knowen at the least in this thy day those things which *belong* vnto thy peace! but now are they hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keepe thee in on euery side,

44 And shal make thee euen with the ground, and thy children which are in thee, and they shall not leaue in thee a stone vpon a stone, because thou knewest not that season of thy visitation.

Matth.21 *13.* 45 ¶ * Hee went also into the Temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought,

Marke 11 *17. isa.* *56.7.* *Ier.7.11.* 46 Saying vnto them, It is written, * Mine house is the house of prayer, * but ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

47 And he taught dayly in the Temple. And the high Priests and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him.

48 But they could not finde what they might doe to him: for all the people hanged vpon him when they heard him.

CHAP. XX.

4 *From whence Iohns baptisme was.* 9 *The wickednesse of the Priests is noted by the parable of the vineyard and the husbandmen.* 21 *To giue tribute to Cesar.* 27 *Hee conuinceth the Sadduces denying the resurrection.* 41 *How Christ is the Sonne of Dauid.*

Mat.21. *23 mar.* *11.27.* AND * it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as hee taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospel, the high Priests

Priests and the Scribes came vpon him, with the Elders,
2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authoritie thou doest these things, or who is he that hath giuen thee this authoritie?
3 And hee answered and sayd vnto them, I also will aske you one thing: tell me therefore:
4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?
5 And they reasoned within themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleeued ye him not?
6 But if we shall say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet.
7 Therefore they answered, That they could not tell whence it was.
8 Then Iesus said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.
9 ¶ * Then began he to speake to the people this parable. A certaine man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey for a great time. *Mat.21. 33.mar. 12.1.isa.*
10 And at the time conuenient he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away empty. *5.1.iere. 2.21.*
11 Againe, he sent yet another seruant: and they did beat him, and souse intreated him, and sent him away empty.
12 Moreouer he sent the third, and him they wounded, and cast out.
13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What shall I doe? I will send my beloued Sonne: it may be that they will do reuerence when they see him.
14 But when the husbandmen sawe him, they reasoned with themselues, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.
15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What shall the Lord of the vineyard therefore doe vnto them?
16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will giue out his vineyard to others. But when they heard it, they sayd, God forbid.
17 ¶ And he beheld them, and said, What meaneth this then that is written, * The stone that the builders refused, that is made the head of the corner? *Psal. 118. 22.isa.28*
18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shall be broken: and on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it shall grinde him to powder. *16.acts 4. 11.rom.9*
19 Then the hie Priests, and the Scribes the same houre went about to lay hands on him: (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them. *33. 1.pet. 2.8.*

20 * And

Mat. 22. 16. *mar.* 12. 13. 20 *And they watched *him*, and sent foorth spies, which should faine themselues iust men, to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, wee know that thou say est, and teacheſt right, neither doeſt thou accept mans perſon, but teacheſt the way of God truely.

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cesar tribute, or no?

23 But he perceiued their craftineſſe, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a peny: Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered, and said, Cesars.

Ro. 13. 7. 25 Then he said vnto them, *Giue then vnto Cesar the things which are Cesars, and to God those which are Gods.

26 And they could not reproue his saying before the people: but they marueiled at his answere, and held their peace.

Mat 22. 23 *mar.* 12. 18. 27 * Then came to him certaine of the Sadduces (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

Deu. 25. 5 28 Saying, Master, *Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and hee die without children, that his brother should take *his* wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

29 Now there were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and he died without children.

30 And the second tooke the wife, and he did childleſſe.

31 Then the third tooke her: and so likewise the seuen died, and left no children.

32 And last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore at the resurrection, whose wife of them shall shee be? for seuen had her to wife.

34 Then Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, The children of this world marry wiues, and are married,

35 But they which shalbe counted worthy to enioy that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry wiues, neither are married.

36 For they can die no more, forasmuch as they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the sonnes of God, since they are the children of the resurrection.

Exo. 3. 6. 37 And that the dead shall rise againe, euen * Moses shewed it beside the bush, when he said, The Lord *is* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob.

38 For he is not the God of the dead, but of them which liue: for all liue vnto him.

39 Then certaine of the Scribes answered and said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, durst they not aske him any thing at all.

41 ¶ *Then

41 ¶ * Then said he vnto them, How say they that Christ is Dauids sonne? *Matt.22. 44.marke 12. 35.*

42 And Dauid himself saith in the booke of the Psalmes, *The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit at my right hand, *Ps.110.1*

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footestoole.

44 Seeing Dauid called him Lord, how is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, hee said vnto his disciples,

46 * Beware of the Scribes, which willingly goe in long robes, and loue salutations in the markets, and the highest seates in the assemblies, and the chiefe roumes at feasts: *Chap. 11. 43. mat. 23. 6.*

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and in shew make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation. *mar. 12. 38.*

CHAP. XXI.

1 *The widowes liberalitie aboue her riches.* 5 *Of the time of the destruction of the Temple,* 19 *and Hierusalem.* 25 *The signes going before the last iudgement.*

AND *as he beheld, he saw the rich men, which cast their giftes into the treasurie. *Mar.12. 42.*

2 And he saw also a certaine poore widow which cast in thither two mites

3 And he said, Of a trueth I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For they all haue of their superfluitie cast into the offrings of God: but she of her penurie hath cast in all ỹ liuing that she had.

5 * Now as some spake of the Temple, how it was garnished with goodly stones, and with consecrate things, he said, *Chap. 19. 43. mat.*

6 Are these the things that yee looke vpon? the dayes will come, wherein a stone shall not be left vpon a stone, that shall not bee throwen downe. *24. 1. mar. 13.1*

7 Then they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things bee? and what signe *shall* there *be* when these things shall come to passe?

8 * And he sayd, Take heed that ye be not deceiued: for many will come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and the time draweth neere: follow ye not them therefore. *Ephe.5.6. 2.thes.2.3*

9 And when ye heare of warres and seditions, be not afraid: for these things must first come, but the ende followeth not by and by.

10 Then said he vnto them, Nation shal rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome.

11 * And great earthquakes shall be in diuers places, and hunger, and pestilence, and feareful things, and great signes shal there be from heauen. *Mat. 24.7 mar. 13.8*

12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute *you*, deliuering you vp to the assemblies, and into prisons, and bring you before kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And this shall turne to you for a testimoniall.

Chap. 12. 11. matt. 14 * Lay it vp therefore in your hearts, that ye cast not before hand, what ye shall answere.

10. 19. marke 13. 11. 15 For I wil giue you a mouth and wisedom, where against all your aduersaries shall not be able to speake, nor resist.

16 Yea, yee shalbe betrayed also of your parents, and of your brethren, and kinsmen, and friends, and *some* of you shall they put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake.

Mat. 10. 30. 18 * Yet there shall not one haire of your heads perish.

Dan 9. 27 matt. 24. 15. mar. 13. 14. 19 By your patience possesse your soules.

20 ¶ * And when ye see Hierusalem besieged with souldiers, then vnderstand that the desolation thereof is neere.

21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee to the mountaines, and let them which are in the middes thereof, depart out: and let not them that are in the countrey enter therein.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to fulfill all things that are written.

23 But woe *be* to them that bee with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes: for there shal be great distresse in this land, and wrath ouer this people.

24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword, and shall bee led captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shal be troden vnder foote of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles bee fulfilled.

Isa. 13. 10 ezek 32. 7 mat. 24. 29 mar. 13. 24. 25 * Then there shalbe signes in the Sunne and in the Moone, and in the Starres, and vpon the earth trouble among the nations with perplexitie: the sea and the waters shall roare.

26 And mens hearts shall faile them for feare, and for looking after those things which shall come on the world: for the powers of heauen shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a cloud, with power and great glory.

Ro. 8. 27. 28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then looke vp, and lift vp your heads: for your redemption draweth neere.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the figge tree and all trees,

30 When they now shoot forth, ye seeing them, know of your owne selues, that summer is then neere.

31 So likewise, yee, when yee see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is neere,

32 Verely

32 Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all *these* things be done:

33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

34 * Take heed to your selues, least at any time your hearts be oppressed with surfetting and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and lest that day come on you at vnwares. *Rom.* 13. 13.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch therefore, and pray continually, that yee may bee counted worthy to escape all these things that shal come to passe, and that ye may stand before the Sonne of man.

37 ¶ Nowe in the day time hee taught in the Temple, and at night he went out, & abode in the mount that is called *the mount* of Olives:

38 And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

CHAP. XXII.

3 *Iudas selleth Christ.* 7 *The Apostles prepare the Passeouer.* 24 *They striue who should bee chiefest.* 31 *Satan desireth them.* 35 *Christ sheweth that they wanted nothing.* 42 *Hee prayeth in the mount.* 44 *Hee sweateth bloud.* 50 *Malchus eare cut off and healed.* 57. 58. 60 *Peter denieth Christ thrise.* 63 *Christ is mocked and stroken.* 69 *He confesseth himselfe to be the Sonne of God.*

NOw * the feast of vnleauened bread drewe neere, which is called the Passeouer. *Mat.* 26. 1 *mar.* 14. 1

2 And the hie Priests and Scribes sought how they mighth kil him: for they feared the people.

3 * Then entred Satan into Iudas, who was called Iscariot, and was of the number of the twelue. *Matt.* 26. 14. *mar.* 14. 10.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the hie Priests and captaines, how he might betray him to them.

5 So they were glad, and agreed to giue him money.

6 And he consented, and sought opportunitie to betray him vnto them when the people were away.

7 ¶ * Then came the day of vnleauened bread, when the Passeouer must be sacrificed. *Mat.* 26. 17. *mar.* 14. 13.

8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe and prepare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate it.

9 And they said to him, Where wilt thou that we prepare it?

10 Then he said vnto them, Behold, when ye be entred into the citie, there shall a man meete you, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house that he entreth in,

11 And say vnto the goodman of the house, The Master saith vnto

vnto thee, Where is the lodging where I shall eate my Passeouer with my disciples?

12 Then hee shall shew you a great hie chamber trimmed: there make it readly.

13 So they went, and found as hee had said vnto them, and made ready the Passeouer.

Mat.26. 14 * And when the houre was come, hee sate downe, and the
20.*mar.* twelue Apostles with him.
14. 17. 15 Then he said vnto them, I haue earnestly desired to eat this Passeouer with you, before I suffer.

16 For I say vnto you, Hencefoorth I will not eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thanks, and said, Take this and diuide it among you.

18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit of the vine, vntill the kingdome of God be come.

Mat.26. 19 * And he tooke bread, and when he had giuen thankes, he
26.*mar.* brake it and gaue to them, saying, This is my body, which is gi-
14.22. uen for you: doe this in the remembrance of me.
1.*cor.*11. 20 Likewise also after supper, *he tooke* the cup, saying, This cup
24. *is* that new Testament in my Blood, which is shed for you,

Mat.26. 21 *Yet behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me
21.*mar.* at the table.
14. 18. 22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth as it is appointed: but
*psal.*41.9. woe *be* to that man, by whom he is betrayed.

23 Then they began to enquire among themselues, which of them it should be, that should doe that.

Mat.20. 24 ¶ * And there arose also a strife among them, which of them
25.*mar.* should seeme to bee the greatest.
10. 42. 25 But he said vnto them, The Kings of the Gentiles regneouer them, & they that beare rule oner them are called bountifull.

26 But ye *shall* not *be so*: but let the greatest among you bee as the least: and the chiefest as he that serueth.

27 For who is greater, he that sitteth at table, or he that serueth? Is not he the sitteth at table? And I am among you as he that serueth.

28 And ye are they which haue continued with me in my tentations:

29 Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed vnto me,

Mat.19. 30 * That ye may eat, and drinke at my table in my kingdome,
28. and sit on seates, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel.
1.*Pet.*5.8. 31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, Behold, * Satan hath desired you, to winnow you as wheat.

32 But

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not: therefore when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy brethren.

33 * And he said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee into prison, and to death. *Matth.26. 34.mar.*

34 But he said, I tell thee Peter, the cocke shall not crowe this day, before thou hast thrise denied that thou knewest mee. *14.30. Ioh.13.38*

35 ¶ And he said vnto them, * When I sent you without bag, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing. *Mat.10.9*

36 Then he said to them, But now he that hath a bagge, let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and he that hath none, let him sell his coate and buy a sword.

37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same which is written, must be performed in me, * Euen with the wicked was he numbred: for doubtlesse those things which *are written* of me, haue an end. *Isa.53.12*

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And hee said vnto them, It is enough.

39 ¶ * And hee came out, and went (as hee was wont) to the mount of Olives: and his disciples also followed him. *Mat.26. 36.mar.*

40 * And when he came to the place, he said to them, Pray, lest ye enter into tentation. *14.32. Ioh.18.1.*

41 And hee was drawen aside from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed, *Mat.26. 41.mar.*

42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cup from mee: neuertheless, not my will, but thine be done. *14.38.*

43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from heauen, comforting him.

44 But being in an agonie, hee prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was like drops of blood, trickling downe to the ground.

45 And he rose vp from prayer, and came to *his* disciples, and found them sleeping for heauinesse.

46 And he said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

47 ¶ * And while he yet spake, behold, a company, and he that was called Iudas one of the twelue, went before them, and came neere vnto Iesus to kisse him. *Mat.26. 47.mar. 14.43.*

48 And Iesus said vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse? *Ioh. 18.3*

49 Now when they which were about him, sawe what would follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shall we smite with sword?

50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and stroke off his right eare.

51 Then Iesus answered, and said, Suffer *them* thus farre: and he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus said vnto the hie Priests, and captaines of the

Temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as vnto a thiefe with swords and staues?

53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, yee stretched not forth the hands against me: but this is your very houre, and the power of darkenesse.

Mat.26.58. 54 ¶ * Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to the hie Priests house. And Peter followed afarre off.

Mat.26.58,69. mar.14.66.iohn 18.25. 55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the mids of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter also sate downe among them.

56 And a certaine maide beheld him as he sate by the fire, and hauing well looked on him, said, This man was also with him.

57 But he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while, another man saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euen this man was with him: for he is also a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly, while he yet spake, the cocke crew.

61 Then the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how hee had said vnto him, * Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrice.

Mat.26.34.iohn 13.38. 62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

Mat.26.67.mar. 14.65. 63 ¶ * And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and strooke him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecie who it is that smote thee.

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

Mat.27.1 mar.15.1 iob.18.28 66 * And assoone as it was day, the elders of the people, and the high Priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their Councel,

67 Saying, Art thou that Christ? tel vs. And he said vnto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeue it.

68 And if I also aske you, ye will not answer me, nor let me go.

69 Hereafter shal the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said vnto them, Ye say that I am.

71 Then said they, What need we any further witnesse? for we our selues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *Hee is accused before Pilate.* 7 *Hee is sent to Herod.* 11 *Hee is mocked.* 24 *Pilate yeeldeth him vp to the Iewes request.* 27 *The*

The women bewaile him. 33 Hee is crucified. 39 One of the theeues reuileth him: 43 The other is saued by faith. 45 Hee dieth. 53 He is buried.

THen the whole multitude of them arose, and ledde him vnto Pilate. *Matth.27. 21.mar.*

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We haue found this man peruerting the nation, *and forbidding to pay tribute to Cesar, saying, That he is Christ a King. *12.17. Matth.27 11.mar.*

3 *And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he answered him, and said, Thou sayest it. *15.2.Iohn 18.33.*

4 Then said Pilate to the hie Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 But they were the more fierce, saying, He mooueth the people, teaching throughout all Iudea, beginning at Galile euen to this place.

6 Now when Pilate heard of Galile, hee asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And when he knew that he was of Herods iurisdiction, hee sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusalem in those dayes.

8 And when Herod saw Iesus, hee was exceedingly glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and trusted to haue seene some signe done by him.

9 Then questioned he with him of many things: but hee answered him nothing.

10 The high Priests also and Scribes stood forth, and accused him vehemently.

11 And Herod with his men of warre, despised him, and mocked him, and arayed him in white, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were enemies one to another.

13 Then Pilate called together the high Priests and the rulers, and the people,

14 *And sayd vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto mee, as one that peruerted the people: and behold, I haue examined him before you, and haue found no fault in this man, of those things whereof ye accuse him: *Mat.27. 23.mar. 106.18.34*

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him: and loe, nothing worthy of death, is done of him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

17 (For of necessitie hee must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast)

18 Then all the multitude cried at once, saying, Away with him, and deliuer vnto vs Barabbas:

19 Which

19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, and murther, was cast into prison.

20 Then Pilate spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose.

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him.

22 And he said vnto them the third time, But what euil hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

23 But they were instant with loud voices, and required that hee might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the high Priests preuailed.

24 So Pilate gaue sentence, that it should bee as they required.

25 And hee let loose vnto them him that for insurrection and murther was cast into prison, whom they desired, and deliuered Iesus to doe with him what they would.

Mat.27. 32.mar. 15.21. 26 ¶ * And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene comming out of the field, and on him they layd the crosse, to beare it after Iesus.

27 And there followed him a great multitude of people and of women, which women bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, and sayd, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for mee, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.

29 For behold, the dayes will come when men shal say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, and the pappes which neuer gaue sucke.

Isa.2.19. hose.10.8 reu.6.18. 1.Pet.4. 17. Mat.27. 38.mar. 15.27. Iob.19.18 30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, * Fall on vs: and to the hilles, Couer vs.

31 * For if they doe these things to a greene tree, what shal be done to the drie?

32 * And there were two others, which were euill doers, led with him to be slaine.

33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Caluary, there they crucified him, and the euill doers, one at the right hand, and the other at the left.

34 Then said Iesus, Father, forgiue them: for they know not what they doe. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood and beheld: and the rulers mocked him with them, saying, He saued others: let him saue himselfe, if he be that Christ, the chosen of God.

36 The souldiers also mocked him, and came and offered him vineger,

37 And said, If thou be the King of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription was also written ouer him, in Greeke letters,

letters, and in Latine, and in Hebrewe, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the euill doers, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answered, and rebuked him, saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 We are in deed righteously *here*: for we receiue things worthy of that we haue done: but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And hee said vnto Iesus, Lord, remember mee, when thou commest into thy kingdome.

43 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 ¶ And it was about the sixt houre: and there was a darkenesse ouer all the land vntill the ninth houre.

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple rent through the mids.

46 And Iesus cryed with a loud voice, and sayd, * Father, into thine hands I commend my spirit. And when he thus had said, he gaue vp the ghost. *Psal.31.6*

47 ¶ Now when the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Of a surety this man was iust.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance stood afarre off, and the women that followed him from Galile, beholding these things.

50 ¶ * And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, which was a Counseller, a good man and a iust. *Mat.27. 57 mar.*

51 He did not consent to the counsell and deed of them, *which was* of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes: who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of God. *15.43. ioh.19.38*

52 He went vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus,

53 And tooke it downe, and wrapped it in a linnen cloth, and layd it in a tombe, hewen out of a rocke, wherein was neuer man yet layd.

54 And that day was the preparation, & the Sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also that followed after, which came with him from Galile, beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned and prepared odours and ointments, and rested the Sabbath *day*, according to the commandement.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 *The women come to the sepulchre.* 9 *They report that which they heard of the Angels vnto the Apostles.* 13 *(hr ſt doeth accompany two going to Emaus.* 27 *Hee expoundeth the Scriptures vnto them.* 39 *Hee offereth himselfe to his Apostles to bee handled.*

handled. 49 *He promiseth the holy Ghost.* 51 *Hee is carried into heauen.*

Mar 16.1 *Iohn* 20.1 NOw the * first *day* of the weeke early in the morning, they came vnto the sepulchre, and brought the odours, which they had prepared, and certaine *women* with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre,

3 And went in, but found not the body of the Lord Iesus.

4 And it came to passe, that as they were amased thereat, behold, two men suddenly stood by them in shining vestures.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said to them, Why seeke ye him that liueth, among the dead?

Cha.9.22. mat.17. 23.mar. 9.31. 6 He is not here, but is risen: remember * how he spake vnto you, when he was yet in Galile,

7 Saying, that the Sonne of man must bee deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, & be crucified, and the third day rise again.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things vnto the eleuen, and to all the remnant.

10 Now it was Mary Magdalene, and Ioanna, and Mary the mother of Iames, and other women with them, which told these things vnto the Apostles.

11 But their wordes seemed vnto them, as a fained thing, neither beleeued they them.

Ioh. 20.6. 12 *Then arose Peter, and ranne vnto the sepulchre, and looked in, and saw the linnen clothes layd by themselues, and departed, wondring in himselfe at that which was come to passe.

Mark.16 12. 13 ¶ * And behold, two of them went that same day to a towne which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlongs, called Emmaus.

14 And they talked together of all these things that were done.

15 And it came to passe as they communed together, and reasoned, that Iesus himselfe drew neere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they could not know him.

17 And hee said vnto them, What maner of communications are these that ye haue one to another as ye walke, and are sad?

18 And the one (named Cleopas) answered, and said vnto him, Art thou only a stranger in Hierusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to passe therein in these dayes?

19 And he said vnto them, What things? And they said vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mighty in deede and in word before God, and all the people,

20 And how the high Priests and our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But

21 But we trusted that it had been he that should haue deliuered Israel, and as touching all these things, to day is the third day, that they were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women among vs made vs astonied, which came early vnto the sepulchre.

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of Angels which said that he was aliue.

24 Therefore certaine of them which were with vs, went to the sepulchre, and found it euen so as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then he said vnto them, O fooles and slow of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And he began at Moses, and at all the Prophets, and interpreted vnto them in all the Scriptures the things which were *written* of him.

28 And they drew neere vnto the towne, which they went to, but he made as though hee would haue gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs: for it is toward night, and the day is farre spent. So he went in to tarie with them.

30 And it came to passe as he sate at table with them, he tooke the bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gaue it to them.

31 Then their eyes were opened, and they knew him: and hee was no more seene of them.

32 And they said betweene themselues, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, and when he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the Elenen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 Then they told what things *were* done in the way, and how he was knowen of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ * And as they spake these things, Iesus himselfe stood in the mids of them, and said vnto them, Peace *be* to you. *Mat.28. 14.Iohn 20.19.*

37 But they were abashed and afraid, supposing that they had seene a spirit.

38 Then he said vnto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore doe doubts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold mine hands and my feet: for it is I my selfe: handle me, and see: for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue,

40 And when hee had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands and feete.

41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioy, and wondered, he said vnto them, Haue ye here any meate?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fish, and of an honie combe.

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And he said vnto them, These are the words which I spake vnto you, while I was yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which are written of me in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes.

45 Then opened he their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And said vnto them, Thus it is written, & thus it behooued Christ to suffer, and to rise againe from the dead the third day,

47 And that repentance and remission of sinnes should be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 Now yee are witnesses of these things.

Ioh.15. *26.acts* *1.4.* 49 And behold, I doe send the *promise of my Father vpon you: but tarie yee in the citie of Hierusalem, vntill ye be endued with power from on hie.

50 Afterward hee led them out into Bethania, and lift vp his hands, and blessed them.

Mar.16. *19.acts* *1.9.* 51 And it came to passe, that as he blessed them, *he departed from them, and was caried vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy,

53 And were continually in the Temple, praising and lauding God. Amen.

¶THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS Christ according to Iohn.

CHAP. I.

1 *That Word begotten of God before all worlds,* 2 *and which was euer with the Father,* 14 *is made man.* 6 7 *For what end Iohn was sent from God.* 16 *His preaching of Christs office:* 19.20 *The record that he gaue out vnto the Priests.* 40 *The calling of Andrew,* 42 *of Peter,* 43 *Philip,* 45 *and Nathanael.*

IN the beginning was the Word, and that Word was with God, and that Word was God.

2 This same was in the beginning with God.

Col.1.16 3 *All things were made by it, and without it vvas made nothing that vvas made.

4 In

4 In it was life, and that life was the light of men.
5 And that light shineth in the darkenesse, and the darkenesse comprehended it not.
6 ¶ *There was a man sent from God, whose name *was* Iohn. *Mat 3.1.*
7 *This* same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of that light, that all men through him might beleeue. *mar.1.4 luke 3.2.*
8 Hee was not that light, but *was sent* to beare witnesse of that light.
9 This was the true light, which lighteneth euery man that commeth into the world.
10 He was in the world, and the world was *made by him: and the world knew him not: *Heb.11.3*
11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.
12 But as many as receiued him, to them hee gaue prerogatiue to be the sonnes of God, *euen* to them that beleeue in his Name,
13 Which are borne not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.
14 *And that Word was made flesh, and dwelt among vs, (and we saw *the glory thereof, as the glory of the onely begotten *Sonne* of the Father) full of grace and trueth. *Mat.1.16 Mat.17.2 2 pet.1.*
15 ¶ Iohn bare witnesse of him, and cried, saying, This was hee of whom I said, Hee that commeth after mee, was before me: for he was better then I. *17.*
16 * And of his fulnesse haue all wee receiued, and grace for grace. *Col.1.19. and 2.9.*
17 For the Law was giuen by Moses: but grace, and trueth came by Iesus Christ.
18 *No man hath seene God at any time: that onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him. *1.Tim.6. 16.1.Iohn 4.12.*
19 ¶ Then this is the recorde of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priestes and Leuites from Hierusalem, to aske him, Who art thou?
20 And he confessed and denied not, and sayd plainely, I *am not that Christ. *Acts 13. 25.*
21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he said, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he answered, No.
22 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou, that wee may giue an answere to them that sent vs? what sayest thou of thy selfe?
23 Hee sayd, I *am the voice of him that crieth in the wildernesse, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias. *Isa.40.3. mat.3.3. luke 3.4.*
24 Now they which were sent, were of the Pharises.
25 And they asked him, & said vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, neither Elias, nor that Prophet?

26 Iohn

26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there is one among you, whom ye know not.

Mat.3.11 27 * Hee it is that commeth after me, which was before me:
mar.1.7. whose shooe latchet I am not worthy to vnloose.
luke 3.16. 28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordan, where
actes 1.5. Iohn did baptize.
and 11.16 29 ¶ The next day Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and
and 19.4. sayth, Behold that Lambe of God, which taketh away the sinne of the world.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me commeth a man, which was before me: for he was better then I.

31 And I knew him not: but because he should be declared to Israel, therefore am I come, baptizing with water.

Mat.3.16 32 So Iohn bare record, saying, I beheld * that Spirit come
mar.1.10 downe from heauen like a doue, and it abode vpon him.
luke 3.22. 33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, he said vnto me, Vpon whom thou shalt see the spirit come downe, and tarie still on him, that is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare record, that this is that Sonne of God.

35 ¶ The next day Iohn stood againe and two of his disciples.

36 And he beheld Iesus walking by, and said, Beholde the Lambe of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned about, and saw them follow, and said vnto them, What seeke ye? And they said vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say by interpretation, Master) where dwellest thou?

39 Hee said vnto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 Andrew Simon Peters brother, was one of the two which had heard it of Iohn, and that followed him.

41 The same found his brother Simon first, and said vnto him, Wee haue found that Messias, which is by interpretation, that Christ.

42 And he brought him to Iesus. And Iesus beheld him, and said, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43 ¶ The day following, Iesus would go into Galile, and found Philip, and said vnto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip found Nathanael, and said vnto him, We haue found him,

him of whom *Moſes did write in the Law, and the *Prophets, Ieſus that ſonne of Ioſeph, that was of Nazareth. *Gen.39.*
deut.
18.18.

46 Then Nathanael ſaid vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip ſaid vnto him, Come and ſee. *Iſa.4.2.*

47 Ieſus ſaw Nathanael comming to him, and ſaid of him, Behold indeed an Iſraelite, in whom is no guile. *& 42.10*
and 45.8.

48 Nathanael ſaid vnto him, Whence kneweſt thou me? Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou waſt vnder the figtree, I ſaw thee. *ierem.23.5.*
& 33.14.
eze.34.23

49 Nathanael anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Rabbi, thou art the Sonne of God: thou art the King of Iſrael. *& 37.24.*
dan.9.24.

50 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Becauſe I ſaid vnto thee, I ſaw thee vnder the figtree, beleeueſt thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things then theſe.

51 And he ſaid vnto him, Verely verely I ſay vnto you, hereafter ſhall yee ſee heauen open, and the Angels of God *aſcending and deſcending vpon the Sonne of man. *Gen.28.*
12.

CHAP. II.

1 Chriſt turneth water into wine, 11 which was the beginning of his miracles. 12 He goeth downe to Capernaum, 13 from thence he goeth vp to Hieruſalem, 15 and caſteth the marchandiſe out of the Temple. 19 He foretelleth that the Temple, that is his body, ſhall be deſtroyed of the Iewes. 23 Many beleeue in him, ſeeing the miracles which he did.

AND the third day was there a mariage in Cana a towne of Galile, and the mother of Ieſus was there.

2 And Ieſus was called alſo, & his diſciples vnto the mariage.

3 Now when the wine failed, the mother of Ieſus ſayd vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother ſayd vnto the ſeruants, Whatſoeuer he ſaith vnto you, doe it.

6 And there were ſet there, ſixe water pots of ſtone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, containing two or three firkins a piece.

7 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Fill the water pots with water. Then they filled them vp to the brimme.

8 Then hee ſaid vnto them, Draw out now and beare vnto the gouernour of the feaſt. So they bare it.

9 Now when the gouernour of the feaſt had taſted the water that was made wine, (for hee knew not whence it was: but the ſeruants, which drewe the water, knew) the gouernour of the feaſt called the bridegrome,

10 And

10 And said vnto him, All men at the beginning set foorth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept backe the good wine vntill now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana *a towne* of Galile, and shewed forth his glory: and his disciples beleeued on him.

12 After that he went downe into Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: but they continued not many dayes there.

13 For the Iewes Passeouer was at hand. Therefore Iesus went vp to Hierusalem;

14 And hee found in the Temple those that solde oxen, and sheepe, and doues, and changers of money, sitting *there*.

15 Then he made a scourge of small cords, and draue them all out of the Temple with the sheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables,

16 And said vnto them that solde doues, Take these things hence: make not my Father house, an house of merchandise.

Psal.69.9 17 And his disciples remembred, that it was written, * The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp.

18 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, that thou doest these things?

Matt.26. 61. and 27 40. mark. 14.58. & 15.29. 19 Iesus answered and said vnto them, Destroy this Temple, and in three dayes I will raise it vp againe.

20 Then said the Iewes, Fortie and sixe yeres was this Temple a building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the Temple of his bodie.

22 Assoone therefore as hee was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that hee thus said vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the word which Iesus had said.

23 Now when hee was at Hierusalem, at the Passeouer in the feast, many beleeued in his Name, when they saw his miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because hee knew them all,

25 And had not neede that any should testifie of man: for hee knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the very principles of Christian regeneration. 14 The serpent in the wildernesse. 23 Iohn baptizeth, 27 and teacheth his that he is not Christ.

THere was now a man of the Pharises named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes.

2 This *man* came to Iesus by night, and said vnto him, Rabbi,

we

we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man could doe these miracles that thou doest, except God were with him.

3 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man be borne againe, hee cannot see the kingdome of God.

4 Nicodemus said vnto him, How can a man be borne which is olde? can hee enter into his mothers wombe againe, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except that a man bee borne of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I said to thee, Ye must be borne againe.

8 The winde bloweth were it listeth, and thou hearest the sound therof, but canst not tell whence it commeth, and whither it goeth: so is euery man that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and said vnto him, How can these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Art thou a teacher of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, we speake that we know, and testifie that we haue seene: but ye receiue not our witnesse.

12 If when I tel you earthly things ye beleeue not, how should ye beleeue, if I shall tell you of heauenly things?

13 For no man ascendeth vp to heauen, but hee that hath descended from heauen, that Sonne of man which is in heauen.

14 *And as Moses lift vp the serpent in the wildernesse, so must that Sonne of man be lift vp, *Num. 21. 9. chap.*

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue eternall life. 12. 32.

16 *For God so loued the world, that he hath giuen his onely begotten Sonne, that whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life. *1. Iob. 4. 9.*

17 *For God sent not his Sonne into the world, that he should condemne the world, but that the world through him might be saued. *Chap. 9. 39. and 12. 47.*

18 He that beleeueth in him, is not condemned: but hee that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because hee hath not beleeued in the Name of that onely begotten Sonne of God.

19 *And this is the condemnation, that that light came into the world, and men loued darknesse rather then that light, because their deedes were euill, *Chap. 1. 9.*

20 For

20 For euery man that euil doth, hateth the light, neither commeth to light, least his deedes should be reproued.

21 But hee that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes might be made manifest, that they are wrought according to God.

22 ¶ After these things came Iesus and his disciples into the
Chap. 4.1. land of Iudea, and there taried with them, and * baptized.

23 And Iohn also baptized in Enon beside Salim, because there was much water there, and they came and were baptized.

24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 Then there arose a question betweene Iohns disciples and the Iewes, about purifying.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and said vnto him, Rabbi, he
Chap. 1.34 that was with thee beyond Iordan, to whom * thou bearest witnesse, behold he baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 Iohn answered, and said, A man can receiue nothing except it be giuen him from heauen.

Chap. 1.2. 28 Ye your selues are my witnesses, that I * said, I am not that Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 Hee that hath the bride, is the bridegrome: but the friend of the bridegrome which standeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatly because of the bridegomes voyce. This my ioy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I *must* decrease.

31 He that is come from on high, is aboue all: he that is of the earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: hee that is come from heauen, is aboue all:

32 And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth: but no man receiueth his testimonie.

Rom. 3.4. 33 Hee that hath receiued his testimonie, hath sealed that * God is true.

34 For hee whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giueth *him* not the Spirit by measure.

Mat. 11. 27. 35 The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath * giuen all things into his hand.

Abac. 2.4 1. *Iohn* 5. 10. 36 * He that beleeueth in the Sonne, hath euerlasting life and he that obeyeth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAP. IIII.

6 Iesus being wearie asketh drinke of the woman of Samaria. 21 He teacheth the true worship. 26 He confesseth that he is the Messias 32 His meate. 39 The Samaritanes beleeue in him. 46 He healeth the rulers sonne.

Now

NOw when the Lord knew, how the Phariſes had heard, that Ieſus made * and baptized moe diſciples then Iohn, *Cha.3.22*
2 (Though Ieſus himſelfe baptized not: but his diſciples)
3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile.
4 And he muſt needes goe through Samaria.
5 Then came he to a citie of Samaria called Sychar, neere vnto the poſſeſſion that * Iacob gaue to his Sonne Ioſeph. *Gene. 33.*
6 And there was Iacobs well. Ieſus then wearied in the iourney, ſate thus on the well: it was about the ſixt houre. *19 & 48. 22. ioſh. 24.32.*
7 There came a woman of Samaria to draw water. Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Giue me drinke.
8 For his diſciples were gone away into the citie, to buy meate.
9 Then ſaid the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it, that thou being a Iewe, askeſt drinke of me, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritanes.
10 Ieſus anſwered and ſaid vnto her, If thou kneweſt that gift of God, and who it is that ſaith vnto thee, Giue mee drinke, thou wouldeſt haue asked of him, and he hee would haue giuen thee water of life.
11 The woman ſaid vnto him, Syr, thou haſt nothing to drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence then haſt thou that water of life?
12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and he himſelfe dráke thereof, and his ſonnes, and his cattel?
13 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto her, Whoſoeuer drinketh of this water ſhall thirſt againe.
14 But whoſoeuer drinketh of the water that I ſhall giue him, ſhall neuer be more athirſt: but the water that I ſhall giue him, ſhalbe in him a well of water ſpringing vp into euerlaſting life.
15 The woman ſaid vnto him, Sir, giue me of that water, that I may not thirſt, neither come hither to draw.
16 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Go call thine husbād, and come hither.
17 The woman anſwered, and ſaid, I haue no husband. Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Thou haſt well ſaid, I haue no husband.
18 For thou haſt had fiue husbands: and hee whom thou now haſt is not thine husband: that ſaiedſt thou truely.
19 The woman ſayd vnto him, Sir, I ſee that thou art a Prophet.
20 Our Fathers worſhipped in this mountaine, and ye ſay that in * Hieruſalem is the place where men ought to worſhip. *Deu.12.6*
21 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Woman, beleeue me, the houre commeth when ye ſhall neither in this mountaine, nor at Hieruſalem worſhip the Father.

22 Ye

2.Kings 17. 29. 22 Ye worshippe that which yee * know not: we worshippe that which we know: for saluation is of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worshippe the Father in spirit and trueth: for the Father requireth euen such to worshippe him.

2.Cor.3. 27. 24 * God is a spirit, and they that worshippe him, must worshippe him in spirit and trueth.

25 The woman said vnto him, I know well that Messias shall come which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs all things.

26 Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that speake vnto thee.

27 ¶ And vpon that came his disciples, and marueiled that he talked with a woman: yet no man said vnto him, What askest thou? or why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the citie, and said to the men,

29 Come, see a man that hath told mee all things that euer I did: is not he that Christ?

30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him.

31 ¶ In the meane while, the disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eate.

32 But he said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye know not of.

33 Then said the disciples betweene themselues, Hath any man brought him meate?

34 Iesus said vnto them, My meate is that I may doe the will of him that sent me, and finish his worke.

35 Say not yee, There are yet foure moneths, and *then* commeth harueste? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on the regions: * for they are white already vnto harueste.

Mat.9.37 Luke 10.2. 35 And he that reapeth, receiueth reward, and gathereth fruit vnto life eternall, that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, might reioyce together.

37 For herein is the saying true, that one soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reape that, whereon yee bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labors.

39 Now many of the Samaritans of that citie beleeued in him for the saying of the woman which testified, He hath told me all things that euer I did.

40 Then when the Samaritans were come vnto him, they besought him, that he would tarie with them: and hee abode there two dayes.

41 And many moe beleeued because of his owne word.

42 And

42 And they ſaid vnto the woman, Now wee beleeue not because of thy ſaying: for wee haue heard him our ſelues, and know that this is indeed that Chriſt the Sauiour of the world.

43 ¶ So two dayes after hee departed thence, and went into Galile.

44 For Ieſus himſelfe had teſtified, * that a Prophet hath none honour in his owne countrey. *Mat.13. 57.marke 6.4. luke 4.24.*

45 Then when he was come into Galile, the Galileans receiued him, which had ſeene all the things that hee did at Hieruſalem at the feaſt: for they went alſo vnto the feaſt.

46 And Ieſus came againe into * Cana *a towne* of Galile where he had made of water wine. And there was a certaine ruler, whoſe ſonne was ſicke at Capernaum. *Chap. 2. 1,12.*

47 When hee heard that Ieſus was come out of Iudea into Galile, hee went vnto him, and beſought him that hee would goe downe and heale his ſonne: for he was euen ready to die.

48 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto him, Except yee ſee ſignes and wonders, ye will not beleeue.

49 The ruler ſaid vnto him, Sir, goe downe before my ſonne die.

50 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Goe thy way, thy ſonne liueth: and the man beleeued the word that Ieſus had ſpoken vnto him, and went his way.

51 And as hee was now going downe, his ſeruants met him, ſaying, Thy ſonne liueth.

52 Then enquired hee of them the houre when he began to amend. And they ſaid vnto him, Yeſterday the ſeuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 Then the father knewe, that it was the ſame houre in the which Ieſus had ſaid vnto him, Thy ſonne liueth. And hee beleeued, and all his houſhold.

54 This ſecond miracle did Ieſus againe, after hee was come out of Iudea into Galile.

CHAP. V.

2 *One lying at the poole,* 5 *is healed of Chriſt on the Sabbath:* 10 *The Iewes that vrgeth finde fault with that his deede,* 17 *he conuinceth with the authoritie of his Father.* 19. 20 *He proueth his diuine power by many reaſons,* 45 *and with Moſes teſtimonie.*

AFter * that, there was a feaſt of the Iewes, and Ieſus went vp to Hieruſalem. *Leu.23.3. deut.16.1*

2 And there is at Hieruſalem by the place of the ſheepe, a poole called in Hebrew Bethesda, hauing fiue porches.

3 In the which lay a great multitude of ſicke folke, of blinde, halte, and withered, waiting for the mouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then first after the stirring of the water, stepped in, was made whole of whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had beene diseased eight and thirtie yeeres.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, and knewe that he now long time had been diseased, he said vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The sicke man answered him, Sir, I haue no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus said vnto him, Rise, take vp thy bed and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked: and the same day was the Sabbath.

10 The Iewes therefore said to him that was made whole, It is
Ier.17.22 the Sabbath *day*, * It is not lawfull for thee to cary thy bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, hee said vnto me, Take vp thy bed and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed and walke?

13 And hee that was healed, knewe not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed himselfe away from the multitude that was in that place.

14 And after that, Iesus found him in the Temple, and said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole. sinne no more, lest a worse thing come vnto thee.

15 ¶ The man departed, and tolde the Iewes that it was Iesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore the Iewes did persecute Iesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath *day*.

17 But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

Gen 2.3. 18 * Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him: not onely because he had broken the Sabbath: but said also that God was his Father, and made himselfe equall with God.

19 Then answered Iesus, and said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, saue that he seeth the Father doe: for whatsoeuer things he doeth, the same things doeth the Sonne in like maner.

20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all things whatsoeuer he himselfe doeth, and he will shew him greater works then these, that ye should marueile.

21 For likewise as the Father raiseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them, so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For

22 For the Father iudgeth no man, but hath committed all iudgement vnto the Sonne,

23 Because that all men should honour the Sonne, as they honour the Father: he that honoureth not the Sonne, the same honoureth not the Father, which hath sent him.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that heareth my word, and beleeueth in him that sent me, hath euerlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but hath passed from death vnto life.

25 Verely, verely I say vnto you, the houre shall come, and now is, when the dead shall heare the voice of the Sonne of God, and they that heare it, shall liue.

26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe, so likewise hath hee giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe,

27 And hath giuen him power also to execute iudgement, in that he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile not at this: for the houre shall come, in the which all that are in the graues shall heare his voice,

29 And they shall come foorth, * that haue done good, vnto the resurrection of life: but they that haue done euill, vnto the resurrection of condemnation. *Mat. 25. 41.*

30 I can doe nothing of mine owne selfe: as I heare, I iudge: and my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine owne wil, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.

31 If I * should beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse were not true. *Ch. 8. 14.*

32 * There is another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnesse which he beareth of me, is true. *Mat. 3. 17.*

33 * Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnesse vnto the trueth. *Ch. 1. 27.*

34 But I receiue not the record of man: neuertheless these things I say, that ye might be saued.

35 He was a burning, and a shining candle: and yee would for a season haue reioyced in his light.

36 But I haue greater witnesse then the witnesse of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen mee to finish, the same workes that I doe, beare witnesse of me, that the Father sent me.

37 And the * Father himselfe which hath sent me, beareth witnesse of me. Yee haue not heard his voice at any time, * neither haue ye seene his shape. *Mat. 3. 17 and 17. 5. Deu. 4. 12*

38 And his word haue yee not abiding in you: for whome hee hath sent, him ye beleeue not.

39 * Search the Scriptures: for in them ye thinke to haue eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me. *Acts 7. 11.*

40 But you will not come to me, that ye might haue life.

41 I receiue not the praise of men.

42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.
43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me not: if another shall come in his owne name, him will ye receiue.
Chap.12.43. 44 How can ye beleeue, which receiue *honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth of God alone?
45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to my Father: there is one that accuseth you, *euen* Moses, in whom ye trust.
Gen.3.15 & 22.18 & 49.10 Deu.18.15 46 For had ye beleeued Moses, ye would haue beleeued me: *for he wrote of me.
47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, how shall ye beleeue my wordes?

CHAP. VI.

5 Fiue thousand are fed with fiue loaues and two fishes. 15 Christ goeth apart from the people. 17 As his disciples were rowing, 19 he commeth to them walking on the water. 26 Hee reasoneth of the true, 27 and euerlasting 35 bread of life. 41. 52 The Iewes murmure, 60 and many of the disciples 66 depart from him. 69 The Apostles confesse him to be the Sonne of God.

AFter these things, Iesus went his way ouer the sea of Galile, which is Tiberias.
2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.
3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there hee sate with his disciples.
Leui.23.7 deu.16.1. 4 Now the Passeouer, a *feast of the Iewes, was neere.
Mat.14.16.marke 6.37.luke 9.13. 5 *Then Iesus lift vp *his* eyes, and seeing that a great multitude came vnto him, he said vnto Philip, Whence shall wee buy bread, that these might eate?
6 (And this hee said to proouе him: for hee himselfe knewe what he would doe)
7 Philip answered him, Two hundreth penyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that enery one of them may take a little.
8 Then said vnto him one of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother,
9 There is a little boy here, which hath fiue barley loaues, and two fishes: but what are they among so many?
10 And Iesus said, Make the people sit downe. (Now there was much grasse in that place.) Then the men sate downe, in number about fiue thousand.
11 And Iesus tooke the bread, and gaue thankes, and gaue to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set downe: and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.
12 And when they were satisfied, he said vnto his disciples, Gather

ther vp the broken meat which remaineth, that nothing be lost.

13 Then they gathered it together, and filled twelue baskets with the broken meate of the fiue barley loaues, which remained vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then the men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, said, This is of a trueth that Prophet that should come into the world.

15 When Iesus thtrefore perceiued that they would come and take him to make him a King, hee departed againe into a mountaine himselfe alone.

16 ¶ When euen was now come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea,

17 *And entred into a ship, and went ouer the sea towards Capernaum: and now it was darke, and Iesus was not come to them. *Mat.14. 25.marke 6.47.

18 And the sea arose with a great winde that blewe.

19 And when they had rowed about fiue and twentie or thirtie furlongs, they saw Iesus walking on the sea, and drawing neere vnto the ship: so they were afraid.

20 But he said vnto them, It is I: be not afraid.

21 Then willingly they receiued him into the shippe, and the ship was by and by at the land, whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, the people which stood on the other side of the Sea, saw that there was none other shippe there, saue that one, whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with his disciples in the shippe, but that his disciples were gone alone,

23 And that there came other ships from Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they ate the bread, after the Lord had giuen thankes.

24 Now when the people saw that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Iesus answered them, and said, Verely, verely I say vnto you, ye seeke me not because ye saw the miracles, but because yee ate of the loaues, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meate which perisheth, but for the meat that endureth vnto euerlasting life, which the Sonne of man shall giue vnto you: For him hath *God the Father sealed. *Ioh.1.32.

28 Then said they vnto him, What shall we do, that we might worke the workes of God? *mat. 3.17 and 17.3.

29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, *This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue in him whom he hath sent. *1. iohn 3. 23.

30 They said therfore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see it, and beleeue thee? What doest thou worke?

Exod.16. 31 Our Fathers did eate Manna in the desert, as it is * written,
14.num. He gaue them bread from heauen to eate.
11.7.psal. 32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you,
78.25. Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen.

33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then they said vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus said vnto them, I am that bread of life: he that commeth to me, shall not hunger, and he that beleeueth in mee, shall neuer thirst.

36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleeue not.

37 All that the Father giueth me, shall come to me: and him that commeth to me, I cast not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but his will which hath sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath giuen me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent mee, that euery man which seeth the Sonne, and beleeueth in him, should haue euerlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he said, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen.

Mat.13. 42 And they said, * Is not this Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose
55. father and mother we know? how then sayth hee, I came downe from heauen?

43 Iesus then answered, and said vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father, which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

Isa 54.13. 45 It is written in the * Prophets, And they shall be all taught
ier.31.33 of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me:

Mat.11. 46 * Not that any man hath seene the Father, saue hee which
27. is of God, he hath seene the Father.

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleeueth in me, hath euerlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

Exod.16. 49 * Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are
15. dead.

50 This

50 This is that bread which commeth downe from heauen, that he which eateth of it, should not die.

51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen: if any man eat of this bread, he shall liue for euer: & the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world.

52 Then the Iewes stroue among themselues, saying, How can this man giue vs *his* flesh to eate?

53 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you.

54 Whosoeuer * eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day. *1. Cor. 11. 27.

55 For my flesh is meat in deed, & my blood is drinke in deed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As that liuing Father hath sent me, so liue I by the Father, and he that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me.

58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen: not as your Fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. He that eateth of this bread shall liue for euer.

59 These things spake hee in the Synagogue, as hee taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples (when they heard this) said, This is an hard saying: who can heare it?

61 But Iesus knowing in himselfe that his disciples murmured at this said vnto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 *What* then if yee should see that Sonne of man ascend vp * where he was before? *Dan. 3. 13*

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speake vnto you, are spirit and life.

64 But there are some of you that beleeue not: for Iesus knew from the beginning, which they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him.

65 And hee said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 From that time, many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then Iesus said to the twelue, Will ye also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Master, to whome shall we goe? thou hast the words of eternall life:

69 And wee beleeue and know that thou art that Christ that Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I * chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill? *Mat. 26. 16.

71 Now he spake it of Iudas Iscariot the *sonne* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, though he was one of the twelue.

CHAP. VII.

2 *Christ, after his cousins were gone vp to the feast of Tabernacles,* 10 *goeth thither priuily.* 12 *The peoples sundry opinions of him.* 14 *He teacheth in the Temple.* 32 *The Priests command to take him.* 41 *Strife among the multitude about him,* 47 *and between the Pharises and the officers that were sent to take him,* 50 *and Nicodemus.*

AFter these things, Iesus walked in Galile, & would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes sought to kill him.

Leuit.23. 2 Now the Iewes * feast of the Tabernacles was at hand.

34. 3 His brethren therefore said vnto him, Depart hence, and go into Iudea, that thy disciples may see thy workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing secretly, and hee himselfe seeketh to be famous. If thou doest these things, shewe thy selfe to the world.

5 For as yet his brethren beleeued not in him.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway readie.

7 The world cannot hate you: but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill.

8 Goe yee vp vnto this feast: I will not goe vp yet vnto this

Dan.8.20. feast: * for my time is not yet fulfilled.

9 ¶ These things he said vnto them, and abode still in Galile.

10 But assoone as his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as *it were* priuily.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and said, Where is hee?

12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay: but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 Now when halfe the feast was done, Iesus went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How knoweth this man the Scriptures, seeing that he neuer learned?

16 Iesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will doe his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 He that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glory: but hee that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteousnesse is in him.

19 * Did

19 * Did not Moſes giue you a Law, and *yet* none of you kee- *Exo.24.3*
peth the Law? * Why goe ye about to kill me? *Cha.5.12*

20 The people anſwered, and ſaid, Thou haſt a deuill: who go-
eth about to kill thee?

21 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid to them, I haue done one worke,
and ye all marueil.

22 * Moſes therefore gaue vnto you circumciſion, (not becauſe *Leu.12.3.*
it is of Moſes, but of the * fathers) and ye on the Sabbath *day* cir- *Gen.17.*
cumciſe a man. *10.*

23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue circumciſion, that the Law
of Moſes ſhould not be broken, be yee angry with me, becauſe I
haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath *day*?

24 * Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge righ- *Deu.1.16*
teous iudgement.

25 ¶ Then ſaid ſome of them of Hieruſalem, Is not this hee,
whom they goe about to kill?

26 And behold, hee ſpeaketh openly, and they ſay nothing to
him: doe the rulers know indeed that this is indeed that Chriſt?

27 Howbeit wee know this man whence he is: but when that
Chriſt commeth, no man ſhall know whence he is.

28 ¶ Then cryed Ieſus in the Temple as he taught, ſaying, Yee
both know me, and know whence I am: yet am I not come of my
ſelfe, but he that ſent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him: for I am of him, and he hath ſent me.

30 Then they ſought to take him: but no man laid handes on
him, becauſe his houre was not yet come.

31 Now many of the people beleeued in him, and ſaid, When
that Chriſt commeth, will hee doe more miracles then this man
hath done?

32 The Phariſes heard that the people murmured theſe things
of him, and the Phariſes and hie Prieſts ſent officers to take him.

33 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them, Yet am I a little while with you,
and then goe I vnto him that ſent me.

34 *Ye ſhall ſeeke me, and ſhall not finde *me*, and where I am, *Chap.13.*
can ye not come. *33.*

35 Then ſaid the Iewes among themſelues, Whither will he
goe, that we ſhall not finde him? Will he goe vnto them that are
diſperſed among the Grecians, and teach the Grecians?

36 What ſaying is this, that he ſaid, Ye ſhall ſeeke me, and ſhall
not finde *me*? and where I am, cannot ye come?

37 Now in the laſt *and* * great day of the feaſt, Ieſus ſtood and *Leuit.23.*
cryed, ſaying, If any man thirſt, let him come vnto me and drinke. *36.*

38 He that beleeueth in me, * as ſayth the Scripture, out of his *Deut.18.*
belly ſhall flow riuers of water of liſe. *15.*

39 (* This

Ioel 2.28. Act.2.17. 39 (*This spake he of the Spirit, which they that beleeued in him, should receiue: for the holy Ghost was not yet *giuen*, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.)

40 So many of the people, when they heard this saying, sayd,

Deut. 18.15. *Of a trueth, this is that Prophet.

41 Other said, This is that Christ: and some said, But shall that Christ come out of Galile?

Mich.5.2. mat.2.5. 42 *Sayth not the Scripture, that that Christ shall come of the seede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Bethlehem, where Dauid was?

43 So was there dissention among the people for him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 Then came the officers to the hie Priests and Pharises, and they said vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharises, Are ye also deceiued?

48 Doeth any of the rulers, or of the Pharises beleeue in him?

49 But this people which know not the Law, are cursed.

Chap.5.2. 50 Nicodemus said vnto them, (*hee that came to Iesus by night, and was one of them)

Deu.17.8 & 19.15 51 Doeth our Lawe iudge a man before it heare him, *and know what he hath done?

52 They answered, and said vnto him, Art thou also of Galile? Search and looke, for out of Galile ariseth no Prophet.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne house.

CHAP. VIII.

3 The woman taken in adulterie, 11 hath her sinnes forgiuen her. 12 Christ the light of the world. 19 The Pharises aske where his Father is 39 The sons of Abraham. 42 The sonnes of God. 44 The deuill the father of lyme. 56 Abraham saw Christs day.

AND Iesus went vnto the mount of Olives,

2 And early in the morning came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and hee sate downe, and taught them.

3 Then the Scribes and the Pharises brought vnto him a woman taken in adulterie, and set her in the mids,

4 And said vnto him, Master, we found this woman committing adulterie, euen in the very acte.

Leuit.20.10. 5 *Now Moses in our Law commanded, that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore?

6 And this they sayde to tempt him, that they might haue, whereof to accuse him. But Iesus stooped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground.

7 And

7 And while they continued asking him, he lift himselfe vp, and said vnto them, * Let him that is among you without sinne, cast the first stone at her. *Deu.17.7*

8 And againe he stouped downe, and wrote on the ground.

9 And when they heard it, being accused by their owne conscience, they went out one by one, beginning at the eldest euen to the last: so Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the mids.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe againe, and sawe no man, but the woman, he said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man Lord. And Iesus said, Neither doe I condemne thee: goe and sinne no more.

12 Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I * am that light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walke in darknesse, but shall haue that light of life. *Chap. 1.5. and 9.5.*

13 The Pharises therefore said vnto him, Thou beareſt record of thy selfe: thy record is not true.

14 * Iesus answered, & said vnto them, Though I beare record of my selfe, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I goe: but ye cannot tell whence I come, & whither I goe. *Cha.5.31*

15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I iudge no man.

16 And if I also iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I, and the Father that sent me.

17 And it is also written in your Law, * That the testimonie of two men is true. *Deu.17.6 & 19.15.*

18 I am one that beare witnesse of my selfe, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnesse of me. *mat.18. 16.2.cor. 13. Heb. 10.28.*

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is that Father of thine? Iesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor that Father of mine. If yee had knowen me, ye should haue known that Father of mine also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasurie, as he taught in the Temple and no man laid hands on him: for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then said Iesus againe vnto them, I go my way, and ye shall seeke me, & shall die in your sinnes. Whither I go can ye not come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Will he kill himselfe, because he saith, Whither I goe, can ye not come?

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I am from aboue: ye are of this world: I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore vnto you, That ye shall die in your sinnes: for except ye beleeue me, that I am he, ye shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus said vnto them, Euen the same thing that I said vnto you from the beginning.

26 I haue

26 I haue many things to say, and to iudge of you: but he that sent me, is true, and the things that I haue heard of him, those speake I to the world.

27 They vnderstood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then sayde Iesus vnto them, When yee haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then shall yee know that I am hee, and that I doe nothing of my selfe, but as my Father hath taught me, so I speake these things.

29 For he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me aloue, because I doe alwayes those things that please him.

30 ¶ As he spake these things, many beleeued in him.

31 Then said Iesus to the Iewes which beleeued in him, If ye continue in my word, ye are verely my disciples,

32 And shall know the trueth, and the trueth shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were neuer bond to any man: why sayest thou then, Ye shalbe made free?

34 Iesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the * seruant of sinne.

Rom.6.
20.2.pet.
2.19.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth for euer.

36 If that Sonne therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free in deed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed: but ye seeke to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and yee doe that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They answered and said vnto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would doe the workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye goe about to kill me, a man that haue tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the workes of your father. Then said they to him, We are not borne of fornication: we haue one Father, which is God.

42 Therefore Iesus said vnto them, If God were your Father, then would yee loue me: for I proceeded foorth, and came from God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why doe ye not vnderstand my talke? because ye cannot heare my word.

1.Iob.3.8

44 * Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lustes of your father ye will doe: hee hath been a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When he speaketh a lie, then speaketh he of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father thereof.

45 And

45 And becauſe I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue me not.
46 Which of you can rebuke me of ſinne? and if I ſay the truth, why doe ye not beleue me?
47 *He that is of God, beareth Gods words: ye therefore heare them not, becauſe ye are not of God. *1. Ioh. 4. 6
48 Then anſwered the Iewes, and ſaid vnto him, Say wee not well that thou art a Samaritane, and haſt a deuill?
49 Ieſus anſwered, I haue not a deuill, but I honour my Father, and ye haue diſhonoured me.
50 And I ſeeke not mine owne praiſe: but there is one that ſeeketh it, and iudgeth.
51 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, If a man keepe my word, hee ſhall neuer ſee death.
52 Then ſaid the Iewes to him, Now know wee that thou haſt a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets, and thou ſayeſt, If a man keepe my word, he ſhall neuer taſte of death.
53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophets are dead: whom makeſt thou thy ſelfe?
54 Ieſus anſwered, If I honour my ſelfe, mine honour is nothing worth: it my Father that honoureth me, whom ye ſay, that he is your God.
55 Yet yee haue not knowen him: but I know him, and if I ſhould ſay, I know him not, I ſhould be a liar like vnto you, but I know him, and keepe his word.
56 Your father Abraham reioyced to ſee my day, and hee ſawe it, and was glad.
57 Then ſaid the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fifty yeere old, and had thou ſeene Abraham?
58 Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, before Abraham was, I am.
59 Then tooke they vp ſtones, to caſt at him, but Ieſus hid himſelfe, and went out of the Temple: and he paſſed through the mids of them, and ſo went his way.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Chriſt giueth ſight on the Sabboth day, to him that was borne blind: 13 Whom, after hee had long reaſoned againſt the Phariſees, 22. 35. and was caſt out of the Synagogue, 36 Chriſt endueth with the knowledge of euerlaſting light.*

AAd as Ieſus paſſed by, hee ſaw a man which was blinde from his birth.
2 And his diſciples asked him, ſaying, Maſter, who did ſinne, this man, or his parents, that he was borne blind?
3 Ieſus anſwered, Neither hath this man ſinned, nor his parents: but that the workes of God ſhould be ſhewed on him.

4 I muſt

4 I must worke the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.

Chap.1.9. and 8.12. and 12.35

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world.

6 Assoone as he had thus spoken, hee spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed the eyes of the blind with the clay,

7 And said vnto him, Goe wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therfore, and washed, and came againe, seeing.

8 Now the neighbours and they that had seene him before, when he was blind, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: and other said, He is like him: but he himselfe said, I am he.

10 Therefore they said vnto him, Howe were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered, and said, The man that is called IESVS, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said vnto me, Goe to the poole of Siloam, and wash. So I went, and washed, and receiued sight.

12 Then they said vnto him, Where is he? He said, I cannot tell.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharises him that was once blind.

14 And it was the Sabbath *day*, when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharises also asked him how he had receiued sight. And he said vnto them, Hee laide clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed, and doe see.

16 Then said some of the Pharises, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath *day*. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, doe such miracles? and there was a dissention among them.

17 Then spake they vnto he blinde againe, What sayest thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? And he said, Hee is a Prophet.

18 Then the Iewes did not beleeue him, (that he had beene blind, and receiued his sight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, whom yee say was borne blind? How doeth he now see then?

20 His parents answered them, and said, Wee know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blind:

21 But by what meanes hee now seeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes can we not tell: he is old ynough, aske him, he shall answere for himselfe.

22 These

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordeined already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be *excommunicate* out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is old ynough, aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that had bene blind, and said vnto him, Giue glory vnto God: wee know that this man is a sinner.

25 Then he answered, and said, Whether he be a sinner, or no, I cannot tell: one thing I know, that I was blind, and now I see.

26 Then said they to him againe, What did hee to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue told you already, and ye haue not heard it: wherefore would ye heare it againe? will yee also be his disciples?

28 Then reuiled they him, and said, Be thou his disciple, we be Moses disciples.

29 Wee know that God spake with Moses: but this man wee know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and said vnto them, Doubtlesse, this is a marueilous thing, that ye know not whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now wee know, that God heareth not sinners, but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him heareth he.

32 Since the world began was it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blind.

33 If this man were not of God, he could haue done nothing.

34 They answered, and said vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? so they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out: and when hee had found him, he said vnto him, Doest thou beleeue in the Sonne of God?

36 He answered, and said, Who is hee, Lord, that I might beleeue in him?

37 And Iesus said vnto him, Both thou hast seene him, and hee it is that talketh with thee.

38 Then he said, Lord, I beleeue, and worshipped him.

39 And Iesus said, I am come vnto iudgement into this world, that they which see not, might see: and that they * which see, might be made blind. *Chap. 3. 17. and*

40 And some of the Pharises which were with him heard these things and said vnto him, Are we blind also? 12. 47.

41 Iesus said vnto them, If ye were blind, yee should not haue sinne: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sinne remaineth.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ proueth that the Pharises are the euill shepheards, 8 and by many reasons, that himselfe 11. 14 is the good shepheard 19 and thereof dissention ariseth. 31 They take vp stones, 39 and goe about to take him, but he escapeth.

VErely, verely I say vnto you, Hee that entreth not in by the doore into the sheepefold, but climeth vp another way, he is a thiefe and a robber.

2 But he that goeth in by the doore, is the shepherd of the sheepe.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he hath sent forth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe follow him: for they know his voice.

5 And they will not follow a stranger, but they flee from him: for they know not the voyce of strangers.

6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstoode not what things they were, which he spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verely, verely I say vnto you, I am that doore of the sheepe.

8 All that euer came before me, are theues and robbers, but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am that doore: by me if any man enter in, he shalbe saued, and shall goe in, and goe out, and find pasture.

10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to steale, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and haue it in abundance.

Isa.40.11 Ezec.34.23 11 *I am that good shepheard: that good shepherd giueth his life for his sheepe.

12 But an hireling, and he which is not the shepheard, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the wolfe comming, and he leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth, and the wolfe catcheth them, and scatereth the sheepe.

13 So the hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am that good shepheard, and know mine, and am knowen of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, so know I the Father: and I lay downe my life for *my* sheepe.

16 Other sheepe I haue also, which are not of this folde: them also must I bring, and they shall heare my voyce: and * there shall be one sheepefold, *and* one shepheard.

Ezec.37.22 Isa.53.7.

17 Therefore doth my Father loue me, because * I lay downe my life, that I might take it againe.

18 No

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and haue power to take it againe: this * commandement haue I receiued of my Father. *Act.2.24*

19 ¶ Then there was a dissention againe among the Iewes for these sayings,

20 And many of them said, He hath a deuill, and is mad: why heare ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a deuill: can the deuill open the eyes of the blinde?

22 And it was at Hierusalem the *feast of the* Dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Iesus walked in the Temple, in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said vnto him, How long doest thou make vs doubt? If thou be that Christ, tell vs plainely.

25 Iesus answered them, I told you, and yee beleeue not: the workes that I doe in my Fathers Name, they beare witnesse of me.

26 But ye beleeue not: for ye are not of my sheepe, as I said vnto you.

27 My sheepe heare my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perish, neither shall any plucke them out of mine hand.

29 My Father which gaue *them* me, is greater then all, and none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 * Then the Iewes againe tooke vp stones, to stone him. *Leu.24.16*

32 Iesus answered them, Many good workes haue I shewed you from my Father: for which of these workes doe ye stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For the good worke wee stone thee not, but for blasphemie, and that thou being a man, makest thy selfe God.

34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your Law, * I said, Ye are gods? *Psal.82.6*

35 If he called them gods, vnto whom the word of God was *giuen*, and the Scripture cannot be broken,

36 Say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleeue me not.

38 But if I doe, then though yee beleeue not me, *yet* beleeue the workes, that yee may know and beleeue, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Againe they went about to take him: but he escaped out of their hands,

40 And went againe beyond Iordan, into the place where Iohn first baptized, and there abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and said, Iohn did no miracle: but all things which Iohn spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeued in him there.

CHAP. XI.

Christ sheweth that he is the life and the resurrection, 14 commeth to Lazarus being dead, 17. 34 and buried, 43 and raiseth him vp. 47 As the Priests were consulting together, 49 Caiaphas 50 prophesieth that one must die for the people. 56. 57 They command to seeke Christ out, and to take him.

AND a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethania, the towne of Mary, and her sister Martha.

Chap. 12. 3 vers. 26. 7. 2 (And it was that * Mary which anoynted the Lord with oyntment, and wiped his feet with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was sicke)

3 Therefore his sisters sent vnto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou louest, is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard it, he said, This sicknes is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 ¶ Now Iesus loued Martha and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 And after he had heard that he was sicke, yet abode he two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that, said he to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iudea againe.

8 The disciples said vnto him, Master, the Iewes lately sought

Chap. 7. 30 and 8. 59. & 10. 33. to * stone thee, and doest thou goe thither againe?

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because hee seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things spake he, and after, he said vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth: but I goe to wake him vp.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe he shalbe safe.

13 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of the naturall sleepe.

14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainely, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there, that ye may beleeue: but let vs goe vnto him.

16 Then said Thomas (which is called Dydimus) vnto his fellow

low disciples, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him.

17 ¶ Then came Iesus, and found that he had lien in the graue foure dayes already.

18 (Now Bethania was neere vnto Hierusalem, about fifteene furlongs off.)

19 And many of the Iewes were come to Martha and Mary to comfort them for their brother.

20 Then Martha, when she heard that Iesus was comming, went to meet him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

22 But now I know also, that whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God will giue it thee.

23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha said vnto him, I know that he shall rise againe * in the resurrection at the last day. *Chap.5.29 luk.14.14*

25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection and the life, * he that beleeueth in me, though he were dead, *yet* shall he liue. *Chap.6.35*

26 And whosoeuer liueth and beleeueth in me, shall neuer die: Beleeuest thou this?

27 She said vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeue that thou art that Christ that Sonne of God, which should come into the world.

28 ¶ And when she had so said, she went her way, & called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, & calleth for thee.

29 And when she heard it, she arose quickly, & came vnto him.

30 For Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in the place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose vp hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth vnto the graue, to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, and saw him, she fell downe at his feet, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou haddest bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

33 When Iesus therefore saw her weepe, and the Iewes *also* weepe which came with her, hee groned in the spirit, and was troubled in himselfe,

34 And said, Where haue ye layd him? They said vnto him, Lord, Come and see.

35 *And* Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold how he loued him.

37 And some of them said, * Could not he which opened the eyes of the blind, haue made also, that this man should not haue died? *Chap.9.6.*

38 Iesus therefore againe groned in himselfe, and came to the graue. And it was a caue, and a stone was laid vpon it.

39 Iesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, said vnto him, Lord, he stinketh already: for hee hath beene *dead* foure dayes.

40 Iesus said vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou didst beleeue, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and said, Father, I thanke thee, because thou hast heard me.

42 I know that thou hearest me alwayes, but because of the people that stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue that thou hast sent me.

43 As he had spoken these things, hee cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 Then he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foote with bands, and his face was bound with a napkin. Iesus said vnto them, Loose him, and let him goe.

45 ¶ Then Many of the Iewes which came to Mary, and had seene the things, which Iesus did, beleeued in him.

46 But some of them went their way to the Pharises, and told them what things Iesus had done.

47 Then gathered the hie Priests and the Pharises a Councel, and said, What shall we doe? for this man doth many miracles.

48 If wee let him thus alone, all men will beleeue in him, and the Romanes will come and take away both our place, and the nation.

49 Then one of them *named* Caiaphas, which was the high Priest that same yeere, said vnto them, Ye perceiue nothing at all,

Chap. 18. 14. 50 * Nor yet doe you consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 This spake hee not of himselfe: but being high Priest that same yeere, he prophecied that Iesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation onely, but that he should gather together in one, the children of God which were scattered.

53 Then from that day forth they consulted together, to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey neere to the wildernesse, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was at hand, and many went out of the country vp to Hierusalem before the Passeouer, to purifie themselues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselues,

as

as they stood in the Temple, What thinke yee, that he commeth not to the feast?

57 Now both the high Priests and the Pharises had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where he were, hee should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

2 Christ at supper with Lazarus, 3 Mary anointeth his feet. 5 Iudas findeth fault with her: 7 Christ defendeth her. 10 The Priests would put Lazarus to death. 12 As Christ commeth to Hierusalem, 18 the people meete him. 20 The Grecians desire to see him. 42 The chiefe rulers that beleeue in him, but for feare doe not confesse him, 44 he exhorteth to faith.

THen * Iesus, sixe dayes before the Passouer, came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who died, whom hee had raised from the dead. *Mat 26.7 mar.14.3*

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenard very costly, and anointed Iesus feet, and wiped his feet with her haire, and the house was filled with the sauour of the ointment.

4 Then said one of his disciples, *euen* Iudas Iscariot Simons *sonne*, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment solde for three hundreth pence and giuen to the poore?

6 Now hee said this, not that hee cared for the poore, but because he was a thiefe, and * had the bagge, and bare that which was giuen. *Chap.13. 29.*

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying she kept it.

8 For the poore alwayes ye haue with you, but me ye shall not haue alwayes.

9 Then much people of the Iewes knew that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 The high Priests therefore consulted, that they might put Lazarus to death also.

11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away, and beleeued in Iesus.

12 ¶ * On the morrow a great multitude that were come to the feast, when they heard that Iesus should come to Hierusalem, *Mat.21.8 mar.11.8*

13 Tooke branches of palme trees, and went foorth to meete him, and cried, Hosanna, Blessed *is* the king of Israel that commeth in the Name of the Lord. *luke 19. 35.*

14 And Iesus found a yong asse, & sate thereon, as it is written,

15 * Feare

38 Iesus therefore againe groned in himselfe, and came to the graue. And it was a caue, and a stone was laid vpon it.

39 Iesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, said vnto him, Lord, he stinketh already: for hee hath beene *dead* foure dayes.

40 Iesus said vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou didst beleeue, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and said, Father, I thanke thee, because thou hast heard me.

42 I know that thou hearest me alwayes, but because of the people that stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue that thou hast sent me.

43 As he had spoken these things, hee cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 Then he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foote with bands, and his face was bound with a napkin. Iesus said vnto them, Loose him, and let him goe.

45 ¶ Then Many of the Iewes which came to Mary, and had seene the things, which Iesus did, beleeued in him.

46 But some of them went their way to the Pharises, and told them what things Iesus had done.

47 Then gathered the hie Priests and the Pharises a Councel, and said, What shall we doe? for this man doth many miracles.

48 If wee let him thus alone, all men will beleeue in him, and the Romanes will come and take away both our place, and the nation.

49 Then one of them *named* Caiaphas, which was the high Priest that same yeere, said vnto them, Ye perceiue nothing at all,

Chap. 18. 14. 50 * Nor yet doe you consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 This spake hee not of himselfe: but being high Priest that same yeere, he prophecied that Iesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation onely, but that he should gather together in one, the children of God which were scattered.

53 Then from that day forth they consulted together, to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a country neere to the wildernesse, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was at hand, and many went out of the country vp to Hierusalem before the Passeouer, to purifie themselues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselues,

as

as they stood in the Temple, What thinke yee, that he commeth not to the feast?

57 Now both the high Priests and the Pharises had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where he were, hee should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

2 Christ is at supper with Lazarus, 3 Mary anointeth his feet. 5 Iudas findeth fault with her: 7 Christ defendeth her. 10 The Priests would put Lazarus to death. 12 As Christ commeth to Hierusalem, 18 the people meete him. 20 The Grecians desire to see him. 42 The chiefe rulers that beleeue in him, but for feare doe not confesse him, 44 he exhorteth to faith.

THen * Iesus, sixe dayes before the Passouer, came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who died, whom hee had raised from the dead. *Mat 26.7 mar.14.3*

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenard very costly, and anointed Iesus feet, and wiped his feet with her haire, and the house was filled with the sauour of the ointment.

4 Then said one of his disciples, *euen* Iudas Iscariot Simons *sonne*, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment solde for three hundreth pence and giuen to the poore?

6 Now hee said this, not that hee cared for the poore, but because he was a thiefe, and * had the bagge, and bare that which was giuen. *Chap.13. 29.*

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying she kept it.

8 For the poore alwayes ye haue with you, but me ye shall not haue alwayes.

9 Then much people of the Iewes knew that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 The high Priests therefore consulted, that they might put Lazarus to death also.

11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away, and beleeued in Iesus.

12 ¶ * On the morrow a great multitude that were come to the feast, when they heard that Iesus should come to Hierusalem, *Mat.21.8 mar.11.8*

13 Tooke branches of palme trees, and went foorth to meete him, and cried, Hosanna, Blessed *is* the king of Israel that commeth in the Name of the Lord. *luke 19. 35.*

14 And Iesus found a yong asse, & sate thereon, as it is written,

15 * Feare

Zech.9.9. 15 *Feare not, daughter of Sion: Behold, thy King commeth sitting on an asses colt.

16 But his disciples vnderstood not these things at ỹ first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and ỹ they had done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, bare witnes that he called Lazarus out of the grane, & raised him from the dead.

18 Therfore met him the people also, because they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 And the Pharises said among themselues, Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Behold, the world goeth after him.

20 Now there were certaine Greeke, among them that came vp to worship at the feast.

21 And they came to Philip, which was of Bethsaida in Galile, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see that Iesus.

22 Philip came and tolde Andrew: and againe Andrew and Philip told Iesus.

23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man must be glorified.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except the wheat corne fall into the ground and die, it bideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

Mat.10. 39.& 16 25.mar.8 35.luke 9 24. and 17.33. Chap. 17. 34.

25 *He that loueth his life, shall lose it, and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

26 *If any man serue me, let him follow me: for where I am, there shall also my seruant be: and if any man serue me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soule troubled: & what shal I say? Father, saue me from this houre: but therefore came I vnto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voice from heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it, & will glorifie it againe.

29 Then said the people that stood by, and heard, that it was a thunder: other said, An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered, and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

Cha. 3.14 Psal.89. 36.& 110 4.& 117. 2.Isa.40. 8.ezek.37 25. Chap.1.9.

31 Now is the iudgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 *And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, will draw all men vnto me.

33 Now this said he, signifying what death he should die.

34 The people answered him, We haue heard out of ỹ *law, that that Christ bideth for euer: and how sayest thou, that that Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is that Sonne of man?

35 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Yet a little while is *the light

with

with you: walke while ye haue that light, leſt the darkneſſe come vpon you: for he that walketh in the darke, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye haue that light, beleeue in that light, that ye may be the children of the light. Theſe things ſpake Ieſus, and departed, and hid himſelfe from them.

37 ¶ And though he had done ſo many miracles before them, *yet* beleeued they not on him,

38 That the ſaying of Eſaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, that he ſaid, * Lord, who beleeued our report? and to whom is the arme of the Lord reueiled? *Iſai 53. 1. rom. 10.*

39 Therefore could they not beleeue, becauſe that Eſaias ſaith againe. *16.*

40 * He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they ſhould not ſee with *their* eyes, nor vnderſtand with *their* heart, and ſhould be conuerted, and I ſhould heale them. *Iſai 6. 9. mat. 13. 14. marke 4. 12. luke 8. 10. acts 28. 26.*

41 Theſe things ſaid Eſaias when hee ſaw his glory, and ſpake of him.

42 Neuertheleſſe, euen among the chiefe rulers, many beleeued in him, but becauſe of the Phariſes they did not confeſſe him, leſt they ſhould be *caſt* out of the Synagogue. *rom. 11. 8*

43 * For they loued the praiſe of men, more then the praiſe of God. *Cha. 5. 44.*

44 And Ieſus cryed, and ſaid, He that beleeueth in me, beleeueth not in me, but in him that ſent me.

45 And he that ſeeth me, ſeeth him that ſent me.

46 I * am come a light into the world, that whoſoeuer beleeueth in me ſhould not abide in darkneſſe. *Cha. 3. 19. and 9 39.*

47 * And if any man heare my words, and beleeue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the world, but to ſaue the world. *Cha. 3. 17.*

48 He that refuſeth me, and receiueth not my words, hath one that iudgeth him: * the word that I haue ſpoken, it ſhall iudge him in the laſt day. *Mar. 16. 16.*

49 For I haue not ſpoken of my ſelfe: but the Father, which ſent me, he gaue me a commandement what I ſhould ſay, & what I ſhould ſpeake.

50 And I know that his commandement is life euerlaſting: the things therefore that I ſpeake, I ſpeake *them* ſo as the Father ſaid vnto me.

CHAP. XIII.

4 Chriſt riſing from ſupper, 15 to commend humilitie to his Apoſtles, waſheth their feete. 21 Hee noteth the traitour Iudas 26 with an euident token. 34 He commendeth charitie. 37. 39 He foretelleth Peter of his denial.

*Mat.*22 2 *mar.*14.1 *luke* 22.1. NOw * before the feast of the Passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this world vnto the Father, forasmuch as hee loued his owne which were in the world, vnto the end he loued them.

2 And when supper was done (and that the deuill had nowe put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons *sonne* to betray him.)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that he was come forth from God, and went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, and layeth aside *his vpper* garments, and tooke a towell, and girded himselfe.

5 After that, he powred water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the towell, wherewith he was girded.

6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who said to him, Lord, doest thou wash my feete?

7 Iesus answered and said vnto him, What I do, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know it hereafter.

8 Peter said vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt haue no part with mee.

9 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, not my feete only, but also the hands and the head.

10 Iesus said to him, Hee that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash *his* feete, but is cleane euery whit: and * yee are cleane, but *Chap.*13.3 not all:

11 For he knew who should betray him: therefore said he, Yee are not all cleane.

12 ¶ So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, hee said vnto them, Know yee what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me master, and Lord, and ye say well, for *so* am I.

14 If I then your Lord, and Master, haue washed your feete, ye also ought to wash one anothers feete.

15 For I haue giuen you an example, that yee should doe, euen as I haue done to you.

*Cha.*15.20 *mat.*10. 24. *luk.*6. 40. 16 Verely, verely I say vnto you, * The seruant is not greater then his master, neither the ambassadour greater then hee that sent him.

17 If ye know these things, blessed are ye, if ye doe them.

*Psal.*41.9 18 ¶ I speake not of you all: I know whom I haue chosen: but *it is* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, * Hee that eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against me.

19 From henceforth tell I you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue that I am he.

20 * Ve-

20 *Verely,verely I say vnto you, If I send any,hee that receiueth him, receiueth me, and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me. *Matt.* 10. 40 *luke* 10.16.

21 When Iesus had said these things, hee was troubled in the Spirit,and testified,and said, Verely,verely I say vnto you,that one of you shall betray me.

22 * Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake. *Matt.* 26. 21.*mark.* 14. 18.

23 Now there was one of his disciples, which leaned on Iesus bosome,whom Iesus loued. *luk.*22.23

24 To him beckned therefore Simon Peter,that he would aske who it was of whom he spake.

25 He then, as he leaned on Iesus breast,said vnto him, Lorde, who is it ?

26 Iesus answered, Hee it is to whom I shall giue a sop, when I haue dipt it: and he wet a sop, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simons *sonne*.

27 And after the sop, Satan entred into him. Then said Iesus vnto him,That thou doest,doe quickly.

28 But none of them that were at table, knew for what cause he spake it vnto him.

29 For some of them thought because Iudas had the bag, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy those things that we haue need of against the feast,or that he should giue some thing to the poore.

30 Assoone then as he had receiued the sop,he went immediatly out,and it was night.

31 ¶ When he was gone out, Iesus said, Now is the Sonne of man glorified,and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while am I with you: ye shall seeke me,but as I said vnto the* Iewes,Whither I go, can ye not come: also to you say I now. *Cha.7.34

34 A * new commandement giue I vnto you,that ye loue one another,as I haue loued you that ye also loue one another. *Chap.* 15. 12. *Iesus.*

35 By this shall all men know that yee are my disciples,if yee haue loue one to another. 19. 18. *matt* 22.

36 Simon Peter said vnto him,Lord,whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe, thou canst not follow mee now: but thou shalt follow me afterward. 39.1.*ioh.* 4.21. *Mat.* 26.

37 Peter said vnto him, Lord, why can I not follow thee now? * I will lay downe my life for thy sake. 33 *mar.* 14.29.

38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my sake? *luk.*22.33

sake? Verely, verely I say vnto thee, The cocke shal not crow till thou hane denied me thrice.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *He comforteth his disciples,* 2 7 *declaring his diuinitie and the fruit of his death.* 16 *promising the comforter,* 17 *euen the holy Spirit,* 26 *whose office he setteth out.* 27 *He promiseth his peace.*

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye beleeue in God, beleeue also in me.

2 In my fathers house are many dwelling places: if it were not so, I would haue told you: I goe to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go to prepare a place for you, I will come againe, and receiue you vnto my selfe, that where I am, there may ye be also.

4 And whither I go, ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas sayd vnto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: how can we then know the way?

6 Iesus said vnto him, I am that Way, and that Truth, and that Life. No man commeth vnto the Father, but by me.

7 If ye had knowen me, ye should haue knowen my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and haue seene him.

8 Philip said vnto him, Lord, shew vs *thy* Father, and it suffiseth vs.

9 Iesus said vnto him, I haue bene so long time with you, and hast thou not knowen me, Philip? he that hath seene mee, hath seene my Father: how then sayest thou, Shew vs *thy* Father?

10 Beleeuest thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father is in mee? The words that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.

11 Beleeue me, that *I am* in the Father, and the Father *is* in me: at the least beleeue me for the very workes sake.

12 Verely, verely I say vnto you, hee that beleeueth in me, the workes that I doe, he shall doe also, and greater then these shall he doe: for I goe vnto my Father.

Chap. 16. 23. mat. 7. 7. marke 11. 24. iam. 1. 5.

13 * And whatsoeuer ye aske in my Name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne.

14 If ye shall aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it.

15 If ye loue me, keepe my commandements.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer,

17 *Euen* the Spirit of trueth, whom the world cannot receiue, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him: for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

18 I will not leaue you comfortlesse: *but* will come to you.

19 Yet a little while, and the world shall see me no more, but ye shall see me: because I liue, ye shall liue also,

20 At

20 At that day shall ye know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, is he that loueth me: and he that loueth me, shall be loued of my Father: and I will loue him, and will shew mine owne selfe to him.

22 Iudas (not Iscariot) Lord, what is the cause that thou wilt shew thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world?

23 Iesus answered and said vnto him, If any man loue me, hee will keepe my word, and my Father will loue him, and wee will come vnto him, and will dwell with him.

24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my words, & the word which ye heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being present with you.

26 *But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whome the Father will send in my Name, he shal teach you al things & bring all things to your remembrance, which I haue told you. *Chap. 15. 26.

27 Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you: not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you. Let not your heart bee troubled, nor feare.

28 Yee haue heard how I said vnto you, I goe away, and will come vnto you. If ye loued me, ye would verely reioyce, because I said, I goe vnto the Father: for the Father is greater then I.

29 And now haue I spoken vnto you, before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue.

30 Hereafter will I not speake many things vnto you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nought in me.

31 But *it is* that the world may know that I loue *my* Father: and as the Father hath commanded me, so I doe. Arise, let vs goe hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 *By the parable of the vine,* 2 *and the branches,* 5. 6 *hee declareth how the disciples may beare fruit.* 12. 17 *He commendeth mutuall loue.* 18 *He exhorteth them to beare afflictions patiently,* 20 *by his owne example*

I Am that true Vine, and my Father is that husbandman.

2 *Euery branch that beareth not fruit in mee, hee taketh away: and euery one that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring foorth more fruite. *Matt. 15. 13.

3 *Now are ye cleane through the word, which I haue spoken vnto you. *Chap. 13 10.

4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branch cannot beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can yee, except yee abide in me.

5 I am that Vine: ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me can ye doe nothing.

Col. 1.23. 6 * If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and withereth: and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they burne.

1. *Iohn* 3. 22. 7 * If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, aske what ye will, and it shall be done to you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruit, and be made my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued me, so haue I loued you: continue in that my loue.

10 If ye shall keepe my commandements, ye shall abide in my loue, as I haue kept my Fathers commandements, and abide in his loue.

11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

Chap. 13. 34. 1. *thes.* 4. 9. 1. *Iohn.* 3. 11. *and* 4. 21. 12 * This is my commandement, that yee loue one another, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when any man bestoweth his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoeuer I command you.

15 Henceforth call I you not seruants: for the seruant knoweth not what his Master doeth: but I haue called you friends: for all things that I haue heard of my Father, haue I made known to you.

Mat. 28. 19. 16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and ordeined you, * that yee goe and bring forth fruit, and that your fruite remaine, that whatsoeuer yee shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you.

17 These things command I you, that ye loue one another.

18 If ye world hate you, ye know that it hated mee before you.

19 If yee were of the world, the world would loue his owne: but because ye are not of the world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember the word that I said vnto you, * The seruant is not greater then his Master. * If they haue persecuted me, they will persecute you also: if they haue kept my word, they wil also keepe yours.

Chap. 13. 16. *matt.* 10. 24. *Mat.* 24. 9 *Chap.* 16. 4 21 But * all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they haue not known him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken vnto them, they should not haue had sinne: but now haue they no cloake for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If

24 If I had not done workes among them which none other man did, they had not had sinne: but now haue they both seene, and haue hated both me and my Father.

25 But *it is* that the word might be fulfilled, that is written in their Law, * They hated me without a cause. *Psal. 35. 19.*

26 But when that Comforter shall come, * whom I will send vnto you from the Father, *euen* the Spirit of trueth which proceedeth of the Father, he shall testifie of mee. *Chap. 14. 26.*

27 And ye shall witnesse also, because yee haue beene with me from the beginning. *Iuk. 24. 49*

CHAP. XVI.

1 He foretelleth the disciples of persecution. 7 Hee promiseth the Comforter, and declareth his office. 21 He compareth the affliction of his, to a woman that trauaileth with child.

THese things haue I said vnto you, that yee should not bee offended.

2 They shal excommunicate you: yea, the time shal come that whosoeuer killeth you, will thinke that he doeth God seruice.

3 And these things will they doe vnto you, because they haue not knowen the Father, nor me.

4 * But these things haue I tolde you, that when the houre shall come, ye might remember, that I told you them. And these things said I not vnto you from the beginning, because I was with you. *Chap. 15. 21.*

5 But now I goe my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue said these things vnto you, your hearts are full of sorrow.

7 Yet I tell you the truth, It is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, that Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will send him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, hee will reproue the world of sinne, and of righteousnesse, and of iudgement:

9 Of sinne, because they beleeued not in me:

10 Of righteousnesse, because I goe to my Father, and yee shall see me no more:

11 Of iudgement, because the prince of this world is iudged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but yee cannot beare them now.

13 Howbeit, when he is come which is the Spirit of trueth, he will leade you into all trueth: for he shall not speake of himselfe, but whatsoeuer hee shall heare, shall he speake, and hee will shew you the things to come.

14 He

14 He shall glorifie me: for hee shall receiue of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shew it vnto you.

16 A little *while*, and yee shall not see mee: and againe a little *while*, and yee shall see me: for I goe to the Father.

17 Then said *some* of his disciples among themselues, What is this that he saith vnto vs, A little *while*, and yee shall not see me, and againe, A litle *while*, and yee shall see me, and, For I goe to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A litle *while*? we know not what he saith.

19 Now Iesus knew that they would aske him, and said vnto them, Doe yee enquire among your selues, of that I said, A little *while*, and yee shall not see me: and againe, A litle *while*, and yee shall see me?

20 Verely, verely I say vnto you, that yee shall weepe and lament, and the world shall reioyce: and yee shall sorrow, but your sorrow shall be turned to ioy.

21 A woman when she trauayleth hath sorrow, because her houre is come: but assoone as she is deliuered of the child, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world.

22 And yee now therefore are in sorrow: but I will see you againe, and your hearts shal reioyce, and your ioy shal no man take from you.

Chap. 14. 13. *mat.* 7. 7. *and* 21. 22. *mark.* 11. 24. *luk.* 11. 9. *iam.* 1. 5.

23 And in that day shall ye aske me nothing. * Verely, verely I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you.

24 Hitherto ye haue asked nothing in my Name: aske, and ye shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the time will come, when I shal no more speake vnto you in parables: but I shall shew you plainely of the Father.

26 At that day shall ye aske in my name, and I say not vnto you, that I will pray vnto the Father for you:

Cha. 17. 8.

27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, * and haue beleeued that I came out from God.

28 I am come out from the Father, and came into the world: againe I leaue the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said vnto him, Loe, now speakest thou playnly, and thou speakest no parable.

30 Now know wee that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should aske thee. By this we beleeue, that thou

thou art come out from God.

31 Iesus answered them, Doe ye beleeue now?

32 * Behold, the houre commeth, and is already come, that ye shalbe scattered euery man into his owne, and shal leaue me alone: but I am not alone: for the Father is with me. *Matt.26. 31. mark. 14.27.*

33 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that in me yee might haue peace: in the world ye shall haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue ouercome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 *Christ prayeth that his glory together with his Fathers may bee made manifest.* 9 *Hee prayeth for his Apostles,* 20 *and for all beleeuers.*

THese things spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, & said, Father, that houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee.

2 *As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that hee should giue eternall life to all them that thou hast giuen him. Mat.28. 18.

3 And this is life eternall, that they know thee *to be* the onely very God, and whom thou hast sent, Iesus Christ.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe.

5 And now glorifie me, thou Father, with thine owne selfe, with the glorie which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I haue declared thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gauest them me, and they haue kept thy word.

7 * Now they know that all things whatsoeuer thou hast giuen me, are of thee. *Chap. 16. 27.*

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes, which thou gauest me, and they haue receiued *them*, and haue knowen surely that I came out from thee, and haue beleeued that thou hast sent me.

9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast giuen me: for they are thine,

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And now am I no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father keepe them in thy Name, *euen* thē whom thou hast giuen me, ỹ they may be one, as we *are*.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest me, haue I kept, and none of them is lost, but the child of perdition, that the * Scripture might bee fulfilled. *Ps.109.8.*

13 And now come I to thee, and these things speake I in the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselues.

14 I haue

14 I haue giuen them thy word, & the world hath hated them, becauſe they are not of the world, as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou ſhouldeſt take them out of the world, but that thou keepe them from euill.

16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them with thy trueth: thy word is trueth.

18 As thou diddeſt ſend me into the world, ſo haue I ſent them into the world.

19 And for their ſakes ſanctifie I my ſelfe, that they alſo may be ſanctified through the trueth.

20 I pray not for theſe alone, but for them alſo which ſhal beleeue in me through their word,

21 That they all may be one, as thou, O Father, *art* in me, and I in thee: *euen* that they may bee alſo one in vs, that the world may beleeue that thou haſt ſent me.

22 And the glory that thou gaueſt me, I haue giuen them that they may be one, as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in mee, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou haſt ſent me, and haſt loued them as thou haſt loued me.

Chap. 12. 26. 24 * Father, I will that they which thou haſt giuen me, be with me euen where I am, that they may behold that my glory, which thou haſt giuen me: for thou louedſt me before the foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world alſo hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, and theſe haue knowen that thou haſt ſent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy name, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou haſt loued mee, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 By Chriſtes power whome Iudas betrayeth, 6 the ſouldiers are caſt downe to the ground. 13 Chriſt is ledde to Annas, and from him to Caiaphas. 22 23. His anſwere to the officer that ſmote him with a rod. 28 Being deliuered to Pilate, 36 he declareth his kingdome.

Mat. 26. 36 *marke* 14 32. *luk.* 22. 39. WHen Ieſus had ſpoken theſe things, he went foorth with his diſciples ouer the brooke * Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his diſciples.

2 And Iudas which betrayed him, knewe alſo the place: for Ieſus oft times reſorted thither with his diſciples.

Matt. 26. 47 *mark.* 14. 43. *luk.* 22. 47. 3 * Iudas then after he had receiued a band of men and officers of the hie Prieſts, and of the Phariſes, came thither with lanternes, and torches, and weapons.

4 Then

4 Then Iesus knowing all things that should come vnto him, went forth, and said vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus sayd vnto them, I am hee. Now Iudas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Assoone then as hee had said vnto them, I am hee, they went away backewards and fell to the ground.

7 Then he asked them againe, Whom seeke yee? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I said vnto you, that I am hee: therefore if ye seeke me, let these goe their way.

9 *This was* that the word might bee fulfilled which he spake. *Of them, which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sword, drew it, and smote the high Priests seruant, and cut off his right eare. Now the seruants name was Malchus. *Chap.* 17. 12.

11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sworde into the sheath: shall I not drinke of the cup which *my* Father hath giuen mee?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and the officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus and bound him,

13 And led him away to *Annas first (for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest that same yeere) *Luke* 3.2.

14 *And Caiaphas was he, that gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people. *Chap.* 11. 50.

15 ¶ *Now Simon Peter followed Iesus, and another disciple, and that disciple was knowen of the hie Priest: therefore he went in with Iesus into the hall of the hie Priest: *Mat.* 26. 58 *marke* 14.54. *luk.* 22.54

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out the other disciple which was knowen vnto the hie Priest, and spake to her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then said the maid that kept the doore vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He said, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stood there, which had made a fire of coles: for it was cold, and they warmed themselues. And Peter also stood among them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ (The high Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the world: I euer taught in the Synagogue and in the Temple, whither the Iewes resort continually and in secret haue I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou mee? aske them which heard me what I said vnto them: behold, they know what I said.

22 When he had spoken these things, one of the officers which

stood by, smote Iesus with *his* rod, saying, Answerest thou the high Priest so?

23 Iesus answered him, If I haue euill spoken, beare witnesse of the euill: but if I haue well spoken, why smitest thou me?

Mat.26. 57. luk.22 54. 24 ¶ * Now Annas had sent him bound to Caiaphas the high Priest)

Mat.26. 69. marke 14.69. luk.22.55 25 * And Simon Peter stood and warmed himselfe, and they said vnto him, Art not thou also of his disciples? Hee denied it, and said, I am not.

26 One of the seruants of the high Priest, his cousin whose eare Peter smote off, said, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the cocke crew.

Mat.27.2 mar.15.1 luke 23.1 Acts 10. 28.and 31.3. 28 ¶ * Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas into the common hall. Now it was morning and they themselues went not into the common hall, lest they should be * defiled, but that they might eate the Passeouer.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered and said vnto him, If he were not an euill doer, we would not haue deliuered him vnto thee.

31 Then said Pilate vnto them, Take ye him, and iudge him after your owne Law. Then the Iewes said vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death.

Mat.20. 29. 32 *It was* that the word of Iesus * might be fulfilled which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

Mat.27. 11 marke 15.2. luke 23.3. 33 * So Pilate entred into the common hall againe, and called Iesus, and said vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes?

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou that of thy selfe, or did other tell it thee of mee?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iewe? Thine owne nation, and the hie Priests haue deliuered thee vnto me. What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, my seruants would surely fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate then said vnto him. Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a King: for this cause am I borne, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should beare witnesse vnto the truth: euery one that is of the truth, heareth my voyce.

38 Pilate said vnto him, What is truth? And when hee had sayd that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and said vnto them, I finde in him no cause at all.

39 * But

39 * But you haue a custome, that I should deliuer you one loose at the Passeouer: will ye then that I loose vnto you the king of the Iewes? *Matt.27. 15.marke 15.6. luke*

40 Then cried they all againe, saying, Not him, but Barabbas: now this Barabbas was a murtherer. *23.17. Act.3.14*

CHAP. XIX.

1 Pilate, when Christ was scourged, 2 and crowned with thorne, 4 was desirous to let him loose: 8 but being ouercome with the outrage of the Iewes, 16 he deliuereth him to be crucified. 26 Iesus committeth his mother to the disciple. 30 Hauing tasted vineger, he dieth: 34 and being dead, his side is pearced with a speare. 40 He is buried.

THen * Pilate tooke Iesus, and scourged him. *Mat.27*

2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple garment, *27.marke 15.16.*

3 And said, Haile King of the Iewes. And they smote him with *their* rods.

4 Then Pilate went foorth againe, and said vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may knowe, that I finde no fault in him at all.

5 Then came Iesus foorth, wearing a crowne of thornes, and a purple garment. And *Pilate* said vnto them, Behold the man.

6 Then when the hie Priests and officers saw him, they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie *him*. Pilate said vnto them, Take ye him, and crucifie *him*: for I find no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, Wee haue a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himselfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate then heard that worde, hee was the more afraid,

9 And went againe into the common hall, and said vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him none answere.

10 Then sayd Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto mee? Knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to loose thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against me, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

12 From thencefoorth Pilate sought to loose him, but the Iewes cried, saying, If thou deliuer him, thou art not Cesars friend: *for* whosoeuer maketh himselfe a King, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate heard this word, he brought Iesus foorth, and sate downe in the iudgement seat, in a place called the Pauement, and in Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the Preparation of the Passeouer, and about the sixt houre: and he said vnto the Iewes, Behold your King.

15 But they cried, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate said vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The high Priests answered, We haue no king but Cesar.

Matth.27 31.marke 15.25.luk. 23.26. 16 Then deliuered hee him vnto them to be crucified. * And they tooke Iesus, and led him away.

17 And he bare his owne crosse, and came into a place named *of dead mens* skuls, which is called in Hebrew, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the middes.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote also a title, and put it on the crosse, and it was written, IESVS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE IEWES.

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was neere to the citie: and it was written in Hebrew, Greeke, and Latine.

21 Then said the high Priests of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes, but that hee said, I am King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written.

Matt.27 35.marke 15.24. 23 ¶ Then the * souldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, tooke his garments (and made foure parts, to euery souldier a part) and *his* coate: and the coate was without seame wouen from the top throughout.

24 Therefore they said one to another, Let vs not diuide it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be. *This was* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which said, * They parted my garments among them, and on my coate did cast lots. So the souldiers did these things in deede. *Psal.22. 18.*

25 ¶ Then stood by the crosse of Iesus his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary *the wife of* Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 And when Iesus saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loued, he sayd vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy sonne.

27 Then said he to the disciple, Behold thy mother: and from that houre, the disciple tooke her home vnto him.

28 ¶ After, when Iesus knew that all things were performed, that the * Scriptures might be fulfilled, *he* said, *I* thirst. *Psal.69. 22.*

29 And there was set a vessell full of vineger: and they filled a sponge with vineger, and put it about an hyssope *stalke*, and put it to his mouth.

30 Now when Iesus had receiued of the vineger, hee sayd, It is finished, and bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The

31 The Iewes then (becauſe it was the Preparation, that the bodies ſhould not remaine vpon the croſſe on the Sabbath *day*: for that Sabbath was an high day) beſought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken downe.

32 Then came the ſouldiers and brake the legs of the firſt, and of the other which was crucified with *Ieſus*.

33 But when they came to Ieſus, and ſaw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the ſouldiers with a ſpeare pierced his ſide, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that ſaw it, bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he ſaith true, that yee might beleeue it.

36 For theſe things were done that the Scriptures ſhould bee fulfilled, * Not a bone of him ſhall be broken. *Exod. 12. 46. num. 9. 12.*

37 And againe another Scripture ſayth, * They ſhall ſee him whom they haue thruſt through. *Zech. 12. 10.*

38 * And after theſe things Ioſeph of Aramathea (who was a diſciple of Ieſus, but ſecretly for feare of the Iewes) beſought Pilate, that he might take downe the body of Ieſus. And Pilate gaue him licence. He came then and tooke Ieſus body. *Mat. 27. 57. marke 15. 42. luke 23. 50.*

39 And there came * alſo Nicodemus (which firſt came to Ieſus by night) and brought of Myrrhe and Aloes mingled together about an hundred pound. *Chap. 3. 2*

40 Then tooke they the body of Ieſus, and wrapped it in linnen clothes with the odours, as the manner of the Iewes is to burie.

41 And in that place where Ieſus was crucified, was a garden, and in the garden a new ſepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet laid.

42 There then laid they Ieſus, becauſe of the Iewes preparation *day*, for the ſepulchre was neere.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary bringeth word that Chriſt is riſen. 3 Peter and Iohn 4 runne to ſee it. 15 Ieſus appeareth to Mary, 19 and to the diſciples that were together in the houſe. 25 Thomas, before faithleſſe, 29 now beleeueth.

NOw * the firſt day of the weeke came Mary Magdalene, early when it was yet darke, vnto the ſepulchre, and ſaw the ſtone taken away from the tombe. *Mar. 16. 1. luke 24. 1.*

2 Then ſhe ranne, and came to Simon Peter, and to the other diſciple whom Ieſus loued, and ſaid vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the ſepulchre, and we know not where they haue laid him.

3 Peter therefore went foorth, and the other diſciple, and they came vnto the ſepulchre.

4 So they ranne both together, but the other disciple did outrunne Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And hee stouped downe, and saw the linnen clothes lying: yet went he not in.

6 Then came Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and saw the linnen clothes lie,

7 And the kerchiefe that was vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also the other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw it, and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, That hee must rise againe from the dead.

10 And the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

Mat.28.1 *mar.16.5* 11 ¶ * But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she bowed her selfe into the sepulchre,

12 And saw two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus had layen.

13 And they said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Shee said vnto them, They haue taken away my Lord, and I knowe not where they haue layd him.

14 When she had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, and saw Iesus standing, and knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Whome seekest thou? She supposing that hee had been the gardiner, said vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell mee where thou hast layd him, and I will take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Mary. Shee turned her selfe, and said vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch mee not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and to your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these things vnto her.

Mar.16. *14.luke* *24.36.* *1.cor.15.5* 19 ¶ * The same day then at night, which was the first *day* of the weeke, and when the doores were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stood in the middes, and said to them, Peace *be* vnto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed vnto them *his* hands, & his side. Then were ỹ disciples glad when they had seen the Lord.

Mat.28. *18.* 21 * Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace *be* vnto you: as my Father sent me, so send I you.

22 And when he had said that, he breathed on them, and said vnto them, Receiue the holy Ghost.

23 Whose-

23 Whosoeuers sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them: *and* whosoeuers sinnes yee reteine, they are reteined.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seen the Lord: but he said vnto them, Except I see in his hands, the print of the nailes, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and put my hand into his side, I will not beleeue it.

26 ¶ And eight dayes after againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. *Then* came Iesus, when the doores were shut, and stood in the mids, and said, Peace *be* vnto you.

27 After, said he to Thomas, Put thy finger here, and see mine hands, and put foorth thine hand, and put it into my side, and bee not faithlesse, but faithfull.

28 Then Thomas answered, and said vnto him, *Thou art* my Lord and my God.

29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene mee, thou beleeuest: blessed *are* they that haue not seene, and haue beleeued.

30 ¶ * And many other signes also did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke. *Chap. 21. 25.*

31 But these things are written, that yee might beleeue, that Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, and that in beleeuing yee might haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *Iesus appeareth to his disciples as they were a fishing,* 6. 7 *whome they know by a miraculous draught of fishes.* 15 *Hee committeth the charge of the sheepe to Peter,* 18 *and foretelleth him of the maner of his death.*

AFter these things, Iesus shewed himselfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and thus shewed he *himselfe.*

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galile, and the *sonnes* of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter said vnto them, I goe a fishing. They said vnto him, Wee also will goe with thee They went their way and entred into a ship straightway, and that night caught they nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shore: neuertheless the disciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Iesus then said vnto them, Sirs, haue ye any meate? They answered him, No.

6 Then he said vnto them, Cast out the net on the right side

of the ship, and ye shall finde. So they cast out, and they were not able at all to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore said the disciple whom Iesus loued, vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girded his coat to him (for he was naked) and cast himselfe into the sea.

8 But the other disciples came by ship (for they were not farre from land, but about two hundred cubites) and they drewe the net with fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to land, they sawe hot coles and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus said vnto them, Bring of the fishes, which ye haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter stepped forth and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundreth fiftie and three: and albeit there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus said vnto them Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? seeing they knew that hee was the Lord.

13 Iesus then came and tooke bread, and gaue them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that he was risen againe from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus said to Simon Peter, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, loueſt thou mee more then these? Hee sayd vnto him, Yea, Lord, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Hee sayd vnto him, Feede my lambes.

16 He said to him againe the second time, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, loueſt thou me? He said vnto him, Yea, Lord, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Hee said vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

17 He said vnto him the third time, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, loueſt thou mee? Peter was sory because hee said to him the third time, Loueſt thou me? and said vnto him, Lord, thou knoweſt all things: thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Iesus said vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

18 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, When thou wast yong, thou girdedſt thy selfe, and walkedſt whither thou wouldeſt: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thine hands and another shall gird thee, and leade thee whither thou wouldeſt not.

19 And this spake he signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had said this, he said to him. Follow me.

20 Then Peter turned about, and saw the disciple whom Iesus loued, following, which had also * leaned on his breast at supper, and had said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? *Chap. 13. 23.*

21 When

21 When Peter therefore saw him, hee said to Iesus, Lord, what shall this man doe?

22 Iesus said vnto him, If I will that hee tarie till I come, what is it to thee? follow thou me.

23 Then went this word abroad among the brethren, that this disciple should not die. Yet Iesus said not vnto him, hee shall not die: but, If I will that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee?

24 This is that disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimonie is true.

25 *Now there are also many other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be written euery one, I suppose the world could not containe the bookes that should be written. AMEN. *Chap 20. 30.

¶ THE ACTES OF THE HOLY APOSTLES WRITTEN by Luke the Euangelist.

CHAP. I.

1 *Luke tyeth this historie to his Gospel.* 9 *Christ being taken into heauen,* 10 *the Apostles* 11 *being warned by the Angel,* 12 *returne,* 14 *and giue themselues to prayer.* 15 *By Peters motion,* 18 *into Iudas the traitours place Matthias is chosen.*

THE former Treatise, O Theophilus, of all that Iesus began to doe and teach, 2 Vntill the day that he was taken vp, after that he through the holy Ghost, had giuen commandement vnto the Apstles, whom he had chosen:

3 To whom also he presented himselfe aliue after that he had suffered, by many infallible tokens, being seen of them by the *space* of forty dayes, & speaking of those things which *appertaine* to the kingdome of God.

4 *And when he had gathered *them* together, he commanded them, that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but to waite for the promise of the Father, *which, *saith he*, ye haue heard of me: *Luke 24. 49. Ioh. 14. 25. Chap. 2. 2. & 11. 16. and 19. 4. mat. 3. 11. mark. 1. 8. luke 3. 16.*

5 *For Iohn in deede baptized with water, but yee shall bee baptized with the holy Ghost within these few dayes.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said vnto them, It is not for you to know the times

or the seasons which the Father hath put in his owne power.

Chap.2.3. 8 *But ye shal receiue power of the holy Ghost, when he shall come on you: and ye shall be witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem, and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the vttermost part of the earth.

Luke 24. 51. 9 * And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken vp: for a cloud tooke him vp out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as hee went, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galile, why stand ye gazing into heauen? This Iesus which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, as ye haue seene him goe into heauen.

12 ¶ Then returned they vnto Hierusalem from the mount that is called *the mount* of Oliues, which is neere to Hierusalem, being from it a Sabbath *dayes* iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper chamber, where abode both Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartlemew, and Matthew, Iames *the sonne* of Alphæus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames *brother*.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the middes of the disciples, and said, (now the number of names that were in one place were about an hundreth and twentie)

16 Ye men *and* brethren, this Scripture must needs haue beene
Psal.41.9 fulfilled, which * the holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake be-
Iohn 13. 27. fore of Iudas, which was * guide to them that tooke Iesus.

17 For he was numbred with vs, and had obtained fellowship in this ministration.

18 He therefore hath purchased a field with the reward of ini-
Mat.27.5 quitie: and when he * had thrown downe himselfe headlong, he brast asunder in the mids, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it is knowen vnto all the inhabitants of Hierusalem, insomuch that that field is called in their owne language, Aceldama, that is, The field of blood.

Psal 69. 26. 20 For it is writen in the booke of Psalmes, * Let his habitation be void, and let no man dwel therein: * also, let another take his
Psa.109.7 charge.

21 Wherefore of these men which haue companied with vs, all the time that the Lord Iesus was conuersant among vs,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn vnto the day that he was taken vp from vs, must one of them be made a witnesse with vs of his resurrection.

23 And

33 And they presented two, Ioseph called Barsabas, whose surname was Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, saying, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take the roume of this ministration and Apostleship, from which Iudas hath gone astray, to goe to his owne place.

26 Then they gaue forth their lots: & the lot fell on Matthias, & he was by a cõmon consent counted with the eleuen Apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 *The Apostles* 4 *filled with the holy Ghost,* 8 *speake with diuers tongues:* 12 *They are thought to be drunke,* 15 *but Peter disprooueth that.* 34 *He teacheth that Christ is the Messias:* 37 *And seeing the hearers astonied,* 38 *hee exhorteth them to repentance.*

AND when the day of Pentecost was come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heauen, as of a rushing and mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they sate.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sate vpon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the Spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men that feared God, of euery nation vnder heauen.

6 Now when this was noised, the multitude came together, and were astonied, because that euery man heard them speake his owne language.

7 And they wondred all, and marueiled, saying among themselues, Behold, are not all these which speake, of Galile?

8 How then heare we euery man our owne language, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians and Medes, and Elamites and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia & of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus and Asia,

10 And of Phrygia, and Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the parts of Libya, which is beside Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, & Iewes and Proselytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabians: wee heard them speake in our owne tongues the wonderfull *workes* of God.

12 They were all then amased, and doubted, saying one to another, What may this be?

13 And others mocked, and said, They are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing with the eleuen lift vp his voice, and said vnto them, Yee men of Iudea, *and* ye all that inhabite Hierusalem,

salem, be this knowen vnto you, and hearken vnto my words.
15 For these are not drunken, as yee suppose, since it is but the third houre of the day.
Ioel.2.28. 16 But this is that, which was spoken by the Prophet *Ioel,
Isa.24.3. 17 And it shalbe in the last dayes, saith God, I will powre out of my Spirit vpon all flesh, and your sonnes and your daughters shal prophecie, and your yong men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreames.
18 And on my seruants, and on my handmaides I will powre out of my Spirit in those dayes, and they shall prophecie.
19 And I will shew wonders in heauen aboue, and tokens in the earth beneath blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke.
20 The Sunne shalbe turned into darknesse, and the moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.
21 And it shall bee, that whosoeuer shall call on the Name of the Lord, shall be saued.
22 Ye men of Israel heare these words, IESVS of Nazareth, a man approued of God among you with great works, and wonders and signes, which God did by him in the mids of you, as yee your selues also know:
23 Him, *I say*, being deliuered by the determinate counsel, and foreknowledge of God, after you had taken, with wicked hands you haue crucified and slaine.
24 Whom God hath raised vp, and loosed the sorrowes of death, because it was vnpossible that he should be holden of it.
Psal.16.9 25 For Dauid saith concerning him, *I beheld the Lord alwais before me: for he is at my right hand, that I should not be shaken.
26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad, and moreouer also my flesh shall rest in hope:
27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in graue, neither wilt suffer thine Holy one to see corruption.
28 Thou hast shewed me the wayes of life, and shalt make me full of ioy with thy countenance.
29 Men *and* brethren, I may boldly speake vnto you of the patriarch Dauid, *that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre remaineth with vs vnto this day.
Chap.13.36. *1.king.2.10.* *Psal.132.11.* 30 Therefore, seeing hee was a Prophet, and knewe that God had *sworne with an oath to him, that of the fruite of his loynes he wold raise vp Christ concerning the flesh, to set him vpon his throne,
31 He knowing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that *his soule should not be left in graue, neither his flesh should
Chap.13.35. Psal.16.10. see corruption
32 This Iesus hath God raised vp, whereof we all are witnesses,

35 Since

33 Since then that he by the right hand of God hath beene exalted, and hath receiued of his Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed foorth this which yee now see and heare.

34 For Dauid is not ascended into heauen, but he saith,* The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, *Psal.110.1

35 Vntill I make thine enemies thy foote stole.

35 Therefore let all the house of Israel know for a suretie that God hath made him both Lord, and Christ this Iesus, *I say*, whom ye haue crucified.

37 Now when they heard it, they were pricked in their hearts, and said vnto Peter and the other Apostles, Men, *and* brethren what shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said vnto them, Amend your liues, and be baptized euery one of you in the name of Iesus Christ for the remission of sinnes: and ye shall receiue the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise *is made* vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, *euen* as many as ỹ Lord our God shal call.

40 And with many other words hee besought and exhorted *them*, saying, Saue your selues from this froward generation.

41 Then they that gladly receiued his word, were baptized: and the same day, there were added *to the Church* about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued in the Apostles doctrine, and fellowship, and breaking of bread, and prayers.

43 ¶ And feare came vpon euery soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleeued, were in one place, and had all things common.

45 And they sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery one had neede.

46 And they continued dayly with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread at home, did eate their meate together with gladnesse and singlenesse of heart,

47 Praysing God, and had fauour with all the people: and the Lord added to the Church from day to day, such as should be saued.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter goeth into the Temple with Iohn, 2 healeth the creeple. 9 To the people gathered together to see the miracle, 12 he expoundeth the mystery of our saluation through Christ, 14 accusing their ingratitude, 19 and requiring their repentance.

NOw Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple, at the ninth houre of prayer.

2 And a certaine man which was a creeple from his mothers

wombe, was caried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the Temple called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn, that they would enter into the Temple, desired to receiue an almes.

4 And Peter earnestly beholding him with Iohn, said, Looke on vs.

5 And he gaue heed vnto them, trusting to receiue some thing of them.

6 Then said Peter, Siluer and Gold haue I none, but such as I haue, that giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the right hand, and lift *him* vp, and immediatly his feete and ankle bones receiued strength.

8 And he leaped vp, stood, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walke, and praising God.

10 And they knew him, that it was he which sate for the almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were amased, and sore astonied at that, which was come vnto him.

11 ¶ And as the creeple which was healed held Peter and Iohn, all the people ran amased vnto them in the porch which is called Salomons.

12 So when Peter saw it, he answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marualle ye at this? or why looke yee so stedfastly on vs, as though by our owne power or godlinesse, wee had made this man goe?

Chap. 5. 30 13 The God of Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, the * God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, whom ye betrayed, and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to bee deliuered.

14 But ye denied the Holy one and the Iust, and desired a murtherer to be giuen you,

15 And killed the Lord of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his Name hath made this man sound, whom yee see, and know, through faith in his Name: and the faith, which is by him, hath giuen to him this perfite health of his whole body in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I know that through ignorance yee did it, as *did* also your gouernours.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath thus fulfilled.

19 Amend

19 Amend your liues therefore, and turne, that your sinnes may be put away, when the time of refreshing shal come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you

21 Whom the heauen must conteine vntill the time that all things be restored, which God hath spoken by the mouth of al his holy Prophets since the world began.

22 * For Moses said vnto the Fathers, The Lord your God shal raise vp vnto you a Prophet, *euen* of your brethren like vnto me: ye shall heare him in all things, whatsoeuer he shall say vnto you

Deut. 18. 15. chap. 7. 37

23 For it shall be that euery person which shall not heare that Prophet, shall be destroyed out of the people.

24 Also all the Prophets from Samuel, and thenceforth as many as haue spoken, haue likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Yee are the children of the Prophets, and of the couenant which God hath made vnto our Fathers saying to Abraham, * And in thy seede shall all the kinreds of the earth be blessed.

Gen. 12. 3. & 22. 18. & 26. 4. & 28. 14. Gal. 3. 8.

26 First vnto you hath God raised vp his Sonne Iesus, and him he hath sent to blesse you, in turning euery one of you from your iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Peter and Iohn are taken and brought before the Councell: 7 and 19 They speake boldly in Christs cause. 24 The disciples pray vnto God. 32 Many sell their possessions: 36 Of whom Barnabas is one.

AND as they spake vnto the people, the Priests and the Captaine of the Temple, and the Sadducees came vpon them,

2 Taking it grieuously that they taught the people, and preached in Iesus Name the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they layd hands on them, and put them in hold, vntill the next day: for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleeued, and the number of the men was about fiue thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrow, that their rulers and Elders, and Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,

6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of the hie Priests.

7 And when they had set them before them, they asked, By what power, or in what Name haue ye done this?

8 Then Peter full of the holy Ghost, said vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel.

9 For as much as wee this day are examined of the good deed

deed *done* to the impotent man, *to wit*, by what meanes he is made whole.

10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of IESVS CHRIST of Nazareth, whom ye haue crucified, whom God raised againe from the dead, euen by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

Psal.118. 22.isa.28. 28.matth. 21.42. mar.12. 10.luke 20.17. rom.9.33. 1.pet.2.7.

11 * This is the stone cast aside of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there saluation in any other: for among men there is giuen none other name vnder heauen, wherby we must be saued.

13 Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstood that they were vnlearned men & without knowledge, they marueiled, and knew them, that they had been with Iesus:

14 And beholding also the man which was healed standing with them, they had nothing to say against it.

15 Then they commanded them to goe aside out of the Councill, and conferred among themselues.

16 Saying, What shall we doe to these men? for surely a manifest signe is done by them, *and it is* openly knowen to all them that dwell in Hierusalem: and we cannot denie it.

17 But that it be noised no farther among the people, let us threaten and charge them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 So they called them, and commanded them, that in no wise they should speake or teach in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and Iohn answered vnto them, and said, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to obey you rather then God, iudge ye.

20 For we cannot but speake the things which we haue seene and heard.

21 So they threatned them, and let them go, and found nothing how to punish them, because of the people: for all men praised God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue fortie yeeres olde, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 Then assoone as they were let goe, they came to their fellowes and shewed all that the hie Priests and Elders had said vnto them.

24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voices to God with one accord, and said, O Lord, thou art the God which hast made the heauen, and the earth, the sea, and all things that are in them.

Psal. 2.1.

25 Which by the mouth of thy seruant Dauid hast said, * Why did the Gentiles rage, and the people imagine vaine things?

25 The

26 The kings of the earth assembled, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For doubtlesse, against thine holy Sonne Iesus, whom thou hadst anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, gathered themselues together,

28 To doe whatsoeuer thine hand, and thy counsell had determined before to be done.

29 And now, O Lord, behold their threatnings, and grant vnto thy seruants with all boldnesse to speake thy word,

30 So that thou stretch forth thine hand, that healing, and signes and wonders may be done by the Name of thine holy Son Iesus.

31 And when as they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God boldly.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued were of one heart, and of one soule: neither any of them sayd, that any thing of that which hee possessed was his owne, but they had all things *common. *C'a.2.44.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus: and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses, sold them, and brought the price of the things that were sold,

35 And laid it downe at the Apostles feete, and it was distributed vnto euery man according as he had neede.

36 Also Ioses which was called of the Apostles, Barnabas (that is by interpretation, the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite, and of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Whereas he had land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it downe at the Apostles feete.

CHAP. V.

1 *Ananias for his deceit in keeping backe part of the price,* 5 *falleth downe dead,* 10 *and likewise Sapphira his wife.* 12 *Through diuers the Apostles miracles,* 14 *the faith is increased.* 18. *The Apostles that were imprisoned,* 19 *are deliuered by an Angel,* 26 *and being before the Synode of the Priests,* 36 *through Gamaliels counsell they are kept aliue,* 40 *and beaten:* 41 *They glorifie God.*

BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept away *part* of the price, his wife also being of counsell, and brought a certaine part, and laid it downe at the Apostles feete.

3 Then said Peter, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart,

that thou shouldest lie vnto the holy Ghost, and keepe away *part* of the price of this possession?

4 Whilest it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? how is it that thou hast conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 Now when Ananias heard these words, hee fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost. Then great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the yong men rose vp, and tooke him vp, and caried *him* out, and buried *him*.

7 And it came to passe about the space of three houres after, that his wife came in, ignorant of that which was done.

8 And Peter said vnto her, Tell mee, sold yee the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said vnto her, Why haue yee agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feete of them which haue buried thine husband *are* at the doore, and shall carie thee out.

10 Then she fell downe straightway at his feet and yeelded vp the ghost: and the yong men came in, and found her dead, and caried her out, and buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came on all the Church, and on as many as heard these things.

12 Thus by the hands of the Apostles were many signes and wonders shewed among the people (and they were all with one accord in Salomons porch.

13 And of the other durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: neuertheless the people magnified them.

14 And the number of them that beleeued in the Lord, both of men and women, grew more and more)

15 Insomuch that they brought the sicke into the streetes, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least way the shadowe of Peter, when he came by, might shadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits, who were all healed.

17 Then the chiefe Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him (which was the sect of the Sadducees) and were full of indignation,

18 And layd hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lorde by night opened the prison doores, and brought them foorth, and sayd,

20 Go

20 Goe your way, and ſtand in the Temple, and ſpeake to the people, all the words of this life.

21 So when they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Prieſt came, and they that were with him, and called the Councill together, and all the Elders of the children of Iſrael, and ſent to the priſon, to cauſe them to be brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the priſon, they returned and told it,

23 Saying, Certainely we found the priſon ſhut as fure as was poſſible, and the keepers ſtanding without before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Then when the *chiefe* Prieſt, and the captaine of the Temple, and the hie Prieſts heard theſe things, they doubted of them, whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and ſhewed them, ſaying, Behold, the men that ye put in priſon, are ſtanding in the Temple, and teach the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence (for they feared the people, leſt they ſhould haue been ſtoned.)

27 And when they had brought them, they ſet them before the Councill and the chiefe Prieſt asked them,

28 Saying, Did not wee ſtraitly command you, that yee ſhould not teach in this Name? and behold, ye haue filled Hieruſalem with your doctrine, and ye would bring this mans blood vpon vs.

29 Then Peter and the Apoſtles anſwered and ſaid, We ought rather to obey God then men.

30 The * God of our fathers hath raiſed vp Ieſus whom yee ſlew, and hanged on a tree. *Chap. 10.*

31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand, *to be* a Prince and a Sauiour, to giue repentance to Iſrael and forgiueneſſe of ſinnes.

32 And wee are witneſſes concerning theſe things which wee ſay: yea, and the holy Ghoſt, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him.

33 Now when they heard it, they braſt for anger, and conſulted to ſlay them.

34 Then ſtood there vp in the Councill a certaine Phariſe named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Law, honoured of all the people, and commanded to put the Apoſtles foorth a little ſpace,

35 And ſaid vnto them, Men of Iſrael, take heed to your ſelues, what ye intend to doe touching theſe men.

36 For before theſe times, roſe vp Theudas boaſting himſelfe, to whom reſorted a number of men about a foure hundreth, who

was slaine: and they all which obeyed him were scattered, and brought to nought.

37 After this man arose vp Iudas of Galile, in the dayes of the tribute, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all that obeyed him were scattered abroad.

38 And now I say vnto you, Refraine your selues from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell, or this worke bee of men, it will come to nought:

39 But if it be of God, yee cannot destroy it, lest ye be found euen fighters against God.

40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten them, they commaunded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 So they departed from the Councill, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer rebuke for his Name.

42 And dayly in the Temple, and from house to house they ceased not to teach and preach Iesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

2 The Apostles 3 appoint the office of Deaconship 5 to seuen chosen men: 8 Of whom Steuen full of faith is one: 12 He is taken, 13 and accused as a transgressour of Moses Law.

AND in those dayes, as the number of the disciples grew, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towards the Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the dayly ministring.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and said, It is not meete that wee should leaue the word of God to serue the tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke yee out among you seuen men of honest report, and full of the holy Ghost, and of wisedome, which we may appoint to this businesse.

4 And wee will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministration of the word.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and * Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a Proselyte of Antiochia. *Ch.21.8.*

6 Which they set before the Apostles: and they prayed, and layd their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great company of the Priests were obedient to the faith.

8 ¶ Now Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue, which are called Libertines,

Libertines, and Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, and disputed with Steuen.

10 But they were not able to resist the wisedome and the Spirit by the which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men, which said, Wee haue heard him speake blasphemous words against Moses, and God.

12 Thus they mooued the people and the Elders, and the Scribes: and running vpon him, caught him, and brought him to the Councill,

13 And set foorth false witnesses, which sayd, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place, and the Lawe.

14 For we haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ordinances, which Moses gaue vs.

15 And as all that sate at the Councel, looked stedfastly on him, they saw his face as *it had been* the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

2 Steuen pleading his cause, sheweth that God chose the fathers 20 before Moses was borne, 47 and before the Temple was built: 44 And that outward ceremonies were ordained according to the heauenly Paterne. 54 The Iewes gnashing their teeth, 59 stone him.

THen said the chiefe Priest, Are these things so?

2 And he said, Ye men, brethren and fathers, hearken. * That God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, *Gen.12.4*

3 And said vnto him, Come out of thy Countrey, and from thy kinred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And after that his father was dead, *God* brought him from thence into this land wherein ye now dwell,

5 And he gaue him none inheritance in it, no, not the breadth of a foote: yet hee promised that hee would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seede after him, when as yet hee had no child.

6 But God spake thus, that his *seede should be a sojourner in a strange land, and that they should keepe it in bondage, and entreate it euill foure hundred yeeres. *Gen.15. 13.*

7 But the nation to whom they shall bee in bondage, will I iudge, saith God: and after that, they shall come foorth, and serue me in this place.

8 * Hee gaue him also the couenant of circumcision: and so *Abraham* begat * Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: and *Gen.17.9 Gen.21.3*

Gen.25. Isaac *begate* * Iacob, and Iacob the twelue * Patriarkes.
24. 9 And the Patriarkes moued with enuie sold * Ioseph into E-
Gen 29. gypt, but God was with him,
33.and 10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, and * gaue him
30.5.and fauour and wisedome in the sight of Pharao king of Egypt, who
35.23. made him gouernour ouer Egypt, and *ouer* his whole house.
Gen.37. 11 ¶ Then came there famine ouer all the land of Egypt and
28. Chanaan, and great affliction, that our fathers found no sustenance.
Gen.41. 12 But when * Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, hee
37. sent our fathers first:
Gen.42.1 13 * And at the second time, Ioseph was knowen of his bre-
Gen.45.4. thren, and Iosephs kinred was made knowen vnto Pharao,
14 Then sent Ioseph and caused his father to be brought, and
all his kinred, euen threescore, and fiftene soules.
Gen.46.5 15 So * Iacob went downe into Egypt, and he * died, and
Gen.49. our fathers,
33. 16 And were remooued into Sychem and were put in the se-
Gen.23. pulchre, that Abraham had bought * for money of the sonnes of
16. Emor, *sonne* of Sychem.
17 But when the time of the promise drew neere, which God
Exod.1.7. had sworne to Abraham, the people * grewe and multiplied in
Egypt,
18 Till another king arose, which knew not Ioseph.
19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, and euill intreated
our fathers, and made them to cast out their young children, that
they should not remaine aliue.
Exod.2.2. 20 * The same time was Moses borne, and was acceptable
vnto God, which was nourished vp in his fathers house three
moneths.
21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter tooke him
vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne.
22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedome of the Egypti-
ans, and was mighty in words and in deedes.
23 Now when he was full fourty yeeres olde, it came into his
heart to visit his brethren, the children of Israel.
Exo.2.11 24 * And when he saw one *of them* suffer wrong, hee defended
him, and auenged his quarrell that had the harme done to him,
and smote the Egyptian.
25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vnderstood, that
God by his hand should giue them deliuerance: but they vnder-
stood it not.
Exo.2.13 26 * And the next day, hee shewed himselfe vnto them as they
stroue, and would haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, ye are
brethren, why doe you wrong eue to another?

27 But

27 But hee that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, and a iudge ouer vs?
28 Wilt thou kill mee, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?
29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonnes.
30 And when fourty yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the * wildernesse of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush. *Exod.3.2*
31 And when Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight: and as he drew neere to consider it, the voice of the Lord came vnto him, *saying*,
32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold it.
33 Then the Lord said vnto him, Put off thy shooes from thy feete: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.
34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am come downe to deliuer them: and now come, and I will send thee into Egypt.
35 This Moses whom they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince and a iudge? the same God sent for a prince, and a deliuerer by the hand of the Angel, which appeared to him in the bush.
36 Hee * brought them out, doing wonders, and miracles, in the land of Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernesse * forty yeeres. *Exo. 7,8 9,10, 11, 14 chap.*
37 This is that Moses, which said vnto the children of Israel, * A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you, *euen* of your brethren like vnto me: him shall ye heare. *ters. Exo.16.1 Cha.3.22.*
38 * This is he that was in the Congregation, in the wildernesse with the Angel, which spake to him in mount Sina, and with our fathers, who receiued the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs *Actes.18. 15. Exo.19.2*
39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but refused, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt.
40 Saying vnto Aaron, * Make vs gods that may go before vs: for we know not what is become of this Moses that brought vs out of the land of Egypt. *Exo.32.1*
41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their owne hands.
42 Then God turned himselfe away, and gaue them vp to serue the hoste of heauen, as it is written in the booke of the Prophets, * O house of Israel haue ye offered to me slaine beasts and sacrifices by the space of fourty yeres in the wildernesse? *Amos 5. 25.*

43 And ye tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the ſtarre of your god Romphan, figures, which yee made to worſhip them: therefore I will cary you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witneſſe in the wildernes, as he had appointed, ſpeaking vnto *Moſes, that he ſhould make it according to the faſhion that he had ſeene.

45 *Which *tabernacle* alſo our fathers receiued, and brought in with Ieſus into the poſſeſsion of the Gentiles, which God draue out before our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid:

46 *Who found fauour before God, and deſired that he might finde a tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

47 *But Salomon built him an houſe.

48 Howbeit the moſt High *dwelleth not in Temples made with hands, as ſaith the Prophet,

49 *Heauen *is* my throne, and earth *is* my footſtoole: what houſe will ye build for me, ſaith the Lord? or what place *is it* that I ſhould reſt in?

50 Hath not mine hand made all theſe things?

51 *Ye ſtiffenecked, and of vncircumciſed hearts and eares, ye haue alwayes reſiſted the holy Ghoſt: as your fathers *did*, ſo *doe* you.

52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers perſecuted? and they haue ſlaine them, which ſhewed before of the comming of that Iuſt, of whom ye are now the betrayers and murtherers,

53 *Which haue receiued the Lawe by the ordinance of Angels, and haue not kept it.

54 But when they heard theſe things, their hearts braſt for anger, and they gnaſhed at him with *their* teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghoſt, looked ſtedfaſtly into heauen, and ſaw the glory of God, and Ieſus ſtanding at the right hand of God,

56 And ſaid, Behold, I ſee the heauens open, and the Sonne of man ſtanding at the right hand of God.

57 Then they gaue a ſhout with a loud voice, and ſtopped their eares, and ran vpon him violently all at once,

58 And caſt him out of the citie, and ſtoned him: and the witneſſes laid downe their clothes at a yong mans feete named Saul.

59 And they ſtoned Steuen, who called on *God*, and ſaid, Lord Ieſus receiue my ſpirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed with a loud voice, Lord lay not this ſinne to their charge, and when he had thus ſpoken, he ſlept.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *The godly make lamentation for Steuen.* 3 *Saul maketh hauocke of*

Exod. 25. 40. hebr. 8.5.

Ioſh. 3.14. 2. Sam 7.2

pſa. 132 5 1. Chro. 17 22. 1. kin. 6.1. Chap. 17. 24.

Iſa. 66. 1.

Iere. 9.26 ezek. 44.9

Exod. 19. 16 galat. 3.19.

of the Church. 5 Philip preacheth Christ at Samaria. 9 Simon Magus, 18 his couetousnesse reproued. 26 Philip 27 commeth to the Ethiopian Eunuch. 38 and baptizeth him.

AND Saul consented to his death, and at that time there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Ierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad through the regions of Iudea and of Samaria, except the Apostles.

2 Then *certaine* men fearing God, caried Steuen among them, *to be buried*, and made great lamentation for him.

3 But Saul made hauocke of the Church, and entred into euery house, and drew out both men and women, and put them into prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went to and fro preaching the word.

5 ¶Then came Philip into the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people gaue heed vnto those things which Philip spake with one accord, hearing & seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits crying with a loud voice, came out of many that were possessed *of them*: and many taken with palsies, and that halted, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 And there was before in the citie a certaine man called Simon, which vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying, That he himselfe was some great man.

10 To whom they gaue heede from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is that great power of God.

11 And they gaue heede vnto him, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But assoone as they beleeued Philip, which preached the things that concerned the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also, and was baptized, and continued with Philip, and wondred, when he saw the signes and great miracles which were done.

14 ¶Now when the Apostles, which were at Hierusalem, heard say, that Samaria had receiued the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for them that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet he was fallen downe on none of them, but they were baptized onely in the Name of the Lord Iesus)

17 Then layd they their hands on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And

18 And when Simon saw, that through laying on of the Apostles hands the holy Ghost was giuen, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I lay the hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 Then said Peter vnto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of God may bee obtained with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor fellowship in this businesse: for thine heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, that if it be possible, the thought of thine heart may be forgiuen thee.

23 For I see that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then answered Simon, & said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye haue spoken, come vpon me.

25 ¶So they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel in many townes of the Samaritanes.

26 Then the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise, and goe toward the South vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is waste.

27 And he arose and went on: and behold, a certaine Eunuch of Ethiopia, Candaces the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe gouernour, who had the rule of all her treasure, and came to Hierusalem to worship.

28 And as he returned sitting in his charet, he read Esaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Goe neere and ioyne thy selfe to yonder charet.

30 And Philip ran thither and heard him reade the Prophet Esaias, and said, But vnderstandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said, How can I, except I had a guide? And he desired Philip, that he would come vp and sit with him.

32 Now the place of the Scripture which he read, was this, *He was led as a sheepe to the slaughter: and like a lambe dumbe before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth. *Esa.53.7.

33 In his humilitie his iudgement hath been exalted: but who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 Then the Eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee of whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus,

36 And

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, and the Eunuch said, See, here is water: what doeth let me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said vnto him, If thou beleeuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. Then hee answered, and sayd, I beleeue that that Iesus Christ is that Sonne of God.

38 Then he commanded the charet to stand still, and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and hee baptized him.

39 And assoone as they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more: so hee went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus, and hee walked to and fro preaching in all the cities till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

2 Saul going towards Damascus, 4 is stroken downe to the ground of the Lord. 10 Ananias is sent 18 to baptize him 23 The lying awaite of the Iewes 25 he escapeth, being let downe through the wall. 33 Peter cureth Aeneas of the palsie, 36 and by him, Tabitha being dead, 40 is restored to life.

AND *Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord went vnto the hie Priest, *Rom.9.3. Gal.1.13.*

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he found any that were of that way (either men or women) he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 Now as he iourneyed, it came to passe that as hee was come neere to Damascus, *suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen. *Cha 22.6. 1.cor.15.8*

4 And hee fell to the earth, and heard a voice, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against prickes.

6 *He then* both trembling and astonied, said, Lord, what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the citie, and it shall be told thee what thou shalt doe.

7 The men also which iourneyed with him, stoode amazed hearing *his* voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the ground and opened his eyes, *but* saw no man. Then led they him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus,

9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and neither ate nor drank.

10 And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus named Ana-

nias:

nias: And to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am *here* Lord.

11 Then the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the streete which is called Straight, and seeke in the house of Iudas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth.

12 (And hee saw in a vision a man named Ananias comming in *to him*, and putting his hands on him that hee might receiue his sight)

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euill he hath done to thy Saints at Hierusalem.

14 Moreouer, here he hath authoritie of the hie Priest, to bind all that call on thy Name.

15 Then the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen vessell vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him, how many things he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 Then Ananias went his way, and entred into that house, and put his hands on him, and said, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me (*euen* Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fel from his eyes as *it had bene* scales, and suddenly he receiued sight, and rose, and was baptized,

19 And receiued meate, and was strengthned. So was Saul certaine dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of God,

21 So that all that heard him, were amased and said, Is not this he, that made hauocke of them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, & came hither for that intent, that he should bring them bound vnto the hie Priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, confirming that this was that Christ.

23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsell together to kill him.

24 But their laying await was knowen of Saul: now they
2. Cor. 11. 32. * watched the gates day and night, that they might kill him.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, & put him through the wall, and let him downe by a rope in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, hee assayed to ioyne himselfe with the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and beleeued not that he was a disciple.

27 But

28 But barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apoſtles, and declared to them how he had ſeene the Lord in the way, and that hee had ſpoken vnto him, and how hee had ſpoken boldly at Damaſcus in the Name of Ieſus.

28 And he was conuerſant with them at Hieruſalem,

29 And ſpake boldly in the Name of the Lord Ieſus, and ſpake & diſputed againſt the Grecians: but they went about to ſlay him.

30 But when the brethren knew it, they brought him to Ceſarea, and ſent him foorth to Tarſus.

31 Then had the Churches reſt throngh all Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria, & were edified, and walked in the feare of the Lord, and were multiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghoſt.

32 And it came to paſſe, as Peter walked throughout all *quarters*, he came alſo to the Saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certaine man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight yeeres, and was ſicke of the palſie.

34 Then ſayd Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Ieſus Chriſt maketh thee whole: ariſe and truſſe thy couch together. And he aroſe immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, ſaw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 There was alſo at Ioppa a certaine *woman*, a diſciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) ſhe was ful of good workes and almes which ſhe did.

37 And it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that ſhe was ſicke, and dyed: and when they had waſhed her, they layd her in an vpper chamber.

38 Now foraſmuch as Lydda was neere to Ioppa, and the diſciples had heard that Peter was there, they ſent vnto him two men, deſiring that he would not delay to come vnto them.

39 Then Peter aroſe and came with them: and when hee was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber, where all the widowes ſtood by him weeping, and ſhewing the coates and garments which Dorcas made, while ſhe was with them.

40 But Peter put them all foorth, and kneeled downe and prayed, and turned him to the body, and ſaid, Tabitha, Ariſe. And ſhe opened her eyes, and when ſhe ſaw Peter, ſate vp.

41 Then he gaue her the hand, and lift her vp, and called the Saints and widowes, and reſtored her a liue.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to paſſe, that he taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius, 4 at the Angels commandement, 5 sendeth for Peter, 11 who also by a vision, 15. 20 is taught not to despise the Gentiles. 34 He preacheth the Gospel to Cornelius and his household, 45 Who having received the holy Ghost, 47 are baptized.

FVrthermore there was a certaine man in Cesarea called Cornelius, a captaine of the band called the Italian *band*,

2 A deuout man and one that feared God with all his household, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed God continually.

3 He saw in a vision euidently (about the ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 But when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God.

5 Now therefore send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his seruants, and a souldier that feared God, one of them that waited on him,

8 And told them all things, and sent them to Ioppa.

9 On the morrow as they went on their iourney, and drewe neere vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the sixt houre.

10 Then waxed hee an hungred, and would haue eaten: but while they made *some thing* ready, he fell into a trance.

11 And hee sawe heauen opened, and a certaine vessell come downe vnto him, as *it had beene* a great sheete, knit at the foure corners, and was let downe to the earth.

12 Wherein were all manner of foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the heauen.

13 And there came a voice to him. Arise, Peter: kill and eate.

14 But Peter said, Not so Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is polluted, or vncleane.

15 And the voice *spake* vnto him againe the second time, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

16 This was so done thrice: and the vessell was drawen vp againe into heauen.

17 ¶ Now while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which hee had seene, meant, beholde, the men which were sent

from

from Cornelius had inquired for Simons houſe, and ſtood at the gate,

18 And called and asked, whether Simon, which was ſurnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 And while Peter thought on the viſion, the Spirit ſaid vnto him, Behold, three men ſeeke thee.

20 Ariſe therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, and doubt nothing: for I haue ſent them.

21 ¶ Then Peter went downe to the men, which were ſent vnto him from Cornelius, and ſaid, Behold, I am he whom ye ſeeke: what is the cauſe wherefore ye are come?

22 And they ſaid, Cornelius the captaine, a iuſt man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from heauen by an holy Angel, to ſend for thee into his houſe, and to heare thy words.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them, and the next day Peter went foorth with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 ¶ And the day after, they entred into Ceſarea. Now Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinſemen, and ſpeciall friends.

25 And it came to paſſe as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, and worſhipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, ſaying, Stand vp: for euen I my ſelfe am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he came in, and found many that were come together.

28 And hee ſaid vnto them, Yee knowe that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iewe, to companie, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath ſhewed me, that I ſhould not call any man polluted, or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without ſaying nay, when I was ſent for: I aske therefore, for what intent haue ye ſent for me?

30 Then Cornelius ſaid, Foure dayes agoe, about this houre I faſted, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine houſe, and behold, a man ſtood before me in bright clothing,

31 And ſaid, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the ſight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa and call for Simon whoſe ſurname is Peter: (hee is lodged in the houſe of Simon a tanner by the ſea ſide) who when he commeth, ſhall ſpeake vnto thee.

33 Then ſent I for thee immediatly, and thou haſt well done to come. Now therefore are wee all here preſent before God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 Then

34 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a trueth I per-
Deut.10.17.2.chr.19.7.iob 34.19. ceiue, that * God is no accepter of persons.
35 But in euery nation hee that feareth him, and worketh righ-
teousnesse, is accepted with him.
36 Ye know the word which God hath sent to the children of
rom.2.11 Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ, which is Lord of all.
gal.2.6. 37 *Euen* the word which came through all Iudea, * beginning
ephes.6.9. in Galile, after the baptisme which Iohn preached.
col.3.25. 38 *To wit*, how God anointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy
1.pet.1.17 Ghost, and with power: who went about doing good, & healing
Luk.4.14 all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him.
39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the
land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slewe, hanging
him on a tree.
40 Him God raised vp the third day, and caused that hee was
shewed openly:
41 Not to all the people, but vnto the witnesses chosen before
of God, *euen* to vs which did eate and drinke with him, after hee
arose from the dead.
42 And hee commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to
testifie, that it is he that is ordained of God a iudge of quicke and
dead.
Ier.31.34 43 To him also giue all the * Prophets witnesse, that through
heb.8.7. his Name all that beleeue in him, shal receiue remission of sinnes.
18.chap. 44 While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on
15.9. all them which heard the word.
45 So they of the circumcision which beleeued, were astonied,
as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was
powred out the gift of the holy Ghost:
46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie
God. Then answered Peter,
47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be bapti-
zed, which haue receiued the holy Ghost, as well as we?
48 So he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the
Lord. Then prayed they him to tarie certaine dayes.

CHAP. XI.

2 Peter being accused for going to the Gentiles, 5 defendeth himselfe. 22 Barnabas is sent to Antiochia, 26 where the disciples are called Christians: 28 And there Agabus foretelleth a famine to come.

NOw the Apostles and the brethren that were in Iudea, heard,
that the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God.
2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the
circumcision contended against him,

3 Saying,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, and hast eaten with them.

4 Then Peter began, and expounded *the thing* in order to them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw *this* vision, A certaine vessell comming downe, as *it had beene* a great sheete, let downe from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me.

6 Toward the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the heauen.

7 Also I heard a voice saying vnto me, Arise Peter, slay & eate.

8 And I said, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me the second time from heauen, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

10 And this was done three times, and all were taken vp againe into heauen.

11 Then behold, immediatly there were three men alreadie come vnto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit said vnto me, that I should goe with them, without doubting: moreouer these sixe brethren came with me, and we entred into the mans house.

13 And he shewed vs how he had seene an Angel in his house, which stood and said to him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter.

14 Hee shall speake words vnto thee, whereby both thou and all thine house shalbe saued.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, * euen as vpon vs at the beginning. *Chap.2.4.*

16 Then I remembred the word of the Lord, how hee said, * Iohn baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost. *Chap.1.5. and 19.4.*

17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them a like gift, as *he did* vnto vs when we beleeued in the Lord Iesus Christ, who was I, that I could let God? *mat.3.11 mark.1.8 luke 3.15*

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life. *ioh.1.26.*

19 ¶ And they which were * scattered abroad because of the affliction that arose about Steuen, went throughout till they came vnto Phenice and Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching the word to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely. *Chap.8.1.*

20 Now some of them were men of Cyprus, and of Cyrene,

which when they were come into Antiochia, spake vnto the Gre-cians, and preached the Lord Iesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleeued, and turned vnto the Lord.

22 Then tidings of those things came vnto the eares of the Church which was in Hierusalem, and they sent foorth Barnabas that he should goe vnto Antiochia.

23 Who when he was come, and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all, that with purpose of heart they would continue in the Lord.

24 For hee was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and faith, and much people ioyned themselues vnto the Lord.

25 ¶ Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul.

26 And when hee had found him, he brought him vnto Antiochia, and it came to passe, that a whole yeere they were conuersant with the Church, and taught much people, insomuch that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia.

27 In those dayes also came Prophets from Hierusalem to Antiochia.

28 And there stood vp one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout all the world, which also came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, euery man according to his abilitie, purposed to send succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which thing they also did, and sent it to the Elders, by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

2 Herod killeth Iames with the sword: 4 and imprisoneth Peter, 8 whom the Angel deliuereth. 20 Herod being offended with them of Tyrus, 21 is pacified: 22 and taking the honour due to God, to himself, 23 he is eaten with wormes, and so dieth.

NOwe about that time, Herod the King stretched foorth his hands to vexe certaine of the Church,

2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the sword.

3 And when he saw that it pleased the Iewes, hee proceeded further, to take Peter also: (then were the dayes of vnleauened bread)

4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison, and deliuered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to be kept, intending after the Passeouer to bring him foorth to the people.

5 So Peter was kept in prison, but earnest prayer was made of the Church vnto God for him.

6 And when Herod would haue brought him out vnto the people, the same night slept Peter betweene two souldiers, bound

with

with two chaines, and the keepers before the doore kept the prison.

7 *And behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and a light shined in the house, & he smote Peter on the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise quickly. And his chains fel off from *his* hands. *Chap. 5.9.*

8 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, and binde on thy sandales. And so he did. Then he said vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 So *Peter* came out and followed him, and knewe not that it was true, which was done by the Angel, but thought he had seen a vision.

10 Now when they were past the first and the second watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them by it owne accord, and they went out, and passed through one streete, and by and by the Angel departed from him.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to himselfe, he said, Now I know for a trueth, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, and hath deliuered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the waiting for of the people of the Iewes.

12 And as he considered *the thing*, he came to the house of Marie the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together, and prayed.

13 And when Peter knocked at the entry doore, a mayd came forth to hearken, named Rhode.

14 But when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the entrie *doore* for gladnesse, but ranne in, and told how Peter stood before the entrie.

15 But they said vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet shee affirmed it constantly that it was so. Then said they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened it, and saw him, they were astonied.

17 And hee beckened vnto them with the hand, to holde their peace, and tolde them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Goe shew these things vnto Iames, and to the brethren: and he departed, and went into another place.

18 ¶ Now assone as it was day, there was no small trouble among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded them to be led to be punished. And he went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and *there* abode.

20 Then Herod was angrie with them of Tyrus and Sidon, but they came all with one accord vnto him, and perswaded Blastus the Kings Chamberlaine, and they desired peace, because

their countrey was nourished by the Kings *land.*

21 And vpon a day appointed, Herod arayed himselfe in royall apparell, and sate on the iudgement seate, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, *saying*, The voice of God, and not of man.

23 But immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not glory vnto God, so that hee was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost.

24 And the word of God grew, and multiplied.

25 So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

CHAP. XIII.

2 *The holy Ghost commandeth that Paul and Barnabas be separated vnto him.* 6 *At Paphus* 8 *Elymas the sorcerer* 11 *is stricken blinde:* 14 *From whence being come to Antiochia,* 17 *They preach the Gospel,* 45 *the Iewes vehemently withstanding them.*

THere were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets and teachers, as Barnabas, and Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen (which had been brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul.

2 Now as they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 Then fasted they and prayed, and laid their hands on them, and let them goe.

4 And they, after they were sent foorth of the holy Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to *their* minister.

6 So when they had gone throughout the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, being a Iewe, named Barieſus,

7 Which was with the Deputie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, and sought to turne away the Deputie from the faith.

9 Then Saul (which also *is called* Paul) being full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And

10 And said, O full of all subtiltie, and all mischiefe, the child of the deuill, *and* enemie of all righteousnesse, wilt thou not cease to peruert the straight wayes of the Lord?

11 Now therefore behold, the hand of the Lord *is* vpon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and darkenesse, and he went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when he saw what was done, beleeued, and was astonied at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and they that were with him, were departed by ship from Paphus, they came to Perga *a citie* of Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them, and returned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antiochia *a citie* of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

15 And after the lecture of the Law and Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckned with the hand, and said, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, hearken.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of * Egypt, and with an * high arme brought them out thereof. *Exod.1.9 Exod.13. 14.*

18 And about the time * of fourtie yeeres, suffered hee their maners in the wildernesse. *Exo.16.1*

19 And hee destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, and * diuided their land to them by lot. *Iosh.14.1*

20 Then afterward hee gaue vnto them * Iudges about foure hundred and fiftie yeeres, vnto *the time of* Samuel the Prophet. *Iudg.3.9. 1.Sam.8.5*

21 So after that, they desired a * King, and God gaue vnto them * Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, *by the space* of fourtie yeeres. *1.Sam.9. 15.and 10.1.*

22 And after he had taken him away, he raised vp * Dauid to be their King, of whom he witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid *the sonne* of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which will doe all things that I will. *1.Sam.16 13. Psal.89. 21. isa. 11.1.*

23 Of this mans seede hath God * according to *his* promise raised vp to Israel, the Sauiour Iesus: *Mal.3.1.*

24 When * Iohn had first preached before his comming, the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel. *mat.3.1. mar.1.2.*

25 And when Iohn had fulfilled *his* course, hee said, * Whom ye thinke that I am, I am not he: but behold, there commeth one after me, whose shoe of *his* feete, I am not worthy to loose. *luke 3.2. Mat.3.11 mar.1.7.*

26 Ye men and brethren, children of the generation of Abra- *ioh. 1.20.*

ham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the word of this saluation sent.

27 For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, and their rulers, because they knewe him not, nor yet the words of the Prophets, which are read euery Sabbath *day*, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

Mat.27. 22.marke 15.13.luk 23.23. ioh.19.6. 28 And though they found no cause of death *in him*, *yet desired they Pilate to kill him.

Mat.28. 2.marke 16.6.luke 24.6 ioh 20.19. 29 And when they had fulfilled all things that were written of him, they tooke him downe frō the tree, & put him in a sepulchre.

30 But God *raised him vp from the dead.

31 And he was seen many dayes of them, which came vp with him from Galile o Hierusalem, which are his witnesses vnto the people.

32 And we declare vnto you, that touching the promise made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their children, in that he raised vp Iesus, euen as it is written in the second Psalme, *Thou art *Psal. 2. 7. heb. 1. 5. and 5. 5.* my Sonne, this day haue I begotten thee.

34 Now as concerning that hee raised him vp from the dead, no more to returne to corruption, he hath said thus, *I will giue *Isa 55. 3. Cha. 2. 3 1.* you the holy things of Dauid, which are faithfull.

psa.16.11 35 Wherefore he saith also in another place, *Thou wilt not suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

36 Howbeit, Dauid after hee had serued his time by the counsell of God, he *slept, and was laid with his fathers, and saw corruption. *Cha 2 29. 1.kng 2. 10.*

37 But he whom God raised vp, saw no corruption.

38 Be it known vnto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes.

39 And from all things from which ye could not be iustified by the Lawe of Moses, by him euery one that beleeueth, is iustified.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come vpon you, which is spoken of in the Prophets,

Hab.1.5. 41 *Behold, yee despisers and wonder, and vanish away: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which yee shall not beleeue, if a man would declare it you.

42 ¶And when they were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles besought that they would preach these words to them the next Sabbath *day*.

43 Now when the Congregation was dissolued, many of the Iewes, and Proselites that feared God, followed Paul and Barnabas, which spake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God.

44 And

44 And the next Sabbath *day* came almost the whole citie together to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes saw the people, they were full of enuy, and spake against those things which were spoken of Paul, contrarying *them*, and railing on *them*.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas spake boldly, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first haue beene spoken vnto you: but seeing ye put it from you, and iudge your selues vnworthy of euerlasting life, loe, we turne to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, *saying*,* I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest bee the saluation vnto the end of the world. *Isa. 49.6.*

48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto eternall life, beleeued.

49 Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrey.

50 But the Iewes stirred *certaine* deuout and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. *Cha. 18.6*

51 But they *shooke off the dust of their feet against them, and came vnto Iconium, *matt. 10. 14. marke 6.11. luke 9.5.*

52 And ‡ disciples were filled with ioy, & with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas 5 are persecuted in Iconium: 6 At Lystra Paul 10 healeth a cripple: 13 They are about to do sacrifice vnto them, 15 but they forbidit: 19 Paul, by the perswasion of certaine Iewes, is stoned: 23 From thence passing thorow diuers Churches, 26 they returne to Antiochia.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and of the Grecians beleeued.

2 And the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp and corrupted the minds of the Gentiles against the brethren.

3 So therefore they abode there a long time, and spake boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimony vnto the word of his grace, and caused signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the citie was diuided: and some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to doe them violence, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region round about,

7 And there preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ Now there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked.

9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him, and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed:

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand vpright on thy feet. And he leaped vp, and walked.

11 Then when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their city, brought bulles with garlands vnto the gates, and would haue sacrificed with the people.

14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, and ranne in among the people, crying,

15 And saying, O men, why doe ye these things? We are euen men subiect to the like passions that ye be, and preach vnto you, that ye should turn from these vaine things vnto the liuing God,

Gene.1.1. psal.146.5. reue.14.7. * which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that in them are.

16 Who in times past * suffered all the Gentiles to walke in their owne wayes.

Psa 81.13 rom.1.24 17 Neuertheless, he left not himselfe without witnesse, in that he did good, *and* gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnes.

18 And speaking these things, scarce appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them.

19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia and Ico-

2.Cor.11.25. nium, which when they had perswaded the people, * stoned Paul, and drew him out of the city, supposing he had ben dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he arose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day hee departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia,

22 Confirming the disciples hearts, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, *affirming* that wee must through many afflictions enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordeined them Elders by election in euery Church, and prayed, and fasted, they commended them to

the

the Lord in whom they beleeued.

24 Thus they went thorow out Pisidia, & came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they came downe to Attalia,

26 And thence sailed to Antiochia, * from whence they had beene commended vnto the grace of God, to the worke which they had fulfilled. *Cha.13.3.*

27 And when they were come and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed al ỹ things that God had done by them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles.

28 So there they abode a long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 Certaine goe about to bring in circumcision at Antiochia: 6 about which matter the Apostles consult: 19 and what must bee done, 23 they declare by letters. 36 Paul and Barnabas 39 are at great variance.

THen came downe certaine from Iudea, and taught the brethren, *saying*, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saued.

2 And when there was great dissention and disputation by Paul and Barnabas against them, they ordeined that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them, should goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 Thus being brought forth by ỹ Church, they passed thorow Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles, and they brought great ioy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, and of the Apostles and Elders, and they declared what things God had done by them.

5 But, *said they*, certaine of the sect of the Pharises, which did beleeue, rose vp, saying, that it was needfull to circumcise them, and to command *them* to keepe the Law of Moses.

6 Then the Apostles and Elders came together to looke to this matter.

7 And when there had bene great disputation, Peter rose vp and said vnto them, * Ye men *and* brethren, ye know that a good while agoe, among vs God chose out *me*, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, and beleeue. *Chap.10. 20. and 11.13.*

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witnesse, in giuing them the holy Ghost, euen as *he did* vnto vs.

9 And he put no difference betweene vs and them, after that * by faith he had purified their hearts. *Chap.10. 43 1.cor. 1.2.*

10 Now therfore why tempt ye God, to * lay a yoke on the disciples necks, ỹ neither our fathers, nor we were able to beare? *Mat.23.4*

11 But

11 But we beleeue through the grace of the Lord Ieſus Chriſt to be ſaued, euen as they *doe*.

12 Then all the multitude kept ſilence, and heard Barnabas and Paul, which told what ſignes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them.

13 And when they held their peace, Iames anſwered, ſaying, Men *and* brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared, how God firſt did viſit the Gentiles to take *of them* a people vnto his Name.

15 And to this agree the words of ỹ Prophets, as it is written,

Amos 9. 11.

16 * After this I wil returne, and will build againe the tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, and the ruines thereof wil I build againe, and I will ſet it vp,

17 That the reſidue of men might ſeeke after the Lord, and all the Gentiles vpon whō my Name is called, ſaith the Lord, which doeth all theſe things.

18 From the beginning of the world, God knoweth all his works.

19 Wherfore my ſentence is, that we trouble not them of the Gentiles that are turned to God,

20 But that we ſend vnto them, that they abſtaine themſelues from filthineſſe of idoles, and fornication, and that that is ſtrangled, and from blood.

21 For Moſes of old time hath in euery city them that preach him, ſeeing he is read in the Synagogues euery Sabbath *day*.

22 Then it ſeemed good to the Apoſtles and Elders with the whole Church, to ſend choſen men of their owne company to Antiochia with Paul and Barnabas: *to wit*, Iudas whoſe ſurname was Barſabas, and Silas, which were chiefe men among the brethren,

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, THE APOSTLES and the Elders, & the brethren, vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antiochia, & in Syria, and in Cilicia, ſend greeting.

24 Foraſmuch as we haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with words & cumbred your minds, ſaying, Ye muſt be circumciſed, and keepe the Law, to whom we gaue no ſuch commandement:

25 It ſeemed therefore good to vs, when we were come together with one accord, to ſend choſen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue giuen vp their liues for the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

27 We haue therefore ſent Iudas and Silas, which ſhall alſo tell you the ſame things by mouth.

28 For

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay no more burden vpon you, then these necessarie things,

29 *That is*, that yee abstaine from things offred to idoles, and blood, and from that is strangled, & from fornication: from which if ye keepe your selues, ye shall doe well. Fare ye well.

30 Now when they were departed, they came to Antiochia, and after they had assembled the multitude, they deliuered ỹ Epistle.

31 And when they had read it they reioyced for ỹ consolation.

32 And Iudas and Silas being Prophets, exhorted the brethren, with many words, and strengthened them.

33 And after they had taried there a space, they were let goe in peace of the brethren vnto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstanding Silas thought good to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antiochia, teaching and preaching with many other, the word of the Lord.

36 ¶ But after certaine dayes, Paul said vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, & visite our brethren in euery citie, where we haue preached the word of the Lord *and see* how they doe.

37 And Barnabas counselled to take with them Iohn, called Marke.

38 But Paul thought it not meete to take him vnto their company, which departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 Then were they so stirred, that they departed asunder one from ỹ other, so that Barnabas tooke Mark, & tailed vnto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being commended of the brethren vnto the Grace of God.

41 And hee went through Syria and Cilicia, stablishing the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *Paul hauing circumcised Timotheus*, 12 *being at Philippi*, 14 *instructeth Lydia in the faith*. 16 *The spirit of diuination* 18 *vnty him cast out*, 20 *and for that cause* 22 *they are whipped*, 24 *and imprisoned*. 26 *Through an earthquake* 27 *the prison doores are opened*. 31 32 *The iaylor receiueth the faith*.

THen came he to Derbe and to Lystra: and behold, a certaine disciple was there named * Timotheus, a womans sonne, which was a Iewesse and beleeued, but his Father was a Grecian,

Ro.16.21

phil.2.19.

2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lystra and Iconium, reported well.

1.thes.3.2

3 Therefore Paul would that he should goe forth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of the Iewes, which were in those quarters: for they knew all, that his Father was a Grecian.

4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them

the

the decrees to keepe, ordained of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and increased in number dayly.

6 ¶ Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost, to preach the word in Asia.

7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 Therfore they passed through Mysia, & came down to Troas,

9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night, There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seene the vision, immediatly we prepared to goe into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis,

12 ¶ And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the parts of Macedonia, and whose inhabitants came from Rome to dwell there, and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

13 And on the Sabbath day, wee went out of the citie, besides a riuer, where they were wont to pray, and wee sate downe, and spake to the women which were come together.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that shee attended vnto the things which Paul spake.

15 And when shee was baptized, and her household, shee besought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into mine house, and abide *there*: and she constrained vs.

16 And it came to passe that as wee went to prayer, a certaine maide hauing a spirit of diuination, met vs, which gate her masters much vantage with diuining.

17 She followed Paul and vs, and cried, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shew vnto you the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieued turned about, and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And hee came out the same houre.

19 Now when her Masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe them into the market place vnto the magistrates,

20 And

20 And brought them to the gouernours, saying, These men which are Iewes, trouble our citie,

21 And preach ordinances which are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to obserue, seeing we are Romanes.

22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commanded *them* to bee beaten with rods.

23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast *them* into prison, commanding the Iailer to keepe them surely.

24 Who hauing receiued such commandement, cast them into the inner prison, and made their feete fast in the stockes.

25 Now at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, *and* sung Psalmes vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doores opened, and euery mans bands were loosed.

27 Then the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleepe, and when he saw the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing ye prisoners had bene fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a lowde voice, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme: for we are all here.

29 Then hee called for a light, and leaped in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I doe to be saued?

31 And they said, Beleeue in the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thine household.

32 And they preached vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in the house.

33 Afterward he tooke them the same houre of the night, and washed *their* stripes, and was baptized with all that belonged vnto him straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and reioyced that he with all his household beleeued in God.

35 And when it was day, the gouernour sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.

36 Then the keeper of the prison told these words vnto Paul, *saying*, The gouernours haue sent to loose you: now therefore get you hence, and goe in peace.

37 Then said Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and now would they put vs out priuily? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out.

38 And

the decrees to keepe, ordained of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and increased in number dayly.

6 ¶ Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost, to preach the word in Asia.

7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 Therfore they passed through Mysia, & came down to Troas,

9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night, There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seene the vision, immediatly we prepared to goe into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis,

12 ¶ And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the parts of Macedonia, and whose inhabitants came from Rome to dwell there, and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

13 And on the Sabbath day, wee went out of the citie, besides a riuer, where they were wont to pray, and wee sate downe, and spake to the women which were come together.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that shee attended vnto the things, which Paul spake.

15 And when shee was baptized, and her household, shee beesought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into mine house, and abide *there*: and she constrained vs.

16 And it came to passe that as wee went to prayer, a certaine maide hauing a spirit of diuination, met vs, which gate her masters much vantage with diuining.

17 She followed Paul and vs, and cried, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shew vnto you the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieued turned about, and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And hee came out the same houre.

19 Now when her Masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe them into the market place vnto the magistrates,

20 And

20 And brought them to the gouernours, saying, These men which are Iewes, trouble our citie,

21 And preach ordinances which are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to obserue, seeing we are Romanes.

22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commanded *them* to bee beaten with rods.

23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast *them* into prison, commanding the Iailer to keepe them surely.

24 Who hauing receiued such commandement, cast them into the inner prison, and made their feete fast in the stockes.

25 Now at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, *and* sung Psalmes vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doores opened, and euery mans bands were loosed.

27 Then the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleepe, and when he saw the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing ȳ prisoners had bene fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a lowde voice, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme: for we are all here.

29 Then hee called for a light, and leaped in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I doe to be saued?

31 And they said, Beleeue in the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thine household.

32 And they preached vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in the house.

33 Afterward he tooke them the same houre of the night, and washed *their* stripes, and was baptized with all that belonged vnto him straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and reioyced that he with all his household beleeued in God.

35 And when it was day, the gouernour sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.

36 Then the keeper of the prison told these words vnto Paul, *saying*, The gouernours haue sent to loose you: now therefore get you hence, and goe in peace.

37 Then said Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and now would they put vs out priuily? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out.

38 And

38 And the sergeants told these words vnto the gouernours, who feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 Then came they and prayed them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into *the house of* Lydia: and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul at Thessalonica 3 preaching Christ, 6. 7 is intertained of Jason: 10 Hee is sent to Berea: 15 From thence comming to Athens, 19 in Mars streete 23 hee preacheth the liuing God to them vnknowen, 34 and so many are conuerted vnto Christ.

NOw as they passed thorow Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath *dayes* disputed with them by the Scriptures,

3 Opening, and alleaging that Christ must haue suffered, and risen againe from the dead: and this is Iesus Christ, whome, *said he*, I preach to you.

4 And some of them beleeued, and ioyned in company with Paul and Silas: also of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few.

5 But the Iewes which beleeued not, moued with enuie, tooke vnto them certain vagabonds *and* wicked felowes, and when they had assembled the multitude, they made a tumult in the citie, and made assault against the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 But when they found them not, they drew Iason and certaine brethren vnto the heads of the citie, crying, These are they which haue subuerted the state of the world, and here they are,

7 Whome Iason hath receiued, and these all doe against the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another King, one Iesus.

8 Then they troubled the people, and the heads of the citie, when they heard these things.

9 Notwithstanding, when they had receiued sufficient assurance of Iason and of the other, they let them goe.

10 And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea, which when they were come thither, entred into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were also more noble men then they which were at Thessalonica, which receiued the word with all readinesse, and searched the Scriptures dayly, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued, and of honest women, which were Grecians, and men not a few.

13 ¶ But

13 ¶ But when the Iewes of Thessalonica knew, that the word of God was also preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also and moued the people.

14 But by and by the brethren sent away Paul to go as *it were* to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athens: and when they had receiued a commaundement vnto Silas and Timotheus that they should come to him at once, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the citie subiect to idolatry.

17 Therefore he disputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market dayly with whomsoeuer he met.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoicks disputed with him, and some said, What wil this babbler say? Others *said*, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods (because he preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection)

19 And they tooke him, and brought him into Mars streete, saying, May we not know, what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things vnto our eares: we would know therefore what these things meane.

21 For all the Athenians, and strangers which dwelt there, gaue themselues to nothing els, but either to tell or to heare some newes.

22 Then Paul stood in the middes of Mars streete, and sayd, Yee men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, & beheld your deuotions, I found an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWEN GOD. Whom ye then ignorantly worship, him shew I vnto you.

24 God that made the world, and all things that are therein, seeing that he is Lord of heauen and earth, *dwelleth not in temples made with hands, *Ch.7.48.*

25 *Neither is worshipped with mens hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giueth to all life and breath & all things, *Psal.50.8.*

26 And hath made of one blood all mankinde, to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath assigned the seasons which were ordeined before, and the bounds of their habitation,

27 That they should seeke the Lorde, if so be they might haue groped after him, and found *him*, though doubtles he be not farre from euery one of vs.

28 For in him we liue, and moue, and haue our being, as also certaine

certaine of your owne Poets haue said, For wee are also his generation.

Isa 40.19 29 * Forasmuch then, as we are the generation of God, wee ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto gold, or siluer, or stone, grauen by arte and the inuention of man.

30 And the time of this ignorance God regarded not: but now he admonisheth all men euery where to repent,

31 Because he hath appointed a day in which he wil iudge the world in righteousnesse, by that man whom he hath appointed, *whereof* he hath giuen an assurance to all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 Now when they heard of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked, and other said, We will heare thee againe of this thing.

33 And so Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certaine men claue vnto Paul, and beleeued: among whom was also Denys Areopagita, and a woman named Damaris, and other with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Paul at Corinth 6 taught the Gentiles, 9 The Lord comforteth him. 12 Hee is accused before Gallio, 16 but in vaine. 18 From thence he saileth to Syria, 19 and so to Ephesus. 23 At Galatia and Phrygia he strengtheneth the disciples. 24 Apollos being more perfectly instructed by Aquila, 28 preacheth Christ with great efficatie.

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinthus,

Rom. 16.3 2 And found a certaine Iewe named * Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately came from Italy, and his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for their craft was to make tents)

4 And he disputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath *day*, and exhorted the Iewes and Grecians.

5 Now when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul forced in spirit, testified to the Iewes that Iesus was the Christ.

Chap. 13. 51. *mat.* 10. 14. 6 And when they resisted and blasphemed, hee * shooke his raiment, & said vnto them, Your blood *be* vpon your owne head: I am cleane: from hence forth will I goe vnto the Gentiles.

7 So he departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 And

8 And * Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleeued in the Lord with all his houshold: and many of the Corinthians hearing it, beleeued and were baptized. *1 Cor.1. 14.*

9 Then said the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Feare not, but speake, and hold not thy peace.

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall lay *hands* on thee to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie.

11 So he continued there a yeere and sixe moneths, and taught the word of God among them.

12 ¶ Now when Gallio was Deputie of Achaia, the Iewes arose with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seate,

13 Saying, this fellow perswadeth men to worship God otherwise then the Law appointeth.

14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deede, O yee Iewes, I would according to reason maintaine you.

15 But if it be a question of words and names, & of your Law, looke ye to it your selues: for I will be no iudge of those things.

16 And he draue them from the iudgement seate.

17 Then tooke all the Grecians Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the iudgement seate: but Gallio cared nothing for those things.

18 But when Paul had taried there yet a good while, he tooke leaue of the brethren, and sailed into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila) after that he had shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a * vow. *Chap. 21.*

19 Then he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he entred into the Synagogue, and disputed with the Iewes. *21. num. 6.18.*

20 Who desired him to tary a longer time with them: but he would not consent,

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must needes keepe this feast that commeth in Hierusalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, * if God will. So he sailed from Ephesus. *1. Cor.4.*

22 ¶ And when he came downe to Cesarea, he went vp *to Hierusalem:* and when he had saluted the Church, he went downe vnto Antiochia. *19. iames 4.15.*

23 Now when hee had taried *there* a while, hee departed, and went through the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 And a certaine Iew named * Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures. *1. Cor.1. 12.*

25 The same was instructed in the way of the Lord, and hee spake fervently in the Spirit, and taught diligently the things of

the Lord, and knew but the baptisme of Iohn onely.

26 And he began to speake boldly in the Synagogue. Whom
Rom. 16. 3. when *Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was minded to goe into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the disciples to receiue him: and after he was come thither, hee holpe them much which had beleeued through grace.

28 For mightily hee confuted publikely the Iewes with great vehemencie, shewing by the Scriptures, that Iesus was that Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

1 *Certaine disciples at Ephesus, 3 hauing onely receiued Iohns baptisme, 4 and knew not the visible gifts of the holy Ghost wherewith God had beautified his Sonnes kingdome, 5 are baptised in the Name of Iesus. 13 The Iewish Exorcists 16 are beaten of the diuell. 19 Coniuring bookes are burnt. 24 Demetrius 29 raiseth sedition against Paul.*

AND it came to passe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he passed through the vpper coasts, came to Ephesus and found certaine disciples,

2 And said vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since yee beleeued? And they said vnto him, We haue not so much as heard whether there be an holy Ghost.

3 And he said vnto them, Vnto what were ye then baptized? And they said, Vnto Iohns baptisme.

Chap. 1.5. and 2.2. and 11.16 mat. 3.11. mark. 1.8. luk. 3.16. ioh. 1.26. 4 Then said Paul, *Iohn verely baptised with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they should beleeue in him, which should come after him, that is, in Christ Iesus.

5 And when they heard it, they were baptised in the name of the Lord Iesus.

6 So Paul laid his hands vpon them, and the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake the tongues, and prophecied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 ¶ Moreouer he went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and exhorting to the things that *appertaine* to the kingdom of God.

9 But when certaine were hardened and disobeyed, speaking euill of the way *of God* before the multitude, hee departed from them, and separated the disciples, & disputed daily in the Schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this was done by the space of two yeares, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus both Iewes and Grecians.

11 And God wrought no smal miracles by the hands of Paul.

12 So

12 So that from his bodie were brought vnto the ſicke, kerchiefs or handkerchiefs, and the diſeaſes departed from them, and the euill ſpirits went out of them.

13 Then certain of the vagabond Iewes, exorciſts, tooke in hand to name ouer them, which had euill ſpirits, the Name of the Lord Ieſus, ſaying, we adiure you by Ieſus, whom Paul preacheth.

14 (And there were certaine ſonnes of Sceua a Iew, the Prieſt, *about* ſeuen, which did this)

15 And the euil ſpirit anſwered, & ſaid, Ieſus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euill ſpirit was, ranne on them and ouercame them, and preuailed againſt them, ſo that they fled out of that houſe, naked, and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes and Grecians alſo, which dwelt at Epheſus, & feare came on them all, and the Name of the Lord Ieſus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeued, came, and confeſſed, and ſhewed their workes.

19 Many alſo of them which vſed curious arts, brought their bookes, and burned them before all men, and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thouſand *pieces* of ſiluer.

20 So the word of God grew mightily, and preuailed.

21 ¶ Now when theſe things were accompliſhed, Paul purpoſed by the ſpirit to paſſe through Macedonia and Achaia, and to goe to Hieruſalem, ſaying, After I haue beene there, I muſt alſo ſee Rome.

22 So ſent he into Macedonia two of them that miniſtred vnto him, Timotheus and Eraſtus, *but* he remained in Aſia for a ſeaſon.

23 And the ſame time there aroſe no ſmall trouble about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius a ſiluer ſmith, which made ſiluer Temples of Diana, brought great gaines vnto the craftes men.

25 Whom hee called together, with the workemen of like things, and ſaid, Sirs, yee know that by this craft we haue our goods,

26 Moreouer ye ſee and heare, that not alone at Epheſus, but almoſt throughout all Aſia this Paul hath perſwaded, and turned away much people, ſaying, That they be not gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this thing is dangerous vnto vs, that this our portion ſhall bee reprooued, but alſo that the temple of the great goddeſſe Diana ſhould bee nothing eſteemed, and that it would come to paſſe that her magnificence, which all Aſia & the

world worshipperh, should be destroyed.

28 Now when they heard it, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was full of confusion, and they rushed into the common place with one assent, and caught * Gaius and * Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, and Pauls companions of his iourney.

Rom. 16. 23. 1. cor. 1. 14. Col. 4. 10.

30 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not present himselfe in the common place.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, and some another: for the assembly was out of order, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And some of the company drew forth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him forwards. Alexander then beckened with the hand, and would haue excused the matter to the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Iewe, there arose a shout almost for the space of two houres, of all men, crying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 Then the towne clarke when he had stayed the people, said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it that knoweth not how that the citie of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of *the image* which came downe from Iupiter?

36 Seeing then that no man can speake against these things, yee ought to be appeased, and to doe nothing rashly.

37 For ye haue brought hither these men, which haue neither committed sacriledge, neither doe blaspheme your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, haue a matter against any man the Law is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuse one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawfull assembly.

40 For we are euen in ieopardie to be accused of this dayes sedition, forasmuch as there is no cause, whereby wee may giue a reason of this concourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he let the assembly depart.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Paul appointeth to goe to Macedonia.* 7 *In Troas preaching vntil midnight,* 9 *Eutychus fell downe dead out of a window:* 10 *he raiseth him to life.* 15 *At Miletum,* 17 *hauing called the Elders of Ephesus together,* 23 *he declareth what things shall come vpon him, else,* 28 *and others.*

Now

NOw after the tumult was appeased, Paul called the disciples vnto him, and embraced them, and departed to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone through those parts, and had exhorted them with many words, he came into Grecia.

3 And hauing tarried *there* three moneths, because the Iewes laide waite for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, and of them of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus.

5 These went before, and taried vs at Troas.

6 And we sailed foorth from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes.

7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the morow, and continued the preaching vnto midnight.

8 And there were many lights in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certaine young man, named Eutychus, fallen into a dead sleepe: and as Paul was long preaching, hee ouercome with sleepe, fell downe from the third loft and was taken vp dead.

10 But Paul went downe, and laide himselfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying, Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him.

11 Then when *Paul* was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a long while till the dawning of the day, he so departed.

12 And they brought the boy aliue, and they were not a little comforted.

13 ¶Then we went before to ship, and sailed vnto *the citie* Assos, that we might receiue Paul there: for so had hee appointed, and would himselfe goe afoote.

14 Now when he was come vnto vs to Assos, and wee had receiued him, we came to Mitylenes.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day wee arriued at Samos, and taried at Trogyllium: the next day we came to Miletum.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because hee would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be, if he could possible, at Hierusalem, at the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶Where-

17 ¶ Wherefore from Miletum he sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 Who when they were come to him, he said vnto them, Yee know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I haue beene with you at all seasons,

19 Seruing the Lord with all modestie, and with many teares, and tentations, which came vnto me by the layings await of the Iewes,

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable but haue shewed you, and taught you openly and throughout euery house,

21 Witnessing both to the Iewes, and to the Grecians, the repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I goe bound in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, and know not what things shall come vnto me there,

23 Saue that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying, that bonds and afflictions abide me.

24 But I passe not at all, neither is my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I may fulfill my course with ioy, & the ministration which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that henceforth yee all, through whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue shewed you all the counsell of God.

28 Take heed therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghost hath made you ouerseers, to feede the Church of God, which hee hath purchased with that his owne blood.

29 For I knowe this, that after my departing shall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Moreouer, of your owne selues shal men arise, speaking peruerse things, to draw disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by *the space* of three yeeres I ceased not to warne euery one, both night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build further, and to giue you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

1.Cor.4. *12.1.thes.* *2.9.2.* *1thes.3.8.*

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, nor gold, nor apparell.

34 Yea, ye know, that these hands haue ministred vnto my* necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I haue

35 I haue ſhewed you all things, how that ſo labouring, yee ought to ſupport the weake, and to remember the wordes of the Lord Ieſus, how that he ſaid, It is a bleſſed thing to giue, rather then to receiue.

36 And when he had thus ſpoken, he kneeled downe and prayed with them all.

37 Then they wept all abundantly, and fell on Pauls necke, and kiſſed him,

38 Being chiefly ſory for the words which he ſpake, That they ſhould ſee his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ſhip.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *Paul goeth toward Hieruſalem.* 8 *At Cæſarea hee talketh with Philip the Euangeliſt:* 10 *Agabus foretelleth him of his bonds.* 17 *After he came to Hieruſalem,* 26 *and into the Temple,* 27 *The Iewes laid hands on him:* 32 *Lyſias the captaine taketh him from them.*

AND as we lanched foorth, and were departed from them, wee came with a ſtraight courſe vnto Coos and the day following vnto the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And we found a ſhip that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went aboard, and ſet foorth.

3 And when we had diſcouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and ſailed toward Syria, and arriued at Tyrus: for there the ſhip vnladed the burden.

4 And when wee had found diſciples, we taried there ſeuen dayes. And they told Paul through the Spirit, that he ſhould not goe vp to Hieruſalem.

5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed and went our way: and they all accompanied vs with *their* wiues, and children, euen out of the cities: and wee kneeling downe on the ſhoare, prayed.

6 Then when we had imbraced one another, wee tooke ſhip, and they returned home.

7 And when we had ended the courſe from Tyrus, we arriued at Ptolemais & ſaluted the brethren, & abode with them one day.

8 And the next day, Paul and wee that were with him departed, and came vnto Cæſarea: and wee entred into the houſe of * Philip the Euangeliſt, which was one of the ſeuen *Deacons*, and abode with him. *Chap. 6. 5.*

9 Now he had foure daughters virgins, which did propheſie.

10 And as we taried there many dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs he tooke Pauls girdle, and

bound his owne hands and feete, and said, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem bind ỹ man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we had heard these things, both we and other of the same place besought him that he would not goe vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered and said, What doe ye weeping, and breaking mine heart? For I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

14 So when he would not bee perswaded, wee ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those daies wee trussed vp our fardels, and went vp to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also *certain* of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And the next day Paul went in with vs vnto Iames: and all the Elders were there assembled.

19 And when hee had embraced them, hee tolde by order all things that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministration.

20 So when they heard it, they glorified God, and said vnto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousand Iewes there are which beleeue, and they are all zealous of the Law:

21 Now they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, and saiest, that they ought not to circumcise their sonnes, neither to liue *after* the customes.

22 What is then *to be done*? the multitude must needes come together: for they shall heare that thou art come.

23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee, We haue foure men which haue made a vow,

24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and contribute with them, that they may *shaue their heads: and all shall know, that those things whereof they haue beene enformed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest and keepest the Law.

*Ch.18.18. Num.6.18

25 For as touching the Gentiles which beleeue, we haue written and determined that they obserue no such thing but that they keepe themselues from things offered to idols, and from blood, and from that that is strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul tooke the men, & the next day was purified with them,

them,& entered into the Temple, declaring the accompliſhment of the daies of the purification, vntill that an offering ſhould bee offered for euery one of them.

27 And when the ſeuen daies were almoſt ended, the Iewes which were of Aſia (when they ſaw him in the Temple) mooued all the people,and laid hands on him,

28 Crying,Men of Iſrael, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men euery where againſt the people, and the Law, and this place: moreouer he hath brought Grecians into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 For they had ſeene before Trophimus an Epheſian with him in the citie, whom they ſuppoſed that Paul had brought into the Temple.

30 Then all the citie was moued,and the people ran together: and they tooke Paul,and drew him out of the Temple,and forthwith the doores were ſhut.

31 But as they went about to kill him, tidings came vnto the chiefe captaine of the band,that all Hieruſalem was in an vproare.

32 Who immediately tooke ſouldiers and Centurions, and ran downe vnto them: and when they ſaw the chiefe Captaine & the ſouldiers they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe Captaine came neere and tooke him, and commanded him to be bound with two chaines, and demaunded who he was,and what he had done.

34 And one cried this, another that, among the people. So when he could not know the certaintie for the tumult, hee commanded him to be lead into the caſtle.

35 And when he came vnto the grieces, it was ſothat he was borne of the ſouldiers,for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul ſhould haue beene led into the caſtell,hee ſaid vnto the chiefe captaine,May I ſpeake vnto thee? Who ſaid,Canſt thou *ſpeake* Greeke?

38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before theſe daies raiſed a ſedition, and led out into the wilderneſſe,foure thouſand men that were murderers?

39 Then Paul ſaid,Doubtleſſe I am a man which am a Iew, & citizen of Tarſus,a famous citie of Cilicia,and I beſeech thee,ſuffer me to ſpeake vnto the people.

40 And when hee had giuen him licence, Paul ſtood on the grieces and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great ſilence, he ſpake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, ſaying,

CHAP.

1 Paul yeeldeth a reason of his faith, 22 and the Iewes heare him a while: 23 But so soone as they cryed out, 24 he is commanded to be scourged and examined, 27 and so declareth that he is a citizen of Rome.

YE men, brethrē, & fathers, heare my defence now towards you.
2 (And when they heard that hee spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence, and he said)
3 I am verely a man, *which am* a Iewe, borne in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this citie at the feete of Gamaliel, and instructed according to the perfect manner of the Law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.
4 And I persecuted this way vnto the death, binding and deliuering into prison both men and women,
5 As also the chiefe Priest doth beare me witnesse, and all the company of the Elders: of whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, that they might be punished.
6 ¶ And so it was, as I iourneyed and was come neere vnto Damascus about noone, that suddenly there shone from heauen a great light round about me.
7 So I fell vnto the earth, and heard a voice, saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?
8 Then I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said to me, I am Iesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest.
9 Moreouer, they that were with mee, sawe in deede a light, and were afraid: but they heard not the voice of him that spake vnto me.
10 Then I said, What shall I doe, Lord? And the Lord said vnto me, Arise, and goe into Damascus: and there it shall be told thee of all things, which are appointed for thee to doe.
11 So when I could not see for the glory of that light, I was led by the hand of them that were with me, & came into Damascus.
12 And one Ananias a godly man, as pertaining to the Law, hauing good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there,
13 Came vnto me, and stood, and said vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that same houre I looked vpon him.
14 And hee said, The God of our fathers hath appointed thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and shouldest see that Iust one, and shouldest heare the voice of his mouth.
15 For thou shalt be his witnesse vnto all men of the things which thou hast seene and heard.
16 Now therefore why tarriest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, in calling on the Name of the Lord.
17 ¶ And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem,

Hierusalem, and prayed in the Temple, I was in a trance,

18 And saw him saying vnto me, Make haſt and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy witneſſe concerning me.

19 Then I ſaid, Lord, they know that I priſoned, and beat in euery Synagogue them that beleeued in thee.

20 And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was ſhed, I alſo ſtood by and conſented vnto his death, and kept the clothes of them that ſlew him.

21 Then hee ſaid vnto me, Depart: for I will ſend thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles.

22 ¶ And they heard him vnto this word, *but* then they lift vp their voices, and ſaid, Away with ſuch a fellow from the earth: for it is not meete that he ſhould liue.

23 And as they cryed and caſt off their clothes, and threw duſt into the aire,

24 The chiefe captaine commanded him to be ledde into the caſtle, and bade that he ſhould be ſcourged, and examined, that he might know wherefore they cried ſo on him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul ſaid vnto the Centurion that ſtood by, Is it lawfull for you to ſcourge one that *is* a Romane, and not condemned?

26 Now when the Centurion heard it, hee went and tolde the chiefe captaine, ſaying, Take heede what thou doeſt: for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe captaine came, and ſaid to him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? And he ſaid, Yea.

28 And the chiefe captaine anſwered, With a great ſumme obtained I this freedome. Then Paul ſaid, But I was ſo borne.

29 Then ſtraightway they departed from him, which ſhould haue examined him: and the chiefe captaine alſo was afraid after he knew that he was a Romane, and that he had bound him.

30 On the next day, becauſe hee would haue knowen the certaintie wherfore he was accuſed of the Iewes, he looſed him from *his* bonds, and commanded the hie Prieſts and all their Councel to come *together*: and he brought Paul and ſet him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *Paul pleadeth his cauſe,* 2 *Ananias commaunded them to ſmite him.* 7 *Diſſention among his accuſers.* 11 *God encourageth him.* 14 *The Iewes laying wait for Paul,* 20 *is declared vnto the chiefe captaine.* 27 *He ſendeth him to Felix the Gouernour.*

AND Paul beheld earneſtly the Councill, and ſaid, Men *and* brethren, I haue in all good conſcience ſerued God vntill this day.

2 Then

2 Then the hie Prieſt Ananias commanded them that ſtoode by, to ſmite him on the mouth.

3 Then ſaid Paul to him, God will ſmite thee, thou whited wall: for thou ſitteſt to iudge me according to the Law, & tranſgreſsing the Law, commandeſt thou me to be ſmitten?

4 And they that ſtood by, ſaid, Reuileſt thou Gods hie Prieſt?

5 Then ſaid Paul, I knew not brethren, that hee was the hie
Exod. 22. 27. Prieſt: for it is written,* Thou ſhalt not ſpeake euill of the Ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were of the Sadduces, and the other of the Phariſes, he cried in the Councel, Men
Chap. 24. 22. phil. 3. 5. *and* brethren,* I am a Phariſe, the ſonne of a Phariſe, I am accuſed of the hope and reiurrection of the dead.

7 And when he had ſaid this, there was a diſſention betweene the Phariſes and the Sadduces, ſo that the multitude was diuided.

Mat. 22. 23. 8 *For the Sadduces ſay that there is no reſurrection, neither Angel, nor ſpirit: but the Phariſes confeſſe both.

9 Then there was a great crie: and the Scribes of the Phariſes part roſe vp, and ſtoode, ſaying, We find none euill in this man: but if a ſpirit or an Angel hath ſpoken to him, let vs not fight againſt God.

10 And when there was a great diſſenſion, the chiefe captaine, fearing leſt Paul ſhould haue been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the ſouldiers to go downe, and take him from among them, and to bring him into the caſtle.

11 ¶ Now the night following the Lord ſtood by him, and ſaid, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou haſt teſtified of me in Hieruſalem, ſo muſt thou beare witneſſe alſo at Rome.

12 And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an aſſembly, and bound themſelues with a curſe, ſaying, that they would neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fourty, which had made this conſpiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Prieſts and Elders, and ſaid, We haue bound our ſelues with a ſolemne curſe, that wee will eate nothing, vntill we haue ſlaine Paul.

15 Now therefore, ye and the Councill ſignifie to the chiefe captain, that he bring him forth vnto you to morow, as though ye would know ſomething more perfectly of him, and wee, or euer he come neere, will be ready to kill him.

16 But when Pauls ſiſters ſonne heard of their laying await, he went, and entred into the caſtle, and told Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and ſaid,

Take

Take this yong man hence vnto the chiefe captaine: for he hath a certaine thing to shew him.

18 So he tooke him, and brought him to the chiefe captaine and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed me to bring this yong man vnto thee, which hath something to say vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, and went apart with him alone, & asked him, What hast thou to shew me?

20 And he said, The Iewes haue conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring forth Paul to morrow into the Councill as though they would enquire some what of him more perfectly:

21 But let them not perswade thee: for there lie in wait for him of them, more then fourtie men, which haue bound themselues with a curse, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, and wait for thy promise.

22 The chiefe captaine then let the yong man depart after hee had charged him to vtter it to no man, that he had ‖shewed him thele things.

‖*Greeke, that thou hast shewed these things to me.*

23 And he called vnto him two certaine Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundreth souldiers, that they may go to Cesarea, and horsemen threscore and ten, and two hundreth with darts, at the third houre of the night.

24 And let them make readie an horse, that Paul being set on, may be brought safe vnto Felix the Gouernour.

25 And he wrote an Epistle in this maner:

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most noble Gouernour Felix sendeth greeting.

27 As this man was taken of the Iewes, and should haue beene killed of them, I came vpon them with the garison, and rescued him, perceiuing that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would haue knowen the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought him foorth into their Council.

29 *There* I perceiued that he was accused of questions of their Law, but had no crime worthy of death, or of bonds.

30 And when it was shewed me, how that the Iewes laid wait for the man, I sent *him* straight way to thee, and commanded his accusers to speake before thee the things that they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 And the next day, they left the horsemen to goe with him, and returned vnto the Castell:

33 Now when they came to Cesarea, they deliuered the Epistle to the Gouernour, and presented Paul also vnto him.

34 So

34 So when the Gouernour had read it, he asked of what prouince he was: and when he vnderstood that he was of Cilicia,

35 I wil heare thee said he, when thine accusers also are come, and commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

2 Tertullus accuseth Paul: 10 He answereth for himselfe. 21 He preacheth Christ to the Gouernour and his wife. 27 Felix hopeth, but in vaine, to receiue a bribe, 28 who going from his office, leaueth Paul in prison.

NOw after fiue dayes, Ananias the high Priest came downe with the Elders & *with* Tertullus a certaine oratour, which appeared before the Gouernour against Paul.

2 And when hee was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse *him*, saying, Seeing that we haue obtained great quietnes through thee, and that many worthy things are done vnto this nation through thy prouidence,

3 We acknowledge it wholly, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankes.

4 But that I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy courtesie a few words.

5 Certainely, we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a chiefe maintainer of the sect of the Nazarites:

6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple, therefore we tooke him, and would haue iudged him according to our Law.

7 But the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him out of our hands,

8 Cõmanding his accusers to come to thee, of whõ thou mayst (if thou wilt inquire) know al these things whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Iewes likewise affirmed, saying that it was so.

10 Then Paul, after that the Gouernour had beckened vnto him that hee should speake, answered, I doe the more gladly answere for my selfe, forasmuch as I knowe that thou hast beene of many yeeres a iudge vnto this nation,

11 Seeing that thou mayest knowe, that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem.

12 And they neither found me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither making vprore among the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie.

13 Neither can they proue ỹ things, whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worship I the God of my Fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law and the Prophets.

15 And haue hope towards God, that the resurrection of the dead,

dead, which they themselues looke for also, shall be both of iust and vniust.

16 And herein I endeuour my selfe to haue alway a cleere conscience toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeeres, I came and brought almes to my nation, and offerings.

18 At what time, certaine Iewes of Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult,

19 Who ought to haue been present before thee, and accuse *me*, if they had ought against me.

20 Or let these themselues say, if they haue found any vniust thing in me, while I stood in the Councel,

21 Except *it be* for this one voice, that I cryed standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day.

22 Now when Felix heard these things, he deferred them, and sayd, When I shall more perfectly knowe the things which concerne this way, by the comming of Lysias the chiefe Captaine, I will decide your matter.

23 Then he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that hee should haue ease, and that hee should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him.

24 ¶ And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iewesse, *and* he called forth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ.

25 And as he disputed of righteousnesse, and temperance, and of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Goe thy way for this time, and when I haue conuenient time, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should haue been giuen him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore hee sent for him the oftener, and communed with him.

27 When two yeeres were expired, Portius Festus came into Felix roume: and *Felix* willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

1 *Festus succeeding Felix, 6 commaundeth Paul to bee brought forth.* 11 *Paul appeaseth vnto Cesar.* 14 *Festus openeth Pauls matter to King Agrippa.* 23 *and bringeth him before him,* 27 *that he may vnderstand his cause.*

WHen Festus was then come into the prouince, after three dayes he went vp from Cesarea vnto Hierusalem.

2 Then the hie Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him,

3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him

to

to Hierusalem : and they laid wait to kill him by the way.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should bee kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe would shortly depart *thither*.

5 Let them therfore, said he, which among you are able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickednesse in the man, let them accuse him.

6 ¶ Now when hee hah taried among them no more then ten dayes, hee went downe to Cesarea, and the next day sate in the iudgement seate, and commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And when he was come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stood about him, and layd many and grieuous complaints against Paul, whereof they could make no plaine proofe,

8 Forasmuch as he answered, that he had neither offended any thing against the lawe of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor against Cesar.

9 Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then sayd Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I haue done wrong, or committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accuse me, no man, to pleasure them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Counsil, he answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice came downe to Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had remained there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix,

15 Of whom when I came to Hierusalem, the high Priests and Elders of the Iewes informed me, and desired to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defend himselfe, concerning the crime.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day following I sate on the iudgement seate, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought no crime of such things as I supposed:

19 But

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because I doubted of such manner of question, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there bee iudged of these things.

21 But because he appealed to be reserued to the examination of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morrow said he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe, and were entred into the common hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the city, at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are present with vs, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon me, both at Hierusalem, and here, crying, that he ought not to liue any longer.

25 Yet haue I found nothing worthy of death, that hee hath committed: neuertheless, seeing that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my lord: wherefore I haue brought him forth vnto you, and specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somwhat to write.

27 For me thinketh it vnreasonable to send a prisoner, and not to shew the causes which are laid against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

2 Paul in the presence of Agrippa 4 declareth his life from his childhood, 16 and his calling, 22 with such efficacie of words, 28 that almost he perswaded him to Christianitie: 30 but hee and his company depart, doing nothing in Pauls matter.

THen Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe.

2 I thinke my selfe happie, King Agrippa, because I shall answer this day before thee of all the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes:

3 Chiefly, because thou hast knowledge of all customes, and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee, to heare me patiently.

4 As touching my life from *my* childhood, and what it was

from the beginning among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes,

5 Which knew me heretofore, euen from mine elders (if they would testifie) that after the most strait sect of our religion I lined a Pharise.

6 And now I stand and am accused for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers.

7 Whereunto our twelue tribes instantly seruing *God* day and night, hope to come: for the which hopes sake, O King Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible vnto you, that God should raise againe the dead?

9 I also verely thought in my selfe, that I ought to doe many contrarie things against the Name of IESVS of Nazareth,

Chap.8.3. 10 * Which thing I also did in Hierusalem: for many of the Saints I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authoritie of the high Priests, and when they were put to death, I gaue *my* sentence.

11 And I punished them throughout all the Synagogues and compelled them to blaspheme, & being more mad against them, I persecuted them, euen vnto strange cities.

Chap.9.2. 12 At which time, euen as I went to * Damascus with authoritie, and commission from the high Priests,

13 At mid day, O King, I saw in the way a light from heauen, passing the brightnesse of the Sunne, shine round about me, and them which went with me.

14 So when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voyce speaking vnto me, & saying in the Hebrew tongue Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kicke against pricks.

15 Then I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise and stand vp on thy feet: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to appoint thee a minister and a witnesse, both of the things which thou hast seene, and of the things in the which I will appeare vnto thee,

17 Deliuering thee from this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eies, that they may turne from darknesse to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of sinnes, and inheritance among them, which are sanctified by faith in me.

19 Wherefore King Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the

Chap.9.22, heauenly vision.

26.and 20 * But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusa-

23.4. lem, and throughout all the coasts of Iudea, and *then* to the Gentiles,

tiles, that they should repent, and turne to God, and doe workes worthy amendment of life.

21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the * Temple, and went about to kill me. *Chap. 22. 30.

22 Neue theleſſe, I obtained help of God, and continue vnto this day witneſsing both to small and to great, saying none other things, then those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come.

23 *To wit*, that Christ should suffer, and that he should bee the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light vnto his people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus answered for himselfe, Festus said with a loud voyce, Paul, thou art besides thy selfe: much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, O noble Festus, but I speake the words of truth, and soberneſse.

26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom also I speake boldly: for I am perſwaded that none of these things are hidden from him: for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 O King Agrippa, beleeueſt thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleeueſt.

28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou perſwadeſt mee to become a Christian.

29 Then Paul said, I would to God, that not onely thou, but also all that heare me to day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the King roſe vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sate with them.

31 And when they were gone apart, they talked betweene themselues, saying, This man doth nothing worthy of death, nor of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue bin loosed, if he had not appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 *Paul 7. 9 foretelleth the perill of the voyage, 11 but he is not beleeued. 14 They are tossed to and fro with the tempeſt, 21. 41 and suffer shipwracke. 34 Yet all saſe and sound. 44 escape to land.*

NOw when it was concluded that we should saile into Italie, they deliuered both Paul and certaine other prisoners vnto a Centurion named Iulius, of the band of Augustus. 1

2 And * we entred into a ship of Adramyttium, purposing to saile by the coasts of Asia, and launched forth, and had Aristarchus of Macedonia, a Thessalonian, with vs. *Coy. 11. 15.

3 And the next day we arriued at Sidon: and Iulius courteously intreated Paul, and gaue him liberty to goe vnto his friends, that they might refresh him.

4 And from thence we launched, and sailed hard by Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 Then sailed we ouer the sea by Cilicia, and Pamphylia, and came to Myra, *a citie* in Lycia.

6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alexandria, sayling into Italy, and put vs therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many dayes, and scarce were come against Gnidum, because the wind suffered vs not, we sailed hard by Candie, neere to Salmone:

8 And with much adoe saile beyond it, and came vnto a certaine place called the Faire hauens, neere vnto the which was the citie Lasea.

9 So when much time was spent, and sailing was now icopardous, because also the Fast was now past, Paul exhorted *them*,

10 And said vnto them, Sirs, I see that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not of the lading and ship onely, but also of our liues.

11 Neuertheleſſe the Centurion beleeued rather the Gouernour and the maſter of the ſhippe, then thoſe things which were ſpoken of Paul.

12 And becauſe the hauen was not commodious to winter in, many tooke counſell to depart thence, if by any means they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to winter, which is an hauen of Candie, and lieth toward the Southweſt and by Weſt, and Northweſt, and by Weſt.

13 And when the Southerne wind blew ſoftly, they ſuppoſing to attaine their purpoſe, looſed neerer, and ſayled by Candie.

14 But anon after, there aroſe by it a ſtormie wind called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ſhippe was caught, and could not reſiſt the wind, we let her goe, and were caried away.

16 And we ranne vnder a little yle named Clauda, and had much adoe to get the boate.

17 Which they tooke vp and vſed all helpe, vndergirding the ſhippe, fearing leſt they ſhould haue fallen into Syrtes, and they ſtrake ſaile, and ſo were caried.

18 The next day, when we were toſſed with an exceeding tempeſt, they lightned the ſhip.

19 And the third day wee caſt out with our owne hands the tackling of the ſhip.

20 And when neither ſunne nor ſtarres in many dayes appeared,

red,and no small tempest lay vpon vs, all hope that we should be saued was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood foorth in the mids of them,and said, Sirs,ye should haue hearkened to me, and not haue loosed from Candie: so should ye haue gained this hurt and losse.

22 But now I exhort you to be of good courage: for there shal be no losse of any mans life among you,saue of the ship onely.

23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am,and whom I serue,

25 Saying,Feare not,Paul: for thou must be brought before Cesar: & lo,God hath giuen vnto thee freely all that saile with thee.

25 Wherefore, sirs, bee of good courage: for I beleeue God, that it shall be so as it hath been told mee.

26 Howbeit,we must be cast into a certaine yland.

27 And when the fourteenth night was come, as wee were caried to and fro in the Adriaticall *sea* about midnight,the shipmen deemed that some countrey approched vnto them,

28 And sounded,and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found fifteene fathomes.

29 Then fearing lest they should haue fallen into some rough places, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, and wished that the day were come.

30 Now as the mariners were about to flee out of the ship, and had let downe the boat into the sea vnder a colour,as though they would haue cast ancres out of the foreship,

31 Paul said vnto the Centurion and the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be safe.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let it fall away.

33 And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted them all to take meate,saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue tarried, and continued fasting, receiuing nothing:

34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meate: for this is for your safegard:for there shal not a haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when hee had thus spoken, hee tooke bread, and gaue thankes to God, in presence of them all, and brake it, and began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good courage, and they also tooke meate.

37 Now we were in the shippe in all two hundreth threescore and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightned the ship, and cast out the wheate into the sea,

39 And when it was day, they knew not the countrey, but they spied a certaine creeke with a banke, into the which they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the ship.

40 So when they had taken vp the ancres, they committed the ship vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bonds, and hoised vp the maine saile to the winde, and drew to the shore.

41 And when they fell into a place, where two seas met, they thrust in the ship: and the forepart stucke fast, and could not bee moued, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waues.

42 Then the souldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them, when he had swomme out, should flee away.

43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, stayed them from this counsell, and commanded that they that could swim, should cast themselues first into the sea, and goe out to land:

44 And the other, some on boords, and some on certaine pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

2 The Barbarians courteste towards Paul and his company. 3 A viper on Paul's hand: 6 Hee shaketh it off without harme: 8 Publius 9 and others are by him healed. 11 They depart from Melita, 16 and come to Rome. 17 Paul openeth to the Iewes 20 the cause of his comming: 22 Hee preacheth Iesus 30 two yeeres.

AND when they were come safe, then they knew that the yle was called Melita.

2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no little kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one, because of the present shower, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a number of stickes, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heate, and leapt on his hand.

4 Now when the Barbarians sawe the worme hang on his hand, they sayd among themselues, This man surely is a murtherer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance hath not suffered to liue.

5 But he shooke off the worme into the fire, & felt no harme.

6 Howbeit they waited when he should haue swollen, or fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no inconuenience come to him, they changed their minds and said, That he was a God.

7 In the same quarters, the chiefe man of the yle (whose name was Publius) had possessions: the same receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And

8 And so it was, that the father of Publius lay sicke of the feuer, and of a bloody flixe: to whom Paul entred in, and when he prayed, he layd *his* hands on him, and healed him.

9 When this then was done, other also in the yle, which had diseases, came to him, and were healed,

10 Which also did vs great honour: and when we departed, they laded vs with things necessary.

11 ¶ Now after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the yle, whose badge was Castor and Pollux.

12 And when we arriued at Syracusa, wee tarried *there* three dayes.

13 And from thence we fet a compasse, and came to Rhegiums and after one day the South winde blew, and we came the second day to Putioli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarie with them seuen dayes, and so wee went toward Rome.

15 ¶ And from thence when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meete vs at the Market of Appius, and at the three Tauernes, whom when Paul saw, he thanked God and waxed bold.

16 So when we came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the generall captaine: but Paul was suffered to dwel by himselfe with a souldier that kept him.

17 And the third day after, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together: and when they were come, he said vnto them, Men *and* brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people, or lawes of the fathers, *yet* was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not because I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see *you*, and to speake with *you*: for that hope of Israels sake, I am bound with this chaine.

21 Then they said vnto him, Wee neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither came any of the brethren that shewed or spake any euill of thee.

22 But we will heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that euery where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many vnto him into *his* lodging, to whome hee expounded, testifying the kingdome of God, and perswading them those things that

concerne Iesus, both out of the Law of Moses, and out of the Prophets from morning to night.

24 And some were perswaded with the things which were spoken, and some beleeued not.

25 Therefore when they agreed not among themselues, they departed after Paul had spoken one word, *to wit*, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet vnto our Fathers,

Isa.6.9. mat.13. 14.mar.4 12.luk.8. 10.ioh 12 40.rom. 11.8.

26 Saying, * Goe vnto this people, and say, By hearing yee shall heare, and shall not vnderstand: and seeing, ye shall see, and not perceiue.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed fat, and their eares are dull of hearing, and with their eyes haue they winked, lest they should see with *their* eyes, and heare with *their* eares, & vnderstand with *their* hearts, and should returne that I might heale them.

28 Be it knowen therfore vnto you, that this saluation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shall heare it.

29 And when he had said these things, the Iewes departed, and had great reasoning among themselues.

30 And Paul remained two yeeres full in an house hired for himselfe, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all boldnes of speach without let.

¶THE EPISTLE OF THE Apostle Paul to the Romanes.

CHAP. I.

1 Hee first sheweth on what authority his Apostleship standeth: 15 Then he commendeth the Gospel, 16 by which God setteth out his power to those that are saued 17 by faith, 21 but were guilty of wicked vnthankefulnesse to God, 26 For which his wrath was worthily powred on them, 29 So that they run headlong into all kinds of sinne.

Act.13.1

PAVL a seruant of IESVS CHRIST, called *to be* an Apostle, * put apart *to preach* the Gospel of God,

2 (Which hee had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord (which was made of the seede of Dauid, according to the flesh,

4 And

4 And declared mightily *to be* the ſonne of God, touching the Spirit of Sanctification by the reſurrection from the dead)

5 By whom we haue receiued grace and Apoſtleſhip (that obedience might bee giuen vnto the faith) for his name among all the Gentiles,

6 Among whom ye be alſo the called of Ieſus Chriſt:

7 To alll you that be a Rome beloued of God, called *to bee* Saints: Grace *bee* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

8 Firſt I thanke my God through Ieſus Chriſt for you all, becauſe your faith is publiſhed throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witneſſe, (whom I ſerue in my ſpirit in the Goſpel of his Sonne) that without ceaſing I make mention of you

10 Alwayes in my prayers, beſeeching that by ſome meanes, one time or other, I might haue a proſperous iourney, by the will of God, to come vnto you.

11 For I long to ſee you that I might beſtow among you ſome ſpirituall gift, that you might be ſtrengthened:

12 That is, that I might bee comforted together with you, through *our* mutuall faith, both yours and mine.

13 Now my brethren, I would not that yee ſhould bee ignorant how that I haue oftentimes purpoſed to come vnto you, (but haue been let hitherto) that I might haue ſome fruit alſo alſo among you, as I *haue* among the other Gentiles.

14 I am detter both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wiſe men, and to the vnwiſe.

15 Therefore, as much as in mee is, I am ready to preach the Goſpel to you alſo that are at Rome.

16 For I am not aſhamed of the Goſpell of Chriſt: for it is the power of God vnto ſaluation to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iewe firſt, and alſo to the Grecian.

17 For by it the righteouſneſſe of God is reuealed from faith to faith. as it is written. *The iuſt ſhall liue by faith. *Hab. 2. 4.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen againſt all vngodlineſſe, and vnrighteouſneſſe of men, which withhold the trueth in vnrighteouſneſſe.

19 For as much as that which may be knowen of God, is manifeſt in them: for God hath ſhewed it vnto them.

20 For the inuiſible things of him, that is, his eternal power and Godhead, are ſeene by the creation of the world, being conſidered in *his* workes, to the intent that they ſhould be without excuſe:

21 Becauſe that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine in their thoughts, and their fooliſh heart was full of darkeneſſe.

22 When

22 When they profeſſed themſelues to be wiſe, they became fooles.

23 For they turned the glory of the incorruptible God to the ſimilitude of the image of a corruptible man, and of birdes and foure footed beaſts, and of creeping things.

24 Wherefore alſo God gaue them vp to their hearts luſtes, vnto vncleanneſſe, to defile their owne bodies betweene themſelues.

25 Which turned the trueth of God vnto a lie, and worſhipped and ſerued the creature, forſaking the Creator, which is bleſſed for euer, Amen.

26 For this cauſe God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vſe into that which is againſt nature.

27 And likewiſe alſo the men left the naturall vſe of the woman, and burned in their luſt one toward another, and man with man wrought filthineſſe, and receiued in themſelues ſuch recompence of their errour, as was meete.

28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, *euen ſo* God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate mind, to do thoſe things which are not conuenient,

29 Being full of all vnright couſneſſe, fornication, wickednesſe, couetouſneſſe, malicouſneſſe full of enuie, of murther, of debate, of deceit, taking all things in the euill part, whiſperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proud, boaſters, inuenters of euill things, diſobedient to parents, without vnderſtanding, couenant breakers, without naturall affection, ſuch as can neuer be appeaſed, mercileſſe.

31 Which men though they knew the Law of God, how that they which commit ſuch things, are worthy of death, yet not only doe the ſame, but alſo fauour them that doe them.

CHAP. II.

1 *He bringeth all before the iudgement ſeate of God.* 12 *The excuſe that the Gentiles might pretend* 14 *of ignorance, hee taketh quite away.* 17 *Hee vrgeth the Iewes with the written Lawe,* 23 *in which they boaſted:* 27 *And ſo maketh both Iew and Gentile alike,*

THerefore thou art inexcuſable, O man, whoſoeuer thou art that condemneſt: for in that that thou condemneſt another, thou condemneſt thy ſelfe: for thou that condemneſt, doeſt the ſame things.

2 But wee know that the iudgement of God is according to trueth, againſt them which commit ſuch things.

3 And thinkeſt thou this, O thou man that condemneſt them which

which doe such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his bountifulnesse, and patience, and long sufferance, not knowing that the bountifulnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But thou after thine hardnesse and heart that cannot repent, *heapest vp as a treasure vnto thy selfe wrath against the day of wrath, and of the declaration of the iust iudgement of God, *Iam.5.3.*

6 *Who will reward euery man according to his workes: *Psal.62.*

7 *That is*, to them which through patience in well doing, seeke glory, and honour, and immortality, euerlasting life: 12.*mat.* 16.27.

8 But vnto them that are contentious, and disobey the trueth, and obey vnrighteousnesse *shall bee* indignation and wrath, *reuel.*22. 12.

9 Tribulation and anguish *shall be* vpon the soule of euery man that doeth euill: of the Iew first, and *also* of the Grecian.

10 But to euery man that doeth good *shall be* glory, and honour, and peace, to the Iew first and *also* to the Grecian.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as haue sinned without the Lawe, shall perish also without the Law: and as many as haue sinned in the Lawe, shall be iudged by the Law.

13 (For the hearers of the Law *are* not righteous before God: but the doers of the Law shall be iustified.

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Law, doe by nature the things *conteined* in the Law, they hauing not the Law, are a Law vnto themselues,

15 Which shew the effect of the Law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts accusing one another, or excusing)

16 At the day when God shall iudge the secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my Gospel.

17 ¶ Behold, thou art called a Iew, and restest in the Law, and gloriest in God,

18 And knowest *his* will, and ‖ triest the things that differ from it, in that thou art instructed by the Law: ‖ Or, allowest things that are excellent.

19 And perswadest thy selfe that thou art a guide of the blind, a light of them which *are* in darknesse.

20 An instructer of them which lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlearned, which hast the forme of knowledge, and of the trueth in the Law.

21 Thou therefore, which teachest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou that preachest, A man should not steale, dost thou steale?

22 Thou that sayest, A man should not commit adultery, doest thou

thou commit adulterie? thou that abhorrest idoles, committest thou sacrilege?

23 Thou that glorieſt in the Law, through breaking the Law, diſhonoureſt thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blaſphemed among the Gentiles through you, * as it is written.

Iſa. 52. 5. ezek. 36. 20.

25 For circumciſion verily is profitable, if thou doe the Lawe: but if thou be a tranſgreſſour of the law, thy circumciſion is made vncircumciſion.

26 Therfore if the vncircumciſion keepe the ordinances of the Law, ſhall not his vncircumciſion be counted for circumciſion?

27 And ſhall not vncircumciſion which is by nature (if it keepe the Law) condemne thee which by the letter and circumciſion art a tranſgreſſour of the Law?

28 For hee is not a Iew, which is one outward: neither is that circumciſion, which is outward in the fleſh:

29 But hee is a Iew which is one within, and the circumciſion is of the heart in the ſpirit, not in the letter, whoſe praiſe is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 He giueth the Iewes ſome 2 preferment for the couenants ſake, 4 but yet ſuch, as wholy dependeth on Gods mercie. 9 That both Iewes and Gentiles are ſinners, 11 hee proueth by Scripture: 19 and ſhewing the vſe of the Law, 28 he concludeth that wee are iuſtified by faith.

WHat is then the preferment of the Iew? or what is the profit of circumciſion?

2 Much euery maner of way: for chiefly, becauſe vnto them were of credite committed the oracles of God.

3 For what, though ſome did not beleeue? ſhal their vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, and euery man a liar, as it is writte, That thou might eſt be iuſtified in thy words, and ouercome, when thou art iudged.

5 Now if our vnrighteouſneſſe commend the righteouſneſſe of God, what ſhall we ſay? Is God vnrighteous which puniſheth? (ſpeake as a man)

6 God forbid: elſe how ſhall God iudge the world?

7 For if the veritie of God hath more abounded through my lie vnto his glory, why am I yet condemned as a ſinner?

8 And (as we are blamed, and as ſome affirme that we ſay) why doe we not euill, that good may come *thereof*? whoſe damnation is iuſt.

9 What then? are we more excellent? No, in no wiſe: for we haue

haue already proued, that all, both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder sinne,

10 As it is written, * There is none righteous, no not one. *Psal. 14. 1, 3. and 53. 1, 3.*

11 There is none that vnderstandeth: there is none that seeketh God.

12 They haue all gone out of the way: they haue been made altogether vnprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 * Their throate is an open sepulchre: they haue vsed their tongues to deceit: * the poyson of Aspes *is* vnder their lippes, *Psal. 5. 10. Psal. 140. 3.*

14 * Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse. *Psal. 10. 7.*

15 * Their feete are swift to shed blood. *Isa. 59. 7.*

16 Destruction and calamitie *are* in their wayes,

17 And the way of peace they haue not knowen.

18 * The feare of God is not before their eyes. *Psal. 36. 1.*

19 Now we know that whatsoeuer the Law sayth, it sayth it to them which are vnder the Law, that euery mouth may be stopped, and all the world be subiect to the iudgement of God.

20 Therefore by the workes of the Law shall no flesh be iustified in his sight: for by the Law *commeth* the knowledge of sinne.

21 But now is the righteousnesse of God made manifest without the Law, hauing witnesse of the Law and of the Prophets,

22 *To wit*, the righteousnes of God by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all that beleeue.

23 For there is no difference: for all haue sinned, and are depriued of the glory of God,

24 And are iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Iesus,

25 Whom God hath set foorth *to be* a reconciliation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnesse, by the forgiuenes of the sinnes that are passed,

26 Through the patience of God, to shew at this time his righteousnesse, that he might be iust, and a iustifier of him which is of the faith of Iesus.

27 Where is then the reioycing? It is excluded. By what law? of workes? Nay: but by the Law of faith.

28 Therfore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith without the workes of the Law.

29 *God*, is he the God of the Iewes only, and not of the Gentiles also? Yes, euen of the Gentiles also.

30 For it is one God who shall iustifie circumcision of faith, and vncircumcision through faith.

31 Doe wee then make the Law of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Law.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He proueth that which he said before of faith, by the example of Abraham, 3. 6 and the testimonie of the Scripture, and some times in the chapter he beareth vpon this word Imputation*

WHat shall we say then, that Abraham our Father hath found concerning the flesh?

2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, he hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God.

3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted to him for righteousnesse.

4 Now to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by debt:

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth in him that iustifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteousnesse.

6 Euen as Dauid declareth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without workes, *saying*,

7 Blessed *are* they, whose iniquities are forgiuen, and whose sinnes are couered.

8 Blessed *is* the man, to whom the Lord imputeth not sinne.

9 *Came* this blessednesse then vpon the circumcision *only*, or vpon the vncircumcision also? For we say, that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteousnesse.

10 How was it then imputed? when he was circumcised, or vncircumcised? not when he was circumcised, but when he was vncircumcised.

11 After, he receiued the signe of circumcision, *as* the seale of the righteousnesse of the faith which he had, when he was vncircumcised, that hee should be the Father of all them *that* beleeue, not being circumcised, that righteousnesse might be imputed to them also.

12 And the Father of circumcision not vnto them onely which are of the circumcision, but vnto them also that walke in the steps of the faith of our father Abraham, *which hee had* when hee was vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heire of the worlde, was not *giuen* to Abraham or to his seed, through the Lawe, but through the righteousnesse of faith.

14 For if they which are of the Lawe, *bee* heires, faith is made void, and the promise is made of none effect.

15 For the Lawe causeth wrath: for where no Law is, there *is* no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* by faith, that *it might come* by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Law: but also to that which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the Father of vs all,

17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a Father of many nations) *euen* before God whom he beleeued, who quickneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were.

18 Which *Abraham* aboue hope, beleeued vnder hope, that he should be the Father of many nations: according to that which was spoken *to him*, So shall thy seede be.

19 And he not weake in the faith, considered not his owne body, which was now dead, being almost an hundreth yeres old, neither the deadnesse of Sarahs wombe,

20 Neither did he doubt of the promise of God through vnbelief, but was strengthened in the faith, and gaue glory to God,

21 Being fully assured that he which had promised, was also able to doe it.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnes,

23 Now it is not written for him only, that it was imputed to him for righteousnesse,

24 But also for vs to whom it shal be imputed *for righteousnesse* which beleeue in him that raised vp Iesus our Lord from the dead:

25 Who was deliuered *to death* for our sinnes, and is risen againe for our iustification.

1. *He amplifieth* 2 *Christs righteousnesse*, 5 *which is layd hold on by faith*, 5 *who was giuen for the weake*. 8 *and sinnefull* 14 *Hee compareth Christ with Adam*, 17 *Death with life*, 20 *and the Law with grace.*

THen being iustified by faith, we haue peace toward God through our Lord Iesus Christ,

2 * By whom also through faith, we haue had this accesse in to this grace, wherein we stand, and reioyce vnder the hope of the glory of God. *Eph.2.18*

3 Neither *that* only, but also wee * reioyce in tribulations, knowing that tribulation bringeth forth patience, *Iam.1.2.*

4 And patience experience, and experience hope,

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the loue of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto vs.

6 For Christ when we were yet of no strength, at *his* time, died for the * vngodly. *Heb.9.15*

7 Doubtlesse, one will scarce die for a righteous man: but yet for a good man it may be that one dare die. *1.pet.3.18*

8 But God setteth out of his loue toward vs, seeing that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for vs,

9 Much more then, being now iustified by his blood, we shal be saued from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we shall be saued by his life.

11 And not onely so, but wee also reioyce in God through our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom wee haue now receiued the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the world, and death by sinne, and so death went ouer all men: in whom all men haue sinned.

13 For vnto the time of the Law was sinne in the world, but sinne is not imputed, while there is no Law.

14 But death reigned from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them also that sinned not after the like maner of the transgression of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come.

15 But yet the gift is not so, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.

16 Neither is the gift so, as *that which entred in* by one that sinned: for the fault *came* of one *offince* vnto condemnation: but the gift *is* of many offences to iustification.

17 For if by the offence of one, death reigned through one, much more shall they which receiue that abundance of grace, and of that gift of that righteousnesse, reigne in life through one, *that is*, Iesus Christ.

18 Likewise then as by the offence of one *the fault came* on all men to condemnation, so by the iustifying of one *the benefite abounded* toward all men to the iustification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners, so by that obedience of that one shall many also bee made righteous.

20 Moreouer, the Law entred thereupon that the offence should abound: neuerthelesse, where sinne abounded, *there* grace abounded much more:

21 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousnesse vnto eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He commeth to sanctification, without which that no man putteth on Christs righteousnesse, he proueth,* 4 *by an argument taken of Baptisme.* 12 *and thereupon exhorteth to holinesse of life,* 16 *briefly making mention of the Law transgressid*

WHat shall we say then? Shall wee continue still in sinne, that grace may abound? God forbid.

2 How

2 How shall we, that are dead to sinne, liue yet therein?

3 Know ye not, that * all we which haue beene baptized into Iesus Christ, haue been baptized into his death? *Gal.3.27.*

4 *We are buried then with him by baptisme into his death, that like as Christ was raised vp from the dead to the glory of the Father, so we also should * walke in newnesse of life. *Col.2.12.*

5 *For if wee bee planted with him to the similitude of his death, euen so shall we be *to the similitude* of his resurrection, *Eph.4.23 col.3.8. heb.12.1. 1.pet.2.1*

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, that henceforth wee should not serue sinne. *1.Cor.6. 14.2.tim. 2.11.*

7 For he that is dead, is freed from sinne.

8 Wherefore if we be dead with Christ, we beleeue that wee shall liue also with him,

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more: death hath no more dominion ouer him.

10 For in that he died, hee died once to sinne: bue in that hee liueth, he liueth to God.

11 Likewise thinke ye also, that ye are dead to sinne, but are aliue to God in Iesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither giue ye your members *as* weapons of vnrighteousnesse vnto sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as they that are aliue from the dead, and *giue* your members *as* weapons of righteousnesse vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you: for yee are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace.

15 What then, shall we sinne, because wee are not vnder the Law, but vnder Grace? God forbid.

16 * Know ye not that to whomsoeuer yee giue your selues as seruants to obey, his seruants ye are to whom ye obey, whether it be of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousnesse? *Iob.3.34. 1 pet.2.19*

17 But God *be* thanked, that ye haue been the seruants of sinne, but yee haue obeyed from the heart vnto the forme of the doctrine, wereunto ye were deliuered.

18 Being then made free from sinne, yee are made the seruants of righteousnesse.

19 I speake after the maner of man, because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as yee haue giuen your members seruants to vncleanneſſe, and to iniquity, to *commit* iniquitie, so now giue your members seruants vnto righteousnesse in holinesse.

20 For when ye were the seruants of sinne, ye were freed from righteousnesse.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereof ye are now ashamed? For the end of those things *is* death.

22 But now being freed from sinne, and made seruants vnto God, ye haue your fruit in holinesse, and the ende, euerlasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God *is* eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

1 *He declareth what it is to bee no more vnder the Law,* 2 *by an example taken of the Law of marriage.* 7. 12 *And least the Law should seeme faulty,* 14 *hee proueth, that our sinne is the cause,* 13 *That the same is an occasion of death,* 17 *which was giuen vs vnto life:* 21 *Hee setteth out the battaile betweene the flesh and the spirit.*

KNow yee not brethren (for I speake to them ỹ know the Law) that the Law hath dominion ouer a man, as long as he liueth?

1. Cor. 7. 39. 2 *For the woman which is in subiection to a man, is bound by the Law to the man, while he liueth: but if the man bee dead, she is deliuered from the Law of the man.

3 So then, if while the man liueth shee take another man, shee shall be called an *adulteresse: but if the man be dead she is free from the Law, so that shee is not an adulteresse, though shee take another man.

Mat. 5. 32

4 So yee, my brethren, are dead also to the Law by the body of Christ, that yee should bee vnto another, *euen* vnto him that is raised vp frō the dead, that we should bring forth fruit vnto God.

5 For when wee were in the flesh, the affections of sinnes which were by the Law, had force in our members, to bring forth fruit vnto death.

6 But now wee are deliuered from the Law, hee being dead in whom we were holden, that wee should serue in newnesse of Spirit, and not in the oldnesse of the letter.

7 What shal we say then? *Is* the Law sinne? God forbid. Nay, I knew not sinne, but by the Law: for I had not known lust except the Law had said, *Thou shalt not lust.

Exod. 20. 17. deut. 5. 21.

8 But sinne tooke an occasion by the commandement, and wrought in me all maner of concupiscence: for without the Law sinne *is* dead.

9 For I once was aliue, without the Law: but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued,

10 But I died: and the same commandement which was *ordeined* vnto life, was found *to be* vnto me vnto death.

11 For sinne tooke occasion by the commaundement, and deceiued me, and thereby slew *me*.

12 Wherefore

12 Wherefore the Law * *is* holy, and that commandement *is* holy, and iuſt, and good. *1.Tim.1.8*

13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto mee? God forbid: but ſinne, that it might appeare ſinne, wrought death in me by that which is good, that ſinne might be out of meaſure ſinfull by the commandement.

14 For wee know that the Lawe is ſpirituall, but I am carnall, ſold vnder ſinne.

15 For I allow not that which I doe: for what I would, that doe I not: but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If I doe then that which I would not, I conſent to the Lawe, that *it is* good.

17 Now then, it is no more I, that doe it, but ſinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know that in me, that is, in my fleſh dwelleth no good thing: for to will is preſent with mee: but I finde no meanes to performe that which is good.

19 For I doe not the good thing, which I would, but the euill which I would not, that doe I.

20 Now if I doe that I wou'd not, it is no more I that doe it, but the ſinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then that when I would doe good, I am thus yoked, that euill is preſent with me.

22 For I delite in the Lawe of God, concerning the inner man:

23 But I ſee another law in my members, rebelling againſt the law of my minde, and leading mee captiue vnto the law of ſinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who ſhall deliuer me from the body of this death?

25 I thanke God through Ieſus Chriſt our Lord. Then I my ſelfe in my minde ſerue the Law of God, but in my fleſh the Lawe of ſinne.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *He concludeth that there is no condemnation to them, who are grafted in Chriſt through his ſpirit,* 3 *howſoeuer they be as yet burdened with ſinnes:* 9 *for they liue through that ſpirit,* 14 *whoſe teſtimonie* 15 *driueth away all feare,* 28 *and releueth our preſent miſeries.*

NOw then there *is* no cõdemnation to them that are in Chriſt Ieſus, which walke not after the fleſh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the Law of the Spirit of life, *which is* in Chriſt Ieſus, hath freed me from the Law of ſinne and of death.

3 For (that that was impoſsible to the Law, inaſmuch as it was weake, becauſe of the fleſh) God ſending his owne Sonne, in the ſi-

militude of ſinfull fleſh and for ſinne condemned ſinne in the fleſh,

4 That that righteouſneſſe of the Law might bee fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the fleſh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the fleſh, ſauour the things of the fleſh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For the wiſedome of the fleſh *is* death: but the wiſedom of the Spirit *is* life and peace.

7 Becauſe the wiſedome of the fleſh *is* enimitie againſt God: for it is not ſubiect to the Law of God, neither indeede can bee.

8 So then they that are in the fleſh, cannot pleaſe God.

9 Now yee are not in the fleſh, but in the Spirit, becauſe the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any man haue not the Spirit of Chriſt, the ſame is not his.

10 And if Chriſt be in you, the body is dead, becauſe of ſinne: but the Spirit *is* life for righteouſneſſe ſake.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raiſed vp Ieſus from the dead, dwell in you, hee that raiſed vp Chriſt from the dead, ſhall alſo quicken your mortall bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, wee are debters, not to the fleſh, to liue after the fleſh.

13 For if ye liue after the fleſh ye ſhall die: but if yee mortifie the deedes of the body by the Spirit, ye ſhall liue.

14 For as many as are ledde by the Spirit of God, they are the ſonnes of God.

15 For ye haue not receiued the ſpirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby wee crie, Abba, Father.

16 The ſame Spirit beareth witneſſe with our Spirit, that wee are the children of God.

17 If *we be* children, *we are* alſo heires, euen the heires of God, and heires annexed with Chriſt: if ſo be that we ſuffer with him, that we may alſo be glorified with him.

18 For I count that the afflictions of this preſent time *are* not worthy of the glory which ſhall be ſhewed vnto vs.

19 For the feruent deſire of the creature waiteth when the ſonnes of God ſhall be reuealed,

20 Becauſe the creature is ſubiect to vanitie not of it owne wil, but by reaſon of him which hath ſubdued it vnder hope,

21 Becauſe the creature alſo ſhall be deliuered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious libertie of the ſonnes of God.

22 For we knowe that euery creature groweth with vs alſo, and trauaileth in paine together vnto this preſent.

23 And not onely *the creature*, but we alſo which haue the firſt fruits

fruits of the Spirit, euen we doe ſigh in our ſelues, waiting for the adoption, *euen* * the redemption of our bodie. *Luke 21.*
28.

24 For we are ſaued by hope: but hope that is ſeene, is not hope: for how can a man hope for that which he ſeeth?

25 But if we hope for that we ſee not, we doe with patience abide for it.

26 Likewiſe the Spirit alſo helpeth our infirmities, for wee know not what to pray as we ought: but the Spirit it ſelfe maketh requeſt for vs with ſighes which cannot be expreſſed.

27 But hee that ſearcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh requeſt for the Saints according to *the will of* God.

28 Alſo wee know that all things worke together for the beſt vnto them that loue God, euen to them that are called of *his* purpoſe.

29 For thoſe which hee knew before, he alſo predeſtinate to be made like to the image of his ſonne, that hee might be the firſt borne among many brethren.

30 Moreouer, whom he predeſtinated, them alſo he called, and whom he called, them alſo he iuſtified, and whom hee iuſtified, them he alſo glorified.

31 What ſhall we then ſay to theſe things? If God bee on our ſide, who *can be* againſt vs?

32 Who ſpared not his owne Sonne, but gaue him for vs all *to death*, how ſhall he not with him giue vs all things alſo?

33 Who ſhall lay any thing to the charge of Gods choſen? *it is* God that iuſtifieth,

34 Who ſhall condemne? *it is* Chriſt which is dead, yea or rather which is riſen againe, who is alſo at the right hand of God, and maketh requeſt alſo for vs.

35 Who ſhall ſeparate vs from the loue of Chriſt? ſhall tribulation, or anguiſh, or perſecution, or famine, or nakednes, or peril, or ſword?

36 As it is written, * For thy ſake are wee killed all day long, *Pſal. 44.*
22.
we are counted as ſheepe for the ſlaughter.

37 Neuertheleſſe, in all theſe things we are more then conquerours through him that loued vs.

38 For I am perſwaded that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things preſent, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature ſhalbe able to ſeparate vs from the loue of God, which is in Chriſt Ieſus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Hee anſwereth an obiection, that might bee brought on the Iewes*

behalfe, 7 *and telleth of two sorts of Abrahams children,* 19 *and that God worketh all things in this matter according to his will,* 20 *euen as the potter doeth.* 24. 30 *He promiseth as well the calling of the Gentiles,* 31 *as also the reiecting of the Iewes,* 25. 27 *by the testimonies of the Prophets.*

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience bearing mee witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorrow in mine heart.

3 For I would wish my selfe to bee separate from Christ, for my brethren that are my kinsmen according to the flesh,

4 Which are the Israelites, to whom *pertaineth* the adoption, *Eph.2.17.* and the glory, and the * couenants, and the giuing of the Law, and *Heb.2.12.* the seruice of *God*, and the promises.

5 Of whom *are* the fathers, and of whom concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is God ouer all, blessed for euer, Amen.

Rom.2.28. 6 Notwithstanding it cannot bee that the worde of God should take none effect: for all they are not Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither *are they* all children, because they are the seede of *Gen.21.* Abraham: but * In Isaac shall thy seede be called:

12.Heb.11 18. 8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, are not the *Gal.4.28.* children of God: but the * children of the promise, are counted for the seede.

Gen.18. 10. 9 For this is the word of promise, * In this same time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

Gen.25. 21. 10 Neither *he* onely *felt this*, but also * Rebecca when she had conceiued by one, *euen* by our father Isaac.

11 For yet *the children* were borne, and when they had neither done good nor euill (that the purpose of God might remaine according to election, not by works, but by him that calleth)

Gen.25. 23 12 It was said vnto her, * The Elder shall serue the yonger.

Mal.1.2. 13 As it is written, * I haue loued Iacob, and haue hated Esau.

14 What shal we say then? Is there vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid.

Exod.33. 19. 15 For he saith to Moses, * I will haue mercie on him, to whome I will shew mercie: and will haue compassion on him, on whom I will haue compassion.

16 So then, *it is* not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercie.

Exod.9. 16. 17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharao, * For this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 There-

18 Therefore he hath mercie on whom he will, and whom hee will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt then say vnto me, Why doth hee yet complaine? for who hath resisted his will?

20 But, O man, who art thou that pleadest against God? shall the * thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? *Isa.* 45. 9.

21 * Hath not the potter power ouer the clay, to make of the same lumpe, one vessell to honour, and another vnto dishonour? *Iere.* 18. 6.

22 *What* and if God would, to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowen, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction?

23 And that he might declare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of mercie which he hath prepared vnto glory?

24 Euen vs whom he hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles.

25 As hee saith also in Osee, * I will call them, My people, which were not my people: and her, Beloued, which was not beloued. *Hos.* 2. 23. 1. *pet.* 2. 10

26 And it shall bee in the place where it was said vnto them, * Ye are not my people, that there they shall be called, The children of the liuing God. *Hos.* 1. 10.

27 Also Esaias crieth concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea, *yet* shall *but* a remnant be saued. *Isa.* 10. 22.

28 For hee will make his account, and gather it into a short summe with righteousnesse: for the Lord will make a short count in the earth.

29 * And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of hostes had left vs a seede, we had been made as Sodome, and had beene like to Gomorrha. *Isa.* 1. 9.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteousnesse, haue attained vnto righteousnesse, euen the righteousnesse which is of faith.

31 But Israel which followed the Lawe of righteousnes, could not attaine to the Law of righteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? because *they sought it* not by faith, but as *it were* by the workes of the Lawe: for they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone. *Psal.* 118. 22. *isa* 8. 14.

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and a rocke to make men fall: and euery one that beleeueth in him, shall not be ashamed. *and* 28. 16. 1. *pet.* 2. 6.

CHAP. X.

1 *Hee handleth the effects of election,* 3 *that some refuse, and some embrace*

embrace 4 Christ, who is the ende of the Lawe. 15 How she with that Moses foretold the calling of the Gentiles, 20 and Esaias the hardening of the Iewes.

BRethren, mine hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saued.

2 For I beare them record, that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of the righteousnesse of God, and going about to stablish their owne righteousnesse, haue not submitted themselues to the righteousnesse of God.

Gal.3.24 4 *For Christ *is* the end of the Lawe for righteousnesse vnto euery one that beleeueth.

Leu.18.5. ezek.20.11 5 For Moses *thus* describeth the righteousnesse which is of the Law,* That the man which doth these things, shall liue thereby.

6 But the righteousnes which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, *gal.3.12.* *Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? (that is *Deut.30.* to bring Christ from aboue)

12. 7 Or, who shal descend into the deepe? (that is to bring Christ againe from the dead)

Deut.30. 8 But what sayth it? *The word is neere thee, *euen* in thy *14.* mouth, and in thine heart. This is the worde of faith which wee preach.

9 For if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt beleeue in thine heart, that God raised him vp from the dead, thou shalt be saued:

10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteousnesse, and with the mouth man confesseth to saluation.

Esa.28.16 11 For the Scripture saith,* Whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shal not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference betweene the Iewe and the Grecian: for hee that is Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all, that call on him.

Ioel.2.32. 13 *For whosoeuer shall call vpon the Name of the Lord, shal be saued.

14 But how shall they call on him, in whom they haue not beleeued? and how shal they beleeue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and how shall they heare without a preacher?

15 And how shal they preach, except they be sent? as it is writ- *Esa.52.7* ten, * How beautifull are the feete of them which bring glad ti- *nah.1.15.* dings of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel: for Esaias saith, *Esa.53.1.* * Lord, who hath beleeued our report? *Iohn 12.*

17 Then faith *is* by hearing, and hearing by the worde of *38.* God.

18 But

18 But I demand, Haue they not heard? *No doubt their sound went out through all the earth, and their words into the endes of the world. *Psal.19.4*

19 But I demand, Did not Israel know *God*? First Moses saith, *I wil prouoke you to enuie by a nation that is not *my* nation, and by a foolish *nation* I will anger you. *Deut. 32. 21.*

20 *And Esaias is bolde, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not, and haue beene made manifest to them that asked not after me. *Isa.65.1.*

21 And vnto Israel he saith, *All the day long haue I stretched forth mine hand vnto a disobedient, and gainesaying people. *Isa.65.2.*

CHAP. XI.

1 *Least the casting off of the Iewes should bee limited according to the outward appearance, 4 he sheweth that Elias was in times past deceiued, 16 and that, seeing they haue an holy roote, 23 many of them likewise shall bee holy. 28. 24 Hee exhorteth the Gentiles to be humble, 33 and cryeth out that Gods iudgements are vnsearchable.*

I Demand then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he knew before. Know ye not what the Scripture saith of Elias, how hee communeth with God against Israel, saying,

3 * Lord they haue killed thy Prophets, & digged down thine altars: and I am left alone, and they seeke my life?

4 But what saith the answer of God to him? *I haue reserued vnto my selfe seuen thousand men, which haue not bowed the knee to Baal

5 Euen so then at this present time is there a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if *it be* of grace, it is no more of workes: or els were grace no more grace: but if it be of works, it is no more grace, or else were worke no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that hee sought: but the election hath obtained it and the rest haue beene hardned,

8 According as it is written, * God hath giuen them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, & eares that they should not heare vnto this day.

9 And Dauid saith, * Let their table bee made a snare, and a net, and a stumbling blocke, euen for a recompence vnto them.

10 Let their eyes be darkened that they see not, and bow down their backe alwaies.

11 I demand then; Haue they stumbled, that they should fall? God

God forbid: but through their fall, saluation *commeth* vnto the Gentiles to prouoke them to follow them.

12 Wherefore if the fal of them *be* the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles, how much more shall their abundance *be*?

13 For *in that* I speake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office,

14 *To vvit* if by any meanes I might prouoke them of my flesh to follow them, and might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them *be* the reconciling of the world, what *shall* the receiuing *be*, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruites *be* holy, so *is* the whole lumpe: and if the roote be holy, so *are* the branches.

Iere. 11.6. 17 * And though some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wild Oliue tree wast graft in for them, and made partaker of the roote, and fatnesse of the Oliue tree:

18 Boast not thy selfe against the branches: and if thou boast thy selfe, thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches are broken off, that I might be graft in.

20 Well: through vnbelief they are broken off, and thou standest by faith. be not high minded, but feare.

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, *take heede*, lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the bountifulnesse and seueritie of God: toward them which haue fallen, seueritie: but toward thee bountifulnesse, if thou continue in *his* bountifulnesse: or else thou shalt also be cut off.

23 And they also, if they abide not still in vnbelief, shall bee graffed in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou wast cut out of the Oliue tree, which was wild by nature, and wast graffed contrary to nature in a right Oliue tree, how much more shall they that are by nature, be graffed in their owne Oliue tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that yee should bee ignorant of this secret (least ye should be arrogant in your selues) that partly obstinacie is come to Israel, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in.

Isa.59.20 26 And so all Israel shall bee saued, as it is written, * The deliuerer shall come out of Sion, and shall turne away the vngodlines from Iacob.

Isa.27.9. 27 And this is my couenant to them, * When I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concerning the Gospel, *they are* enemies for your sakes:

but

but as touching the election, they are beloued for the Fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For euen as ye in time past haue not beleeued God, yet haue now obtained mercie through their vnbeliefe:

31 Euen so now haue they not beleeued by the mercie *shewed* vnto you, that they also may obtaine mercie.

32 For God hath shut vp all in vnbeliefe, that hee might haue mercie on all.

33 O the deepenesse of the riches, both of the wisedom, and knowledge of God! how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 *For who hath knowen the mind of the Lord? or who was his counsellor? *Iob 41. 2. isa. 40. 13. 1. cor. 2. 16.*

35 Or who hath giuen vnto him first, and he shall be recompensed?

36 For of him, and through him, and for him are all things: to him *be* glory for euer, Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Hee exhorteth 2 to that worsh p which is acceptable to God: 9 To loue vnfained, 14 10 euen toward is our enemies.*

I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God *which is* your reasonable seruice of God.

2 And fashion not your selues like vnto this world but be ye changed by the renewing of your minde, that yee may *proue what that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God is. *Ephe. 5. 17. 1. thes. 4. 3.*

3 For I say through the grace that is giuen vnto me, vnto euery one that is among you, that no man presume to vnderstand aboue that which is meet to vnderstand, but that yee vnderstand according to sobriety, as God hath dealt to euery man the *measure of faith. *1. cor. 12. 11. ephes. 4. 7.*

4 For as we haue many members in one body, and all members haue not one office,

5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and euery one, one anothers members.

6 *Seeing then that we haue gifts that are diuers, according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether *we haue* prophecie, *let vs* prophecie according to the portion of faith: *1. Pet. 4. 10.*

7 Or an office, *let vs waite* on the office: or he that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or hee that exhorteth, on exhortation: hee that distributeth, *let him doe it* *with simplicitie: hee that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercie, with cheerefulnesse. *Mat. 6. 2. 2. cor. 9. 7.*

9 Let

Amos 5. 15. 9 *Let* loue *be* without dissimulation. * Abhorre that which is euill, and cleaue vnto that which is good.

Ephe.4 2. 10 * Be affectioned to loue one another with brotherly loue. In
1.pet.2.17 giuing honour, goe one before another,

1.Pet.5.8. 11 Not slothfull to doe seruice: feruent in spirit: serning the
Luk.18.1 Lord,

1.cor.16.1 12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, * continuing in prayer.

Heb.13 2 13 * Distributing vnto the necessities of the Saints: * giuing
1 pet.4.13 your selues to hospitalitie.

Mat.5.44 14 *Blesse them which persecute you: blesse, *I say*, & curse not.

15 Reioyce with them that reioyce, and weepe with them that weepe.

Prou.3.7. 16 Be of like affection one towards another: * be not hie min-
isa 5.11. ded, but make your selues equall to them of the lower sort: bee
Pro.20.22 not wise in your selues.

mat.5.39. 17 *Recompence to no man euill for euill: procure things ho-
2.cor.8.11 nest in the sight of all men.

1.pet.3 9. 18 *If it be possible, as much as in you is, haue peace with all
Heb.12. men.

14. 19 Dearely beloued. * auenge not your selues, but giue place
Eccl.2.18 vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine: I will repay,
mat.5.39 saith the Lord.

Deut.32. 20 * Therefore if thine enemie hunger, feede him: if he thirst,
35.heb. giue him drinke: for in so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on
10.30. his head.

Prou.25. 22. 21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euil with goodnesse.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *He willeth that we submit our selues to magistrates:* 8 *To loue our neighbours:* 12 *To liue vprightly,* 14 *and to put on Christ.*

Titus 3.1. *1.pet.2.13* LEt * euery soule be subiect vnto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God: and the powers that be, are ordained of God.

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to themselues condemnation.

3 For Magistrates are not to be feared *for* good workes, but *for* euill. Wilt thou then bee without feare of the power? doe well: so shal thou haue praise of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God for thy wealth. but if thou do euill, feare: for he beareth not the sword for nought: for he is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that doeth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must be subiect, not because of wrath onely, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause ye pay also tribute, for they are Gods ministers applying themselues for the same thing.

7 * Giue to all men therefore their duetie: tribute, to whom *ye owe* tribute: custome, to whom custome: feare, to whom feare: honour, to whom *ye owe* honour. *Mat. 22. 11.*

8 Owe nothing to any man, but to loue one another: for hee that loueth another, hath fulfilled the Law.

9 For this, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other commandement: it is briefly comprehended in this saying, *euen* in this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Exod. 20. 14. deut. 5. 18. Leuit. 19. 18. mat. 22. 39.*

10 Loue doeth not euill to his neighbour: therefore is loue the * fulfilling of the Law. *mar. 12. 31*

11 And that considering the season, that *it is* now time that we should arise from sleepe: for now is our saluation neere, then when we beleeued it. *gal. 5. 14. iam. 2. 8. 1. Tim. 1. 1.*

12 The night is past, & the day is at hand, let vs therefore cast away the works of darknesse, & let vs put on the armour of light,

13 So that we walke honestly, as in the day: not in * gluttonie, and drunkennesse, neither in chambering and wantonnesse, nor in strife and enuying: *Luk. 21. 34. Gal. 5. 16.*

14 * But put ye on the Lord IESVS CHRIST, and take no thought for the flesh, to *fulfill* the lusts of it. *1. pet. 2. 11.*

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *He willeth that we so deale with the weake in faith,* 15 *that through our fault they be not offended.* 19 *And in other sort he commandeth them not rashly to iudge of the stronger:* 19 *that within the bounds of edification* 20 *and charitie,* 22 *Christian libertie may consist.*

HIm that is weake in the faith receiue vnto you, *but* not for controuersies of disputations.

2 One beleeueth that he may eate of all things: and another which is weake, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for God hath receiued him.

4 * Who art thou that condemnest another mans seruant? he standeth or falleth to his owne master: ye, he shalbe established: for God is able to make him stand. *Iam. 4. 12.*

5 This man esteemeth one day aboue another day, and another man counteth euery day alike: let euery man be fully perswaded in his minde.

6 He that obserueth the day, obserueth it to the Lord: and he that

that obserueth not the day, obserueth it not to the Lord. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giueth God thankes: and that eateth not, eateth not to the Lord, and giueth God thankes.

7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, neither doeth any die to himselfe.

8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: or whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether wee liue therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

9 For Christ therefore died and arose againe, and reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the quicke.

10 But why doest thou condemne thy brother? or why doest
2. Cor. 5. thou despise thy brother? * for wee shall all appeare before the
10. iudgement seate of Christ.

Esa. 45. 23 11 For it is written, * I liue, sayeth the Lord, and euery knee
Phil. 2. 10. shall bow to me, and all tongues shall confesse vnto God.

12 So then euery one of vs shall giue accounts of himselfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but vse *your* iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occasion to fall, or a stumbling blocke before *his* brother.

14 I knowe, and am perswaded through the Lord Iesus, that there is nothing vncleane of it selfe: but vnto him that iudgeth any thing to be vncleane, to him *it is* vncleane.

15 But if thy brother be grieued for the meate, now walkest
1. Cor. 8. thou not charitably: * destroy not him with thy meate, for whom
11. Christ died.

16 Cause not your commoditie to be euill spoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God is not meat nor drinke, but righteousnesse, and peace and ioy in the holy Ghost.

18 For whosoeuer in these things serueth Christ, is acceptable vnto God, and is approued of men.

19 Let vs then follow those things which concerne peace, and where with one may edifie another

Tit. 1. 15. 20 Destroy not the worke of God for meates sake: *all things in deede are pure: but *it is* euill for the man which eateth with offence.

2. Cor. 8. 21 * *It is* good neither to eate flesh, nor no drinke wine, nor
13. any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or made weake.

22 Hast thou faith? haue it with thy selfe before God: blessed is he that condemneth not himselfe in that thing which he alloweth.

23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if he eate, because *hee eateth* not of faith: and whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

CHAP.

1 *The stronger must employ their strength to strengthen the weake,*
3 *by christs example,* 7 *who receiued* 8 *not only the Iewes,* 10
but also the Gentiles. 15 *The cause why he wrote this Epistle.*

WEe which are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to please our selues.

2 *Therefore* let euery man please his neighbour in that that is good to edification.

3 For Christ also would not please himselfe, but as it is written, * The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, fell on me. *Psal.* 69.

4 For whatsoeuer things are written aforetime, are written for our learning, that wee through patience, and comfort of the Scriptures, might haue hope. 10.

5 Now the God of patience and consolation giue you that ye bee like minded one towards another, according to Christ Iesus, *1.Cor.*1. 10.

6 That wee with one minde, *and* with one mouth may praise God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receiue yee one another, as Christ also receiued vs to the glory of God.

8 Now I say that Iesus Christ was minister of the circumcision, for the trueth of God, to confirme the promises *made* vnto the Fathers.

9 And let the Gentiles praise God for *his* mercie, as it is written, * For this cause I will confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name. *Psal.*18. 52. *Deut.*32. 43.

10 And againe he sayth, * Reioyce, ye Gentiles with his people,

11 And againe, * Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laud yee him, all people together, *Ps.* 117 1.

12 And againe Esias sayth, * There shall be a roote of Iesse, and he that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust. *Isa.*11.10

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all ioy, and peace in beleeuing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnesse, and filled with all knowledge, and are able to admonish one another.

15 Neuertheless, brethren, I haue somewhat boldly after a sort written vnto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance through the grace that is giuen me of God,

16 That I should bee the minister of Iesus Christ toward the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the offering vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce in Christ Iesus in
those things which *pertaine* to God.
18 For I dare not speake of any thing, which Christ hath not
wrought by me, *to make* the Gentiles obedient in word and deed,
19 With the power of signes and wonders, by the power of
the Spirit of God: so that from Hierusalem, and round about vn-
to Illyricum, I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ.
20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, not where
Christ was named, lest I should haue built on another mans foun-
dation.
Isa.52.15 21 But as it is written, * To whom hee was not spoken of, they
shall see *him*, and they that heard not, shall vnderstand *him*.
Cha.1.11. 22 * Therefore also I haue bene oft let to come vnto you:
23 But now seeing I haue no more place in these quarters, and
* *Thes.* 1. also haue * bene desirous many yeeres agone to come vnto you,
17.
24 When I shall take my iourney into Spaine, I will come to
you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to bee brought on
my way thitherward by you, after that I haue bene somewhat
filled with your *company*.
25 But now goe I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.
26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to
make a certaine distribution vnto the poore Saints which are at
Hierusalem.
1. Cor.9. 27 For it hath pleased them, and their detters are they: * for if
11. the Gentiles be made partakers of their spirituall things, their du-
tie is also to minister vnto them in carnall things.
28 When I haue therefore performed this, and haue sealed
them this fruit, I will passe by you into Spaine.
29 And I knowe when I come, that I shall come to you with
abundance of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.
30 Also brethren, I beseech you for our Lord Iesus Christes
sake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that yee would striue with me
by prayers to God for me,
31 That I may be deliuered from them which are disobedient
in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue to doe at Hierusalem,
may be accepted of the Saints,
32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and
may with you be refreshed
33 Thus the God of peace *be* with you all Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *He commendeth Phebe.* 3 *He sendeth greeting to many.* 17 *and
warneth to beware of them which are the causers of diuision.*

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the
Church of Cenchrea:

2 That

2 That ye receiue her in the Lord, as it becommeth Saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoeuer businesse she needeth of your aid: for she hath giuen hospitalitie vnto many, and to me also.

3 Greete *Priscilla, and Aquila my fellow helpers in Christ Iesus, *Act. 18.2*

4 (Which haue for my life laid downe their owne necke. Vnto whom not I only giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise *greete* the Church that is in their house. Salute my beloued Epenetus, which is the first fruits of Achaia in Christ.

6 Greete Mary which bestoweth much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my cousins and fellow prisoners, which are notable among the Apostles, and were in Christ before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Vrbanus our fellow helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloued.

10 Salute Apelles approoued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus *friends*.

11 Salute Herodion my kinseman. Greete them which are of the *friends* of Narcissus which are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, which *women* labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which *woman* hath laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Iulias, Nereas, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with * an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you. *1. Cor. 16. 20. 2. cor.*

17 ¶ Nowe I beseech you brethren, marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and * auoid them. *13. 12. 1. pet. 5 14. 2 Ioh. 10.*

18 For they that are such, serue not the Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne bellies, and with faire speech and flattering deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad among all: I am glad therefore of you: but yet I would haue you wise, vnto that which is good, and simple concerning euill.

20 The God of peace shall tread Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.

21 *Timotheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsemen, salute you. *Act. 16. 1. phil. 2. 19.*

22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the steward of the city saluteth you, & Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

Eph.3.20 *Ephe.3.9.* *col.1.26.* *2.tim.1.* *Titus 1.2.*

25 *To him now that is of power to establish you according to my Gospel, and preaching of Iesus Christ, * by the reuelation of the mysterie, which was kept secret since the world began:

26 (But now is opened, and published among all nations by the Scriptures of the Prophets, at the commandement of the euerlasting God for the obedience of faith)

27 To God, *I say*, onely wise, be praise through Iesus Christ for euer. Amen.

Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, *and sent* by Phebe, seruant of the Church, which is at Cenchrea.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL to the Corinthians.

1 *After the salutation,* 10 *which in effect is an exhortation,* 12 *he reprehendeth the Corinthians sects and diuisions,* 17 *and calleth them from pride to humilitie:* 20 *For, ouerth. owing all worldly wisdome,* 23. 25 *he aduanceth only the preaching of the crosse.*

PAul called *to be* an Apostle of Iesus Christ, through the will of God, and *our* brother Sosthenes,

Act.18.9 *1.th.1.1.* *7.* *Rom.1.7.* *ephe.1.1.* *col.1.22.* *2.tim.1.9* *titus 1.3.* *2.Tim.1.* 22. *Tit.2.11.* *Pet 3.20.* *1.Thess.3.* 13. *and* 5.23.

2 Vnto the Church of God, which is at Corinthus, to them that are * sanctified in Christ Iesus, * Saints by calling: * with all that call on the name of our Lorde Iesus Christ in euery place, both their *Lord*, and ours:

3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe for the grace of God which is given you in Iesus Christ,

5 That in all things you are made rich in him, in all kinde of speech, and in all knowledge:

6 As the testimonie of Iesus Christ hath beene confirmed in you:

7 So that yee are not destitute of any gift: * waiting for the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ.

8 *Who shall also confirme you vnto the end, that ye may be blamelesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 *God

9 * God is faithfull, by whom ye are called vnto the fellowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord. 1.Thes.5.24.

10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye all speake one thing, and that there be no dissentions among you: but be ye knit together in one minde, and in one iudgement.

11 For it hath bene declared vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are of the houſe of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I ſay, that euery one of you ſaith, I am Pauls, and I am * Apollos, and I am Cephas, and I am Chriſts.

13 Is Chriſt diuided? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized into the name of Paul? Acts 18.24

14 I thanke God, that I baptized none of you, but * Criſpus, and Gaius, Act.18.8.

15 Leſt any ſhould ſay, that I had baptized into mine owne name.

16 I baptized alſo the houſhold of Stephanas: furthermore know I not, whether I baptized any other.

17 For Chriſt ſent mee not to baptize, but to preach the Goſpel, not with * wiſedome of words, leſt the croſſe of Chriſt ſhould be made of none effect. Chap.2.13. 2.pet.1.16

18 For that preaching of the croſſe is to them that periſh, fooliſhneſſe: but vnto vs which are ſaued, it is the * power of God. Rom 1.16.

19 For it is written, * I wil deſtroy the wiſedome of the wiſe, and will caſt away the vnderſtanding of the prudent. Iſa.29.14.

20 Where is the wiſe? where is the Scribe? where is the diſputer of this world? hath not God made the wiſedome of this world fooliſhnes?

21 For ſeeing the world by wiſedome knew not God in the wiſedome of God, it pleaſed God by the fooliſhnes of preaching to ſaue them that beleeue:

22 * Seeing alſo that the Iewes require a ſigne, and the Grecians ſeeke after wiſedome. Mat 12.38.

23 But we preach Chriſt crucified: vnto the Iewes, enen a ſtumbling blocke, and to the Grecians, fooliſhnes:

24 But vnto them which are called, both of the Iewes and Grecians, *we preach* Chriſt, the power of God, and the wiſedome of God.

25 For the fooliſhnes of God is wiſer then men, and the weakneſſe of God is ſtronger then men.

26 For brethren, you ſee your calling, how that not many wiſe men after the fleſh, not many mighty, not many noble *are called*.

27 But God hath choſen the fooliſh things of the world to

confound the wise, and God hath chosen the weake things of the world, to confound the mightie things.

28 And vile things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, & things which are not, to bring to nought things that are,

29 That no flesh should reioyce in his presence.

30 But ye are of him in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto vs wisedome, and righteousnes, & sanctification, and redemption,

Ier. 9.24. 31 That, according as it is written, * Hee that reioyceth, let
2. cor. 10. 17. him reioyce in the Lord.

CHAP. II.

1 He setteth downe a platforme of his preaching, 4 which was but in respect of mans wisedome, 7. 13 but noble in respect of the spirituall power and efficacie, 14 and so concludeth that flesh and blood c unot rightly iudge thereof.

Cha. 1. 17. AND I brethren, when I came to you, came not with * excellencie of words, or of wisedome, shewing vnto you the testimonie of God.

2 For I esteemed not to know any thing among you, saue Iesus Christ, and him crucified.

Act. 18. 1. 3 * And I was among you in weakenesse, and in feare, and in much trembling.

Cha. 1. 17. 4 Neither *stood* my word and my preaching in the * intising
2. pet. 1. 16. speech of mans wisedome, but in plaine euidence of the Spirit, and of power,

5 That your faith should not be in the wisedome of men, but in the power of God.

6 And we speake wisedome among them that are perfect: not the wisedome of this world, neither of the princes of this world, which come to nought.

7 But we speake the wisedome of God in a mysterie, *euen* the *hid wisedome*, which God had determined before the world, vnto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this world hath knowen: for had they knowen it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of glory.

Isa 64. 4. 9 But as it is written, * The things which eye hath not seene, neither eare hath heard, neither came into mans heart, *are*, which God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reuealed *them* vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirit of a man, which is in him? euen so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now

12 Now we haue receiued not the ſpirit of the world, but the Spirit, which is of God, that wee might know the things that are giuen vnto vs of God.

13 Which things alſo wee ſpeake, not in the * wordes which mans wiſedome teacheth, but which the holy Ghoſt teacheth, comparing ſpirituall things with ſpirituall things. *Cha.* 1. 17. 2. *pet.* 1. 16.

14 But the naturall man perceiueth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are fooliſhneſſe vnto him: neither can hee know *them*, becauſe they are ſpiritually diſcerned.

15 But he that is ſpirituall, diſcerneth all things: yet hee himſelfe is iudged of no man.

16 * For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord, that hee might inſtruct him? but we haue the minde of Chriſt. *Iſa* 40. 13 *rom.* 11. 34.

CHAP. III.

1 *Hee ſeeth a reaſon why he preached ſmall matters vnto them.* 4 *He ſheweth how they ought to eſteeme of miniſters:* 6 *The miniſters office.* 10 *A true forme of edifying.* 16 *He warneth the Corinthians that they be not drawen away to profane things,* 18 *through the proud wiſdome of the fleſh.*

AND I could not ſpeake vnto you, brethren, as vnto ſpirituall men, but as vnto carnall, *euen* as vnto babes in Chriſt.

2 I gaue you milke to drinke, and not meate: for ye were not yet able *to beare it*, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnall. for whereas *there is* among you enuying, and ſtrife, and diuiſions, are ye not carnall, & walke as men?

4 For when one ſaith, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are ye not carnall?

5 Who is Paul then? and who is Apollos, but the miniſters by whom ye beleeued, and as the Lord gaue to euery man?

6 I haue planted, Apollos watered, but God gaue the increaſe.

7 So then, neither is hee that planteth, any thing, neither hee that watereth, but God that giueth the increaſe.

8 And hee that planteth, and he that watereth, are one, * and euery man ſhall receiue his wages, according to his labour. *Pſal.* 62. 12. *gal.* 6. 5.

9 For we together are Gods labourers: ye are Gods husbandrie, *and* Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God giuen to me, as a skilfull maſter builder, I haue laid the foundation, & another buildeth thereon: but let euery man take heede how he buildeth vpon it.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that which is laid, which is Ieſus Chriſt.

12 And if any build on this foundation, golde, ſiluer, precious ſtones, timber, hay, *or* ſtubble,

13 Euery mans worke ſhall be made manifeſt: for the day ſhal

declare it, because it shalbe reuealed by the fire: and the fire shall trie euery mans worke of what sort it is.

14 If any mans worke, that he hath built vpon, abide, he shall receiue wages.

15 If any mans worke burne, he shall lose, but he shalbe saued himselfe: neuertheless yet as it were by the fire.

Cha.6.19 2.cor.6. 16. 16 *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man destroy the Temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: If any man among you seeme to be wise in this world, let him be a foole, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisedome of this world is foolishnesse with God: for it is written, *He catcheth the wise in their owne craftinesse. *Iob 5. 13. Psal.44. 22.*

20 *And againe, The Lord knoweth that the thoughts of the wise be vaine.

21 Therefore let no man reioyce in men: for all things are yours.

22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death: whether they bee things present, or things to come, euen all are yours,

23 And ye Christs, and Christ Gods.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Bringing in the diffination of a true Apostle, 7 he sheweth that humilitie ought rather to bee an honour then a shame vnto him. 9 He bringeth in proofe, whereby it may euidently appeare, 10 that he neither hadeare of glory, 11 nor of his belly. 17 He commendeth Timothie.

LEt a man so thinke of vs as of the ministers of Christ, and disposers of the secrets of God:

2 And as for the rest, it is required of the disposers, that euery man be found faithfull.

3 As touching me, I passe very litle to bee iudged of you, or of mans iudgement, no, I iudge not mine owne selfe.

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord.

*Mat.7.1, 5 Therfore *iudge nothing before the time, vntill the Lord come, who will lighten things that are hid in darknes, and make the counsels of the heart manifest: and then shal euery man haue praise of God.

6 Now these things brethren I haue figuratiuely applyed vnto mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that yee might learne by vs, that no man presume aboue that which is written, that one swell not against another for any mans cause.

7 For who separateth thee? and what hast thou, that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou haddest not receiued it?

8 Now ye are full: now ye are made rich: ye reigne as kings without vs, and would to God ye did reigne, that wee also might reigne with you.

9 For I thinke that God hath set foorth vs the last Apostles, as men appointed to death: for we are made a gazing stocke vnto the world, and to the Angels, and to men.

10 We *are* fooles for Christes sake, and ye *are* wise in Christ: we *are* weake, and ye *are* strong: ye *are* honourable, and wee *are* despited.

11 Vnto this houre we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling place,

12 * And labour, working with our owne hands: we are reuiled, and *yet* we blesse: we are persecuted, *and* suffer it. *Act. 20. 34. 1. thes. 2. 9.*

13 * We are euill spoken of, and we pray: we are made as the filth of the world, the offscowring of all things vnto this time. *1. Tim. 3. 8.*

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued children I admonish you. *Mat 5. 46. luke 23. 34. acts 7. 60.*

15 For though ye haue ten thousand instructers in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers: for in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel:

16 Wherefore, I pray you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, which shall put you in remembrance of my wayes in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Some are puffed vp, as though I would not come vnto you.

19 But I will come to you shortly, * if the Lord will, and will knowe, not the words of them which are puffed vp, but the power. *Acts 19. 21. mark. 4. 15.*

20 For the kingdome of God *is* not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue and in the spirit of meekenesse?

CHAP. V.

1 *That they haue winked at him who committed incest with his mother in Law,* 2. 6 *for shame should cause* [illegible] *rather to be ashamed, then to reioyce:* 10 *Such kind of wickednesse is to be punished with excommunication,* 12 *lest other be infected with it.*

IT is heard certainly *that there is* fornication among you: and such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp, and haue not rather sorrowed, that he which hath done this deede, might be put from among you.

3 For I verely as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue determined alreadie as though I were present, that he that hath thus done this thing,

4 When ye are gathered together, and my spirit, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that such one, *I say*, by the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

6 Your reioycing is not good: Know yee not that a little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

7 Purge out therefore the olde leauen, that yee may be a new lumpe, as ye are vnleauened: for Christ our Passeouer is sacrificed for vs.

8 Therefore let vs keepe the feast, not with olde leauen, neither in the leauen of maliciousnesse, and wickednesse: but with the vnleauened bread of sincerities and trueth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, that ye should not company together with fornicatours,

10 And not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the couetous, or with extortioners, or with idolaters: for then ye must goe out of the world.

11 But now I haue written vnto you, that ye company not together: if any that is called a brother, be a fornicatour, or couetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such one eate not.

12 For what haue I to doe, to iudge them also which are without? doe ye not iudge them that are within?

13 But God iudgeth them that are without. Put away therefore from among your selues that wicked man.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He enuieigheth against their contentions in Lawe matters, 6 wherewith they vexed one another vnder iudges that were infidels, to the reproch of the Gospel, 9 and then sharply threateneth fornicatours.*

DAre any of you, hauing businesse against another, be iudged vnder the vniust, and not vnder the Saints?

2 Doe ye not know, that the Saints shall iudge the world? if the world then shall be iudged by you, are yee vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters?

3 Know yee not that we shall iudge the Angels? how much more, things that pertaine to this life?

4 If then ye haue iudgements of things pertaining to this life, set

set vp them which are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake it to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise man among you? no not one that can iudge betweene his brethren?

6 But a brother goeth to law with a brother, and that vnder the infidels.

7 Now therefore there is altogether infirmitv in you, in that ye goe to law one with another: * why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather sustaine ye not harme? *Mat.5.39 luke 6.29*

8 *Nay, ye your selues doe wrong, and doe harme, and that to your brethren. *rom.12. 16.*

9 Knowe yee not that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the kingdome of God? Bee not deceiued: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor wantons, nor buggerers, *1.Thes.4. 6.*

10 Nor theeues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor railers, nor extortioners shall inherite the kingome of God.

11 And such were * some of you: but ye are washed, but yee are sanctified, but yee are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God. *Titus 3.3.*

12 ¶ * All things are lawfull vnto mee, but all things are not profitable. I may doe all things, but I will not be brought vnder the power of any thing. *Chap.10. 23.*

13 Meats *are ordained* for the belly, and the belly for the meats: but God shall destroy both it, and them. Now the body *is* not for fornication, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath also raised vp the Lord, and * shall raise vs vp by his power. *Rom.6.3.*

15 Know yee not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? shal I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 Doe ye not know, that hee which coupleth himselfe with an harlot, is one body? * for two, saith he, shalbe one flesh. *Gen.2.24*

17 But he that is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one spirit. *mat.19.5*

18 Flee fornication: euery sinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body. *mar.10.8 eph.5.31. Cha.3.17.*

19 Know ye not, that your * body is the Temple of the holy Ghost, *which is* in you, whom yee haue of God, and yee are not your owne. *2.cor.6. 18. Chap.7.23*

20 * For ye are bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit: for they are Gods. *1.pet.1. 18.*

CHAP. VII.

1 *Entreating heere of mariage,* 4 *which is a remedie against fornication,* 10 *and may not be broken,* 18. 20 *he willeth euery man to liue*

to liue contented with his lot. 25 Her sheweth what the ende of virginitie should be. 35 and who ought to marry.

NOw concerning the things, whereof yee wrote vnto me, *It were* good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Neuertheleſſe to auoyd fornication, let euery man haue his wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband.

Exod.21.10. 3 *Let the husband giue vnto the wife due beneuolence, and likewiſe alſo the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not the power of her owne body, but the husband: and likewiſe alſo the husband hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraud not one another, except *it bee* with conſent for a time, that ye may giue your ſelues to faſting, and prayer, and againe come together, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I ſpeake this by permiſsion, not by commandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my ſelfe *am*: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 Therefore I ſay vnto the vnmarried and vnto the widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I *doe*.

9 But if they cannot abſtaine, let them marrie: for it is better to marrie then to burne.

Mat.5. 32.& 19. 9.mar.10 11,12. luk.16.18 10 * And vnto the married I commaund, not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband.

11 But and if ſhe depart, let her remaine vnmaried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, & let not the husband put away *his* wife.

12 But to the remnant I ſpeake, *and* not the Lord. If any brother haue a wife, that beleeueth not, if ſhee bee content to dwell with him, let him not forſake her.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeueth not, if he be content to dwell with her, let her not forſake him.

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is ſanctified to the wife, and vnbeleeuing wife is ſanctified to the husband, elſe were your children vncleane, but now are they holy.

15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart: a brother or a ſiſter is not in ſubiection in ſuch things: but God hath called vs in peace.

16 For what knoweſt thou, O wife, whether thou ſhalt ſaue thine husband? Or what knoweſt thou, O man, whether thou ſhalt ſaue thy wife?

17 But as God hath diſtributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, ſo let him walke: and ſo ordaine I in all Churches.

18 Is

18 Is any man called beeing circumcised? let him not gather *his uncircumcision*: is any called vncircumcised? let him not bee circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandements of God.

20 * Let euery man abide in the same vocation wherin he was called. *1.Tim.6.2*

21 Art thou called *beeing* a seruant? care not for it: but if yet thou mayest be free, vse it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord *being* a seruant, is the Lords free man: likewise also he that is called *being* free, is Christs seruant.

23 * Ye are bought with a price: be not the seruants of men. *Cha.6.20.*

24 Brethren, let euery man, wherin he was called, therein abide with God. *1 pet.1.18 19.*

25 Now concerning virgins, I haue no commandement of the Lord: but I giue mine aduise, as one that hath obtained mercie of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose then, this to be good for the present necessitie: *I meane* that it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.

28 But if thou takest a wife, thou sinnest not: and if a virgin marrie, shee sinneth not: neuertheless, such shall haue trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

29 And this I say, brethren, because the time is short, hereafter that both they which haue wiues, be as though they had none.

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that vse this world, as though they vsed it not: for the fashion of this world goeth away.

32 And I would haue you without care. The vnmarried careth for the things of the Lord, how he may please the Lord.

33 But hee that is maried careth for the things of the world, how he may please *his* wife.

34 There is difference also betweene a virgin and a wife: the vnmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and spirit: but shee that is married, careth for the things of this world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speake for your owne commoditie, not to tangle you in a snare, but that *ye follow* that, which is honest, and that ye may cleaue fast vnto the Lord without separation.

36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomely for his virgin, if shee

the passe the floure of *her* age, and need so require, let him doe what he will, he sinneth not, let them be maried.

37 Nevertheles, he that standeth firme in his heart, that he hath no need, but hath power ouer his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, he doth well.

38 So then he that giueth her to mariage, doth well, but he that giueth not to mariage, doth better.

Rom.7.1. 39 The wife is bound by the Law, as long as her husband *liueth: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to mary with whom she will, only in the Lord.

40 But she is more blessed if she so abide, in my iudgement:

1.Tim.4.8 * and I thinke that I haue also the Spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 From this place vnto the ende of the tenth Chapter, he willeth them not to be at the Gentiles prophane bankets. 8 He restraineth the abuse of Christian libertie, 11 and sheweth that knowledge must be tempered with charitie.

AND as touching things sacrificed vnto idoles, wee know that wee all haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth.

2 Now if any man thinke that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowen of him.

4 Concerning therefore the eating of things sacrificed vnto idols, wee know that an Idol *is* nothing in the world, and that there *is* none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen, or in earth, (as there be many gods and many lords)

Exo.12.3. 6 Yet vnto vs there is but one god, *which is* the Father, of
Iob.13.13. whom are all things, and we in him: and * one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom *are* all things, and we by him.

7 But euery man hath not that knowledge: for many hauing conscience of the Idol vntill this houre, eate as a thing sacrificed vnto the Idol, and so their conscience being weake, is defiled.

8 But meat maketh vs not acceptable to God, for neither if we eate, haue wee the more: neither if wee eate not, haue wee the lesse.

9 But take heed lest by any meanes this power of yours bee an occasion of falling, to them that are weake

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at table in the idols steple, shal not the conscience of him which is weake, be boldened to eate those things which are sacrificed to idols?

Rom.14.15. 11 And through thy knowledge shall the * weake brother perish, for whom Christ died.

12 Now

12 Now when yee ſinne ſo againſt the brethren, and wounde their weake conſcience, ye ſinne againſt Chriſt.

13 *Wherefore if meat offend my brother, I will eate no fleſh while the world ſtandeth, that I may not offend my brother. *Rom.* 14. 21.

CHAP. IX.

1 *He declareth, that from the libertie which the Lord gaue him,* 15 *he willingly abſtained,* 18. 22 *leſt in things indifferent he ſhould offend any.* 24 *Hee ſhewth that our life is like vnto a race.*

AM I not an Apoſtle? am I not free? haue I not ſeen Ieſus Chriſt our Lord? are ye not my worke in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apoſtle vnto other, yet doubtleſſe I am vnto you: for ye are the ſeale of my Apoſtleſhip in the Lord.

3 My defence to them that examine me, is this,

4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Or haue we not power to lead about a wife beeing a ſiſter, as wel as the reſt of the Apoſtles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Or I onely and Barnabas, haue not we power not to worke?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne coſt? who planteth a vineyard and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I theſe things according to man? ſaith not the Law the ſame alſo?

9 For it is written in the Lawe of Moſes, *Thou ſhalt not muſſell the mouth of the oxe, that treadeth out the corne: doth God take care for oxen? *Deu.* 25. 4. 1. *Tim.* 5. 18.

10 Either ſaith hee it not altogether for our ſakes? For our ſakes no doubt it is written, That hee which eareth, ſhould eare in hope, and hee that threſheth in hope, ſhould bee partaker of his hope.

11 *If we haue ſowen vnto you ſpirituall things, *is it* a great thing if we reape your carnall things? *Rom.* 15. 27.

12 If others with you be partakers of *this* power, *are* not we rather? neuertheleſſe, wee haue not vſed this power: but ſuffer all things, that we ſhould not hinder the Goſpel of Chriſt.

13 Doe ye not know, that they which miniſter about the holy things eate of the things of the Temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar? *Deu.* 18. 1

14 So alſo hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the Goſpel, ſhould liue of the Goſpel.

15 But I haue vſed none of theſe things: neither wrote I theſe things that it ſhould be ſo done vnto mee: for it were better for me to die, then that any man ſhould make my reioycing vaine.

16 For

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for necessitie is laid vpon me, and woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Gospel.

17 For if I doe it willingly, I haue a reward, but if I doe it against my will, *notwithstanding* the dispensation is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? verely that when I preach the Gospel, I make the Gospel of Christ free, that I abuse not my authoritie in the Gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet haue I made my selfe seruant vnto all men, that I might winne the moe.

Act. 16.3. gal. 2.3. 20 * And vnto the Iewes I become as a Iew, that I may winne the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Law, as *though I were* vnder the Law, that I may win them that are vnder the Law.

21 To them that are without Law, as *though I were* without Law (when I am not without Lawe as pertaining to God, but *am* in the Law through Christ) that I may win them that are without Law:

22 To the weake I become as weake, that I may winne the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some.

23 And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiueth the price? so runne that ye may obtaine.

25 And euery man that prouoeth masteries, abstaineth from all things: and they *doe it* to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we for an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre.

27 But I beat downe my body, and bring it into subiection, lest by any meanes after that I haue preached to other, I my selfe should be reproued.

CHAP. X.

1 *If God spared not the Iewes, neither will he spare those who are of like condition.* 3. 4 *touching the outward signes of his grace.* 14 *That it is absurd that such should bee partakers of the table of deuils, who are partakers of the Lords supper.* 24 *To haue consideration of our neighbour in things indifferent.*

Exod. 13. 21. numb. 9.18. MOreouer, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, that all our fathers were vnder * that cloud, and all passed throughout that *sea,

Exod. 14. 22. 2 And were all baptized vnto Moses, in that cloud, and in that sea,

3 * And

3 *And did all eate the same spirituall meat,

4 * And did all drinke the same spirituall drinke (for they dranke of the spirituall Rocke that followed them: and the Rock was Christ)

5 But with many of them God was not pleased: for they were *ouerthrowen in the wildernesse.

6 Now these things are our ensamples, to the intent that we should not lust after euill things * as they also lusted.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them, as it is written, * The people sate downe to eate and drinke, & rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed fornication, and fell in one * day three and twentie thousand.

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted him, and * were destroyed of serpents.

10 Neither murmure ye as some of them also * murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things came vnto them for ensamples, and were written to admonish vs, vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh hee standeth, take heede lest he fall.

13 There hath no tentation taken you, but such as appertaineth to man: and God is faithfull, which will not suffer you to bee tempted aboue that you be able but will euen giue the issue with the tentation, that ye may be able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my beloued, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as vnto them which haue vnderstanding: iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which wee brake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we that are many are one bread and one body, because we are all partakers of one bread.

18 Behold Israel *which is* after the flesh: are not they which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing?

20 *Nay*, but that these things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to deuils, and not vnto God: and I would not that yee should haue fellowship with the deuils.

21 Yee cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of the deuils. Ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of deuils.

Exod. 16. 15.
Exo. 17. 6. num. 20. 10. and 21. 16.
Num. 26. 65.
Num. 11. 4 and 26. 64. psal. 106. 14.
Exo. 32. 6. Num. 25. 9.
Num. 21 6. psal. 106. 14.
Num. 14. 37 iudg. 8. 24.

22 Doe

22 Doe we prouoke the Lord to anger? are we stronger then he?

23 *All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expe- *1.Cor.6.12.
dient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man another wealth.

25 Whatsoeuer is sold in the shambles, eate yee, and aske no question for conscience sake.

Psal.24.1. 26 *For the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is.

27 If any of them which beleeue not, call you to a feast, and if ye will goe, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question, for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idoles, eate it not, because of him that shewed it, and for the conscience, (for the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is.)

29 And the conscience I say, not thine, but of that other: for why should my libertie bee condemned of another mans conscience?

30 For if I through *Gods* benefit be partaker, why I am I euill spoken of for that where fore I giue thankes?

Col.3.17. 31 *Whether therefore yee eate, or drinke, or whatsoeuer yee doe, doe all to the glory of God.

32 Giue none offence neither to the Iewes, nor to the Grecians, nor to the Church of God:

33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but *the profit* of many, that they might be saued.

CHAP. XI.

1 He blameth the Corinthians for that in their holy assemblies, 4 men doe pray, hauing their heads couered, 6 and women bare headed, and because their meetings tended to euill: 21 who mingled prophane bankets with the holy Supper of the Lord, 23 which is required to be celebrated according to Christs institution.

2.*Thess.* 3 9. BE * ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ.

2 Now brethren, I commend you, that yee remember all my things, and keepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.

Ephes.5. 23. 3 But I will that yee know, that Christ is the * head of euery man: and the man is the womans head: and God is Christs head.

4 Euery man praying or prophecying hauing *any thing* on *his* head, dishonoureth his head.

5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophecieth bare headed, dishonoureth her head: for it is euen one very thing, as though shee were shauen.

6 Therefore if the woman bee not couered, let her also bee shorne: and if it be shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

7 For

7 For a man ought not to couer *his* head: forasmuch as hee is the * image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman, but ϛ woman of the man.

9 * For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for the mans sake.

10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on *her* head, because of the Angels.

11 Neuertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, so is the man also by the woman: but all things are of God.

13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire, it is a shame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a praise vnto her: for her haire is giuen her for a couering.

16 But if any man lust to be contentious, wee haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 ϛ Now in this that I declare, I praise *you* not, that you come together, not with profit, but with hurt.

18 For first of all, when yee come together in the Church, I heare that there are dissentions among you: and I beleeue it *to be true* in some part.

19 For there must bee heresies euen among you, that they which are approoued among you, might be knowen.

20 When ye come together therefore in one place, *this* is not to eate the Lords Supper.

21 For euery man when they should eate, taketh his owne supper afore, and one is hungrie, and another is drunken.

22 Haue ye not houses to eate and to drinke in? despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which I also haue deliuered vnto you, *to wit*, that the Lord Iesus in the night that hee was betrayed, tooke bread:

24 *And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eate: this is my body, which is broken for you: this doe ye in remembrance of me.

25 After the same manner also *he tooke* the cup, when hee had supped, saying, This cup is the new Testament in my blood: this doe as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye shall eate this bread, and drinke this cup,

Gen. 1.26 and 5.1.
ϛ and 9.6.
col. 3.10.
Gen. 2.22
Mat. 26. 16. mar. 14. 22. luke 22. 19.

yee shewe the Lords death till hee come.

27 Wherefore whosoeuer shall eate this bread, and drinke the cup of the Lord vnworthily, shalbe guiltie of the body and blood of the Lord.

28 But let euery man therefore examine himselfe, and so let him eate of this bread, and drinke of this cup.

29 For hee that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, *because* hee discerneth not the Lords body.

30 For this cause many *are* weake, and sicke among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if we would iudge ourselues, we should not be iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we should not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when yee come together to eate, tarie one for another.

34 And if any man be hungry, let him eate at home, that yee come not together to condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

CHAP. XII.

1 To draw away the Corinthians from contention and pride, he sheweth that spirituall gifts are therefore diuersly bestowed, 7 that, the same being ioyntly to each other imployed, 12 we may grow vp together in one body of Christ in such equall proportion and measure, 20 as the members of mans body doe.

NOw concerning spirituall gifts, brethren, I would not haue you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, and were caried away vnto the dumbe idoles, as ye were led.

3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that no man * speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus execrable: also no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Now there are diuersities of gifts, but the same spirit.

5 And there are diuersities of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diuersities of operations, but God is the same which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is giuen to euery man, to profite withall.

8 For to one is giuen by the Spirit the word of wisdome, and to another the word of knowledge, by the same Spirit:

9 And to another *is giuen* faith by the same Spirit: and to another, the gifts of healing, by the same Spirit.

10 And to another the operations of great workes: and to another,

Mar.9.39. Chap.8.6. Esa.13.13. Phil.2.11.

1.Cor. 13.5.

other, prophecie: and to another, the discerning of Spirits: and to another diuerſities of tongues: and to another, the interpretation of tongues.

11 *And all theſe things worketh one, and the ſelfe ſame Spirit, diſtributing to euery man ſeuerally as he will. *Rom.12.3 ephe.4.7.*

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of the body, which is one, though they be many, *yet* are *but* one body: euen ſo is Chriſt.

13 For by one Spirit are wee all baptized into one body, whether *we be* Iewes, or Grecians, whether *we be* bond, or free, and haue beene all made to drinke into one Spirit.

14 For the body alſo is not one member, but many.

15 If the foote would ſay, Becauſe I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare would ſay, Becauſe I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing? if the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the ſmelling?

18 But now hath God diſpoſed the members euery one of them in the body, at his owne pleaſure.

19 For if they were all one member, where *were* the body?

20 But now *are* there many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot ſay vnto the hand, I haue no neede of thee: nor the head againe to the feet, I haue no neede of you.

22 Yea, much rather thoſe members of the body, which ſeeme to be more feeble, are neceſſarie.

23 And vpon thoſe *members* of the body, which we thinke moſt vnhoneſt, put we more honeſtie on: and our vncomely *parts* haue more comelineſſe on.

24 For our comely *parts* neede it not: but God hath tempered the body together, and hath giuen the more honour to that *part* which lacked,

25 Leſt there ſhould be any diuiſion in the body: but that the members ſhould haue the ſame care one for another.

26 Therefore if one member ſuffer, all ſuffer with it: if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Chriſt, and members for *your* part.

28 * And God hath ordained ſome in the Church: *as* firſt, Apoſtles: ſecondly Prophets, thirdly teachers, then them that doe miracles: after that, the gifts of healing, helpers, gouernours, diuerſitie of tongues. *Eph.4.11.*

29 Are all Apoſtles? are all Prophets? are all teachers?

30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the gifts of healing? do all ſpeake with tongues? doe all interprete?

31 But desire you the best giftes, and I will yet shewe you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Hee sheweth that there are no gifts so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupt, if charitie be away:* 4 *and therefore he diligently vrgeth vnto the commendation of it.*

THough I speake with the tongues of men & Angels, and haue not loue, I am *as* sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I had the *gift* of prophecie, and knew all secrets and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I could remoue mountaines, and had not loue, I were nothing.

Mat.17. 20.

3 And though I feede the poore with all my goods, and though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Loue suffereth long: it is bountifull: loue enuieth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp:

5 It doth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her own things: it is not prouoked to anger: it thinketh not euill:

6 It reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth in the trueth:

7 It suffereth all things: it beleeueth all things: it hopeth all things: it endureth all things.

8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophecyings be abolished, or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophecie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect, is come, then that which is in part, shall be abolished.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For now we see through a glasse darkely: but then *shall we see* face to face. Now I know in part: but then shall I know euen as I am knowen.

13 And now abideth faith, hope *and* loue, *euen* these three: but the chiefest of these *is* loue.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *Hee commendeth the gift of prophecying:* 7 *and by a similitude taken of musicall instruments,* 12 *hee teacheth the true vse of interpreting the Scriptures:* 17 *hee taketh away the abuse:* 34 *and forbiddeth women to speake in the Congregation.*

FOllow after loue, and couet spirituall *gifts*, and rather that yee may prophecie.

2 For hee that speaketh a *strange* tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth *him*: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh secret things.

3 But

3 But he that prophecieth, speaketh vnto men to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.

4 He that speaketh *strange* language, edifieth himselfe: but he that prophecieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I would that yee all spake *strange* languages, but rather that ye prophecied, for greater is hee that prophecieth, then hee that speaketh *diuers* tongues, except hee expound it, that the Church may receiue edification.

6 And nowe, brethren, if I come vnto you speaking *diuers* tongues, what shall I profite you, except I speake to you either by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 Moreouer, things wlthout life which giue a sound, whether *it be* a pipe or an harpe, except they make a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 And also if the trumpet giue an vncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to battell?

9 So likewise you, by the tongue, except ye vtter words that haue signification, how shall it be vnderstood what is spoken? for ye shall speake in the aire.

10 There are so many kinds of voices (as it commeth to passe) in the world, and none of them is dumbe.

11 Except I know then the power of the voice, I shall be vnto him that speaketh, a Barbarian, and hee that speaketh, shall be a Barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen so, forasmuch as ye couet spirituall *gifts*, seeke that ye may excell vnto the edifying of the Church.

13 Wherfore let him that speaketh a *strange* tongue, pray, that he may interprete.

14 For if I pray in a *strange* tongue, my spirit prayeth: but mine vnderstanding is without fruite.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, but I will pray with the vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, but I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

16 Else when thou blessest with the spirit, how shall hee that occupieth the roume of the vnlearned, say Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, seeing he knoweth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verely giuest thankes well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I speake languages more then ye all.

19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake fiue wordes with mine vnderstanding, that I might also instruct others, then ten thousand words in a *strange* tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in vnderstanding, but as concerning *Mat.* 18.3

eerning maliciousnesse be children, but in vnderstanding be of a ripe age.

Isa.28.11 21 In the Law it it written, * By men of other tongues, and by other languages will I speake vnto this people: yet so shall they not heare me, sayth the Lord.

22 Wherefore *strange* tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not: but propheeying *serueth* not for them that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.

23 If therefore when the whole Church is come together in one, and all speake *strange* tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which beleeue not, will they not say, that yee are out of your wits?

24 But if all prophecie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged of all,

25 And so are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so he will fall downe on his face, and worship God, and say plainly that God is in you in deede.

26 What is to be *done* then brethren? when yee come together, *according as* euery one of you hath a Psalme, *or* hath doctrine, *or* hath a tongue, *or* hath reuelation, *or* hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto edifying.

27 If any man speake a *strange* tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interprete.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, *which speaketh languages*, and let him speake to himselfe, and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two or three, & let the other iudge.

30 And if any thing be reuealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For yee may all prophecie one by one, that all may learne, and all may haue comfort.

32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace, as *we see in* all the Churches of the Saints.

1. Tim.2.12. 34 * Let your women keepe silence in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but *they ought* to be subiect, as also *the Law sayth.

Gen.3.16. 35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 Came the word of God out from you? either came it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let him

him acknowledge, that the things that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.

38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophecie, and forbid not to speake languages.

40 Let all things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. XV.

1 The Gospel that Paul preached. 3 The death and resurrection of Christ. 8 Paul saw Christ. 9 Hee had persecuted that Church, whereof afterward hee was made a minister. 12 Christ first rose againe: and we all shall rise by him. 26 The last enemy death. 29 To be baptized for dead. 32 At Epheſus Paul fought with beasts. 35 How the dead are raised. 45 The first Adam. The last Adam. 47 The first and second man. 51 We shall all be changed, we shall not all sleepe. 55 Deaths sting. 57 Victorie. 58 Constancie and stedfastnesse.

MOreouer, * brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye continue, *Gal.1.11*

2 And whereby vee are saued, if ye keepe in memorie, after what maner I preached it vnto you, except ye haue beleeued in vaine.

3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes, according to the * Scriptures, *Isa 53.5. 1 pet.2.*

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose the third day according to the * Scriptures, *Ionas 2.1. 24.*

5 * And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue, *Ioh.20.19*

6 After that, he was seene of moe then fiue hundred brethren at once: whereof many remaine vnto this present, and some also are asleepe.

7 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of all the Apostles.

8 * And last of all he was seene also of me, as of one borne out of due time. *Act 9.5.*

9 * For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God. *Ephe.3.8.*

10 * But by the grace of God, I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which is with me. *Ephe.3.7.*

11 Wherefore, whether it were I, or they, so wee preach, and so haue ye beleeued.

12 ¶ Now if it be preached, that Christ is risen from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 For if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen:

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

15 And we are found also false witnesses of God: for we haue testified of God, that he hath raised vp Christ, whom he hath not raised vp, if so be the dead be not raised.

16 For if the dead be not raised, then is Christ not raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine: ye are yet in your sinnes.

18 And so they which are asleepe in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life onely we haue hope in Christ, wee are of all men the most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* was made the * first fruites of them that slept.

Col. 1.18. *Reuel.* 1.5. 21 For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ shall all be made aliue,

23 But euery man in his * owne order: the first fruites *is* Christ, afterward, they that are of Christ, at his comming *shall rise againe.*

1. *Thess.* 4.13.

24 Then *shall be* the end when he hath deliuered vp the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when he hath put downe all rule, and all authoritie and power.

25 For he must reigne * till hee hath put all his enemies vnder his feete.

Psal. 110. 1. *actes* 2. 34. *heb.* 1. 13. *and* 10.13.

26 The last enemie that shalbe destroyed, *is* death.

27 * For hee hath put downe all things vnder his feete (And when he saith that al things are subdued *to him*, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put downe all things vnder him)

Psal. 8.6. *eb.* 2.8.

28 And when all things shall be subdued vnto him, then shall the Sonne also himselfe be subiect vnto him, that did subdue all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for dead?

30 Why are we also in ieopardie euery houre?

31 By our reioycing which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If I haue fought with beasts at Ephesus after the maner of men, what aduantageth it me, if the dead be not raised vp? * let vs eate and drinke: for to morow we shall die.

Isa 22.13

33 Be not deceiued: euill speakings corrupt good maners.

34 Awake to *iust* righteously, and sinne not: for some haue not

the

the knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised vp, & with what body come they forth?

36 O foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickened, except it die:

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shalbe, but bare corne, as it falleth, of wheat, or of some other.

38 But God giueth it a body at his pleasure, euen to euery seed his owne body.

39 All flesh *is* not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beasts, and another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There *are* also heauenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory of the heauenly *is* one, and *the glory* of the earthly *is* another.

41 There is another glory of the Sunne, and another glory of the Moone, and another glory of the Starres: for one starre differeth from *another* starre in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. *The body* is sowen in corruption *and* is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sowen in dishonour, and is raised in glory: it is sowen in weakenes, and is raised in power.

44 It is sowen a naturall body, *and* is raised a spirituall body: there is a naturall body *and* there is a spirituall body.

45 As it is also written, The first man *Adam was made a liuing soule: and the last man Adam *was made* a quickning Spirit. *Gen.2.7.*

46 Howbeit that *was* not first which is spirituall: but that *which is* naturall, and afterward that *which is* spirituall.

47 The first man *is* of the earth, earthly: the second man *is* the Lord from heauen.

48 As *is* the earthly, such *are* they that are earthly: and as *is* the heauenly, such *are* they also that are heauenly.

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthly, so shall we beare the image of the heauenly.

50 This say I, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdome of God, neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a secret thing, we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinckling of an eye at the last *trumpet: for the trumpet shall blowe, and the dead shall be raised vp incorruptible, and we shall be changed. *Mat.24. 31. 1.thes. 4.16.*

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall *must* put on immortalitie.

54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, and this

this mortall hath put on immortalitie, then shall be brought to
Ose 13.14 passe the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed vp into vi-
Heb. 2. 14. ctorie.

55 O death, where *is* thy sting? O graue, where *is* thy victorie?

56 The sting of death *is* sinne, and the strength of sinne *is* the Law.

1. *Ioh.* 5. 5. 57 *But thankes *bee* vnto God which hath giuen vs victorie through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therfore my beloued brethren, be ye stedfast, vnmoueable, aboundant alwaies in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as you know, that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 He exhorteth them to helpe the poore brethren of Hierusalem: 10 Then he commendeth Timothy: 13 and so with a friendly exhortation, 19 and commendations, endeth the Epistle.

COncerning the gathering for the Saints, as I haue ordained in the Churches of Galatia, so doe ye also.

2 Euery first *day* of the weeke let euery one of you put aside by himselfe & lay vp as *God* hath prospered him, that then there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I am come, whomsoeuer yee shall allow by letters, them will I send to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it be meete that I goe also, they shall goe with me.

5 Now I will come vnto you, after I haue gone through Macedonia (for I will passe through Macedonia)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on the way whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I wil not see you now in my passage, but I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 And I will tarry at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto mee: and there are many aduersaries.

10 ¶ Now if Timotheus come, see that he bee without feare with you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, euen as I *doe*.

11 Let no man therefore despise him, but conuey him forth in peace, that he may come vnto mee: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos I greatly desired him to come vnto you with the brethren: but his minde was not all to come at this time: howbeit he wil come when he shall haue conuenient time.

13 ¶ Watch yee: stand fast in the faith: quite you like men, *and* be strong.

14 Let all your things be done in loue.

15 Now

15 Now brethren, I beseech you (yee knowe the house of Stephanas, that is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselues to minister vnto the Saints)

16 That ye be obedient vnto such, and to all that help with vs and labour.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you.

18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men.

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lord.

20 All the brethren greet you. Greet yee one another with an *holy kisse. *Rom. 16. 16. 2. Cor. 13. 12. 1. pet. 5. 14.

21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hand.

22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him bee had in execration maran-atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.

24 My loue *be* with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, *and sent* by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of Paul to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I.

1 *He beginneth with the praise of afflictions,* 8 *declaring what he hath suffered in Asia,* 10 *and how happily God assisted him* 17 *He saith it was not vpon any lightnesse, that hee came not according to his promise.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and *our* brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia.

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 * Blessed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort, *Eph. 1. 3. 1. pet. 1. 3.*

4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that wee may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction, by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation aboundeth through Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation, and saluation,

saluation, which is wrought in the induring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether wee be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation.

7 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much as wee know that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For brethren, wee would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Asia, how wee were pressed out of measure passing strength, so that wee altogether doubted euen of life.

9 Yea, we receiued the sentence of death in our selues, because wee should not trust in our selues, but in God which raiseth the dead.

10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, and doth deliuer *vs*: in whom we trust, that yet hereafter he will deliuer *vs*,

Rom. 15. 30. 11 *So that yee labour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift *bestowed* vpon vs for many, thankes may bee giuen by many persons for vs.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly pureneſſe, *and* not in fleshly wisedome, but by the grace of God, we haue had our conuersation in the world, and most of all to youwards.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then that yee read, or else that ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge vnto the end.

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in the day of our Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence was I minded first to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace,

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to bee led forth toward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightneſſe? or mind I those things which I mind, according to the flesh? that with me should be, Yea, yea, Nay, nay?

18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our word toward you was not Yea, and Nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, *that is*, be me, and Siluanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him it was Yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him *are* Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glory of God through vs.

21 And it is God which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anointed vs.

22 Who hath alſo ſealed vs, and hath giuen the earneſt of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Now, I call God for a record vnto my ſoule, that to ſpare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinthus.

24 Not that wee haue dominion ouer your faith, but wee are helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye ſtand.

CHAP. II.

1 He excuſeth his not comming vnto them, 2 and priuily reprehendeth them: 4 he ſheweth that ſuch is his affection towards them, 5 that he neuer reioyceth but when they are merrie. 6 Perceiuing the adulterer (whom hee commanded to bee deliuered vp to Satan) to repent, 7 he requeſteth that they forgiue him. 31. He mencioneth his going into Macedonia.

BVt I determined thus in my ſelfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauineſſe.

2 For if I make you ſory, who is he then that ſhould make me glad, but the ſame which is made ſory by me?

3 And I wrote this ſame thing vnto you, leſt when I came, I ſhould take heauineſſe of them, of whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence haue I in you all, that my ioy is the *ioy* of you all.

4 For in great affliction, and anguiſh of heart I wrote vnto you with many teares: not that yee ſhould be made ſory, but that ye might perceiue the loue which I haue ſpecially vnto you.

5 And if any hath cauſed ſorrow, the ſame hath not made me ſory, but partly (leſt I ſhould more charge *him*) you all.

6 It is ſufficient vnto the ſame man, that hee was rebuked of many.

7 So that now contrariwiſe yee ought rather to forgiue *him*, and comfort *him*, leſt the ſame ſhould bee ſwallowed vp with ouermuch heauineſſe.

8 Wherefore I pray you, that yee would confirme your loue towards him.

9 For this cauſe alſo did I write, that I might know the proofe of you, whether you would be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgiue any thing, I *forgiue* alſo: for verely if I forgaue any thing, to whom I forgaue it, for your ſakes *forgaue I it* in the ſight of Chriſt,

11 Leſt Satan ſhould circumuent vs: for wee are not ignorant of his enterpriſes.

12 ¶ Furthermore, when I came to Troas *to preach* Chriſts Goſpel, and a doore was opened vnto me of the Lord,

13 I had no reſt in my ſpirit, becauſe I found not Titus my brother, but tooke my leaue of them, and went away into Macedonia.

14 Now

14 Now thankes *be* vnto God which alwaies maketh vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

15 For wee are vnto God the sweete sauour of Christ in them that are saued, and in them which perish:

16 To the one *we are* the sauour of death vnto death, and to the other the sauour of life, vnto life: & who is sufficient for these things?

Chap. 4. 2. 17 * For we are not as many, which make marchandise of the word of God: but as of sinceritie, but as of God in the sight of God speake we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 *He desireth no other commendation* 3 *then their continuing in the faith.* 6 *He is a minister, not of the letter, but of the spirit.* 8 *He sheweth the difference of the Law and the Gospel,* 13 *that the brightnesse of the Lawe doeth rather dimme the sight then lighten it* 18 *But the Gospel doth make manifest Gods countenance vnto vs.*

DOe we begin to praise our selues againe? or need we as some other, Epistles of recommendation vnto you, or *letters* of recommendation from you?

2 Yee are our Epistle written in our hearts, which is vnderstood, and read of all men,

3 In that ye are made manifest, to be the Epistle of Christ, ministred by vs, and written, not with ynke, but with the Spirit of the euerliuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.

4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God:

5 Now that we are sufficient of our selues to thinke any thing as of our selues, but our sufficiencie *is* of God,

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the new Testament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit giueth life.

7 If then the ministration of death *written* and grauen in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, (which *glory* is done away)

8 How shall not the ministration of ỹ Spirit be more glorious?

9 For if the ministerie of condemnation *was* glorious, much more doth the ministration of righteousnesse exceed in glory.

10 For euen that which was glorified, was not glorified in this point, *that is*, as touching the exceeding glory:

11 For if that which should be abolished, *was* glorious, much more

more shall that which remaineth be glorious.

12 Seeing then that we haue such trust, we vse great boldnesse of speech.

13 *And *we are* not as Moses, *which* put a vaile vpon his face, that the children of Israel should not looke vnto the ende of that which should be abolished. *Exod. 34. 34.

14 Therefore their minds are hardened: for vntill this day remaineth the same couering vntaken away in the reading of the olde Testament, which *vaile* in Christ is put away.

15 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the vaile *is* laid ouer their hearts.

16 Neuertheless when their *heart* shalbe turned to the Lord, the vaile shalbe taken away.

17 Now the Lord is the * Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there *is* libertie. *Ioh. 4. 24.

18 But wee all behold as in a mirrour the glory of the Lord with open face, and are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, as by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He sheweth that he hath so laboured in preaching the Gospel,* 4 *that such are euen blinded of Satan, who doe not perceiue the brightnesse thereof,* 7 *that the same is carried in earthen vessels,* 10 *who are subiect to many miseries,* 16 *and therefore he exhorteth them by his owne example to be couragious* 17 *and contemne this present life.*

THerefore seeing that we haue this ministerie, as wee haue receiued mercie, we faint not,

2 But haue cast from vs the clokes of shame, and walke not in craftinesse: neither handle we the word of God deceitfully: but in declaration of the truth we approue our selues to euery mans conscience in the sight of God.

3 If our Gospel be then hid, it is hid to them that are lost,

4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the mindes, *that is*, of the infidels, that the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ, which is the image of God, should not shine vnto them.

5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.

6 For God *that commanded the light to shine out of darkenesse *is he* which hath shined in our hearts, to giue the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Iesus Christ. *Gen. 1. 3.

7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellencie of that power might be of God, and not of vs.

8 Wee are afflicted on euery side, yet *are we* not in distresse: we are in doubt, but yet we despaire not.

9 We

9 *We are* persecuted, but not forsaken: cast downe, but wee perish not.

10 Euery where wee beare about in our body the dying of the Lord Iesus, that the life of Iesus might also bee made manifest in our bodies.

11 For we which liue, are alwaies deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might bee made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, and life in you.

13 And because we haue the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, *I beleeued, and therefore haue I spoken, we also beleeue, and therefore speake,

*Psal. 116. 10.

14 Knowing that he which hath raised vp the Lord Iesus, shall raise vs vp also by Iesus, and shall set vs with you.

15 For all things *are* for your sakes, that that most plenteous grace by the thanksgiuing of many, may redound to the praise of God.

16 Therefore we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed daily.

17 For our light affliction which is but for a moment, causeth vnto vs a farre most excellent *and* an eternall weight of glory:

18 Whiles we looke not on the things which are seene, but on the things which are not seene: for the things which are seene *are* temporall: but the things which are not seene, *are* eternall.

CHAP. V.

1 Hee continueth in the same argument, 6 touching the certaine hope of saluation 8 through faith, 12 not to praise himselfe, 14 seeing he hath God and his Church before his eies, 17 and esteemeth nothing, but newnesse of life in Christ.

FOr wee know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle bee destroyed, wee haue a building *giuen* of God, *that is*, an house not made with hands, *but* eternall in the heauens.

2 For therefore we sigh, desiring to be clothed with our house, which is from heauen:

3 Because that if we be clothed, we shall not be found *naked

*Rom. 16. 15.

4 For in deed we that are in this tabernacle, sigh and are burdened, because we would not be vnclothed, but would be clothed vpon, that mortalitie might be swallowed vp of life.

5 And he that hath created vs for this thing *is* God, who also hath giuen vs the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alway bold, though we know that whiles we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, and not by sight.)

8 Neuer-

8 Nenertheleſſe, we are bold, and loue rather to remoone out of the body, and to dwell with the Lord.

9 Wherefore alſo we couet, that both dwelling at home, and remooning from home, we may be acceptable to him.

10 * For wee muſt all appeare before the iudgement ſeate of Chriſt, that euery man may receiue the things which are *done* in his body, according to ỹ he hath done, whether *it be* good or euill. *Rom.14.10.*

11 Knowing therefore that terrour of the Lord, wee perſwade men, and we are made manifeſt vnto God, and I truſt alſo that we are made manifeſt in your conſciences.

12 For wee praiſe not our ſelues againe vnto you, but giue you an occaſion to reioyce of vs, that yee may haue *to anſwere* againſt them, which reioyce in the face, and not in the heart.

13 For whether wee bee out of our wit, *wee are it* to God, or whether we be in our right minde, *wee are it* vnto you.

14 For that loue of Chriſt conſtraineth vs,

15 Becauſe we thus iudge, that if one be dead for all, then were all dead, & he died for all, that they which liue, ſhould not henceforth liue vnto themſelues, but vnto him which died for them, and roſe againe.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the fleſh, yea though we had known Chriſt after the fleſh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Chriſt, *let him be* a new creature *Old things are paſſed away: behold all things are become new. *Iſa.43.19*

18 And all things *are* of God, which hath reconciled vs vnto himſelfe by Ieſus Chriſt, and hath giuen vnto vs the miniſtery of reconciliation. *reuc.21.5*

19 For God was in Chriſt, and reconciled the world to himſelfe, not imputing their ſinnes vnto them, and hath committed to vs the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then are we ambaſſadours for Chriſt: as though God did beſech *you* through vs, we pray you in Chriſts ſtead, that yee be reconciled to God.

21 For hee hath made him *to bee* ſinne for vs, which knew no ſinne, that we ſhould be made the righteouſnes of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 He exhorteth them to leaſt their liues as it becommeth Chriſtians, 5 neither to be diſmayed in tribulation, 9 not puffed vp with glory, 14 to auoide all vncleanneſſe, 16 conſidering that they are the temples of the liuing God.

SO we therfore as workers together beſeech *you*, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine.

2 For hee ſaith, * I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in *Iſa.49.8.*

the day of ſaluation haue I ſuccoured thee: behold now the accepted time, behold now the day of ſaluation.

3 We giue no occaſion of offence in any thing, that *our* miniſtery ſhou'd not be reprehended.

1.Cor.4.1 4 But in all things we approue our ſelues as *the miniſters of God in much patience, in afflictions, in neceſsities, in diſtreſſes,

5 In ſtripes, in priſons, in tumults, in labours,

6 By watchings, by faſtings, by purity, by knowledge, by long ſuffering, by kindneſſe, by the holy Ghoſt, by loue vnfained,

7 By the word of trueth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteouſneſſe on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour, and diſhonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceiuers, and *yet* true:

9 As vnknowen, and *yet* knowen, as dying, and behold, wee liue: as chaſtened, and *yet* not killed:

10 As ſorrowing, and *yet* alwayes reioycing: as poore, and *yet* make many rich: as hauing nothing, and *yet* poſſeſsing all things.

11 O Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our heart is made large.

12 Ye are not kept ſtrait in vs, but yee are kept ſtraite in your owne bowels.

13 Now for the ſame recompenſe, I ſpeake as to *my* children, Be you alſo enlarged.

Eccleſ.13 18. 14 Bee not vnequally yoked with the infidels: for what *fellowſh'p hath righteouſnes with vnrighteouſnes? and what communion hath light with darkeneſſe?

15 And what concord hath Chriſt with Belial? or what part hath the beleeuer with the infidell?

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idoles?

1.Cor.3. 16.and 6. 19. for yee are the Temple of the liuing God: as God hath ſaid, *I will dwel among them, and walke there: and I wil be their God, and they ſhall be my people.

Leuit.26. 11. Iſa.52.11 17 *Wherefore come out from among them, and ſeparate your ſelues, ſaith the Lord, and touch none vncleane thing, and I will receiue you.

Ier.31.1. 18 *And I will bee a Father vnto you, and yee ſhall bee my ſonnes and daughters, ſayth the Lord Almighty.

CHAP. VII.

1 Leſtly ouermuch vrging them hee ſhou'd diſtreay their tender minds, 2 he proueth that all that hee ſaid, 4 proceeded of the great good will he bare vnto them: 8 And therefore they ſhould not be offended, that hee made them ſory, 10 and brought them to repentance not to be repented of.

Seeing

SEeing then wee haue theſe promiſes, dearely beloued, let vs cleanſe our ſelues from all filthineſſe of the fleſh and ſpirit, and finiſh *our* ſanctification in the feare of God.

2 Receiue vs: we haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrupted no man: we haue defrauded no man.

3 I ſpeake it not to *your* condemnation: for I haue ſayd before, that ye are in our hearts to die and liue together.

4 I vſe great boldneſſe of ſpeach toward you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am filled with comfort, and am exceeding ioyous in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our fleſh had no reſt, but wee were troubled on euery ſide, fightings without, and terrours within.

6 But God, that comforteth the abiect, comforted vs at the comming of Titus:

7 And not by his comming onely, but alſo by the conſolation, wherewith hee was comforted of you, when hee tolde vs your great deſire, your mourning, your feruent mind to me ward, ſo that I reioyced much more.

8 For though I made you ſory with a letter, I repent not, though I did repent: for I perceiue that the ſame Epiſtle made you ſory, though *it were* but for a ſeaſon.

9 I now reioyce, not ỹ ye were ſory, but that ye ſorowed to repentance: for ye ſorowed godly ſo ỹ in nothing ye were hurt by vs.

10 For godly ſorrow cauſeth repentance vnto ſaluation, not to be repented of: but the worldly ſorow cauſeth death.

11 For behold, this thing that ye haue beene godly ſory, what great care it hath wrought in you: yea, what clearing of your ſelues: yea, *what* indignation: yea, *what* feare: yea, *how* great deſire: yea, *what* a zeale: yea, *what* reuenge: in all things yee haue ſhewed your ſelues, that ye are pure in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for his cauſe that had done the wrong, neither for his cauſe that had the iniury, but that our care toward you in the ſight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted, becauſe ye were comforted: but rather we reioyced much more for the ioy of Titus, becauſe his ſpirit was refreſhed by you all.

14 For if that I haue boaſted any thing to him of you, I haue not beene aſhamed: but as I haue ſpoken vnto you all things in truth, euen ſo our boaſting vnto Titus was true.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, when hee remembreth the obedience of you all, *and* how with feare and trembling ye receiued him.

16 I reioyce *therefore* that I may put my confidence *in* you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Hee exhorteth them, by the example of the Macedonians, 9 and also euen of Christ himselfe, 14 to be liberall towards the Saints. 16 For which purpose, he sheweth that Titus 18 and another brother came vnto them.

WE do you also to wit, brethren, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia,

2 Because in great triall of affliction their ioy abounded, and their most extreme pouertie abounded vnto their rich liberalitie.

3 For to *their* power (I beare record) yea, and beyond their power they were willing,

4 And prayed vs with great instance that we would receiue the grace and fellowship of the ministring which is toward the Saints.

5 And *this they did*, not as we looked for: but gaue their owne selues, first to the Lord, and *after* vnto vs by the will of God,

6 That we should exhort Titus, that as he had begun, so hee would also accomplish the same grace among you also.

7 Therefore as ye abound in euery thing, in faith, and word, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue toward vs, *euen so see* that ye abound in this grace also.

8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the diligence of others: therefore proone I the naturalnesse of your loue.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that he being rich, for your sakes became poore, that ye through his pouerty might be made rich.

10 And I shew *my* mind herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begun not to doe onely, but also to will, a yeere agoe.

11 Now therefore performe to doe it also, that as *there was* a readinesse to will, euen so yee may performe it of that which yee haue.

12 For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 Neither *is it* that other men should be eased, and you grieued: but vpon *like* condition, at this time your abundance *supplieth* their lacke:

14 That also their abundance may be for your lacke, that there may be equalitie:

Exod. 16. 18. 15 As it is written, * He that *gathered* much, had nothing ouer: and he that *gathered* little, had not the lesse.

16 And thankes *be* vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you,

17 Be-

17 Because he accepted the exhortation, yea, he was so careful, that of his owne accord he went vnto you.

18 And we haue sent also with him the brother, whose praise *is* in the Gospel throughout all the Churches.

19 (And not so onely, but is also chosen of the Churches to bee a fellow in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glory of the same Lorde, and *declaration* of your prompt minde)

20 Auoiding this, that no man should blame vs in this abundance that is ministred by vs,

21 * Prouiding for honest things, not onely before the Lord, but also before men. *Rom.* 12. 17.

22 And we haue sent with them our brother, whom we haue oft times proued to be diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, for the great confidence which *I haue* in you.

23 Whether *any doe enquire* of Titus *he is* my fellow and helper to you ward, or of our brethren, they are messengers of the Churches, *and* the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew toward them, and before the Churches the proofe of your loue, and of the reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Why, albeit hee thinke well of their ready wils,* 3 *yet earnestly exhorteth them,* 4 *he yeeldeth a reason:* 6 *He compareth almes to seede sowing,* 10 *which God doth repay with great gaines.*

FOr as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for me to write vnto you.

2 For I know your readinesse of minde, whereof I boast my selfe of you vnto them of Macedonia, *and say*, that Achaia was prepared a yeere agoe, and your zeale hath prouoked many.

3 Now I haue sent the brethren, lest our reioycing ouer you should bee in vaine in this behalfe, that yee (as I haue said) bee ready:

4 Lest if they of Macedonia come with mee, and find you vnprepared, we (that may not say, you) should bee ashamed in this my constant boasting.

5 Wherefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren to come before vnto you, and to finish your beneuolence appointed afore that it might bee ready, *and come* as of beneuolence, and not as of niggardlinesse.

6 This yet *remember*, that hee which soweth sparingly, shall reape also sparingly, and he that soweth liberally, shall reape also liberally. *Rom.* 12. 8

7 As euery man wisheth in his heart, *so let him giue*, not * grudgingly, or of necessitie: * for God loueth a cheerefull giuer. *Eccl.* 35. 10.

8 And God is able to make all grace to abound toward you, that ye alwaies hauing all sufficiencie in all things, may abound in euery good worke,

Psalm. 112.9. 9 (*As it is written, He hath sparsed abroad and hath giuen to the poore: his beneuolence remaineth for euer.

10 Also he that findeth seede to the sower, minister likewise bread for foode, and multiply your seede, and increase the fruits of your beneuolence)

11 That on all parts ye may bee made rich vnto all liberalitie, which causeth through vs thankesgiuing vnto God.

12 For the ministration of this seruice not onely supplieth the necessities of the Saints, but also abundantly causeth many to giue thanks to God.

13 (Which by the experience of this ministration praise God for your voluntary submission to the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them, and to all men)

14 And in their prayer for you, to long after you greatly, for the abundant grace of God in you.

15 Thankes therefore *be* vnto God for his vnspeakeable gift.

CHAP. X.

2 Hee sheweth with what confidence, 4 with what weapons 6 and with what reuenge he is armed against the cauillations of the wicked, 7 and that, when he is present, his deedes haue no lesse power, 21 then his words haue force, when he is absent.

NOw I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meekenesse, and gentlenesse of Christ, which when I am present among you, *am* base, but am bold toward you being absent:

2 And *this* I require you, that I neede not to be bold when I am present, with that same confidence, wherewith I thinke to bee bold against some, which esteeme vs as though we walked according to the flesh.

3 Neuertheless, though we walke in the flesh, yet we doe not warre after the flesh.

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God, to cast downe holds)

5 Casting downe the imaginations, and euery high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie, euery thought to the obedience of Christ,

6 And hauing ready the vengeance against all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Looke ye on things after the appearance? If any man trust in himselfe that he is Christs, let him consider this againe of himselfe, that as he *is* Christs, euen so *are* we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authoritie,

tie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction, I should haue no shame.

9 *Thus I say* that I may not seeme as *it were* to feare you with letters.

10 For the letters saith hee, are sore and strong, but his bodily presence is weake, and his speach is of no value.

11 Let such one thinke this, that such as wee are in word by letters, when we are absent, such *will we bee* also indeede, when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selues of the number, or to compare our selues to them, which praise themselues: but they vnderstand not that they measure themselues with themselues, & compare themselues with themselues.

13 But we will not reioyce of things, which are not within *our* measure,* but according to the measure of the line, whereof God hath distributed vnto vs a measure to attaine euen vnto you. *Eph.4.7.*

14 For we stretch not our selues beyond *our* measure as though we had not attained vnto you: for euen to you also haue we come *in preaching* the Gospel of Christ,

15 Not boasting of things which are without *our* measure: *that is*, of other mens labours: and wee hope when your faith shal increase, to bee magnified by you, according to our line abundantly,

15 And to preach the Gospel in those regions which *are* beyond you: not to reioyce in an other mans line, *that is*, in the things that are prepared already.

17 * But let him that reioyceth, reioyce in the Lord. *Iere.9.24*

18 For he that praiseth himselfe, is not allowed, but he whom the Lord praiseth. *1.cor.1.31*

CHAP. XI.

2 He testifieth that for the great loues sake hee beareth to the Corinthians, he is compelled 5 to vtter his own praises: 9 and that he bestowed his labour on them, without any reward, 13 that the false apostles should not surpasse him in any thing, 22 whom hee farre excelleth in those things which are praise worthy in deede.

WOuld to God ye could suffer a little my foolishnesse, and in deede, ye suffer me.

2 For I am ielous ouer you, with godly iealousie: for I haue prepared you for one husband, to present you *as* a pure virgine to Christ.

3 But I feare least as the * serpent beguiled Eue through his subtilrie, so your mindes should bee corrupt from the simplicitie that is in Christ. *Gen.3.4.*

4 For if he that commeth, preacheth another Iesus whom we

haue not preached: or if ye receiue another spirit whom yee haue not receiued: either another Gospel which ye haue not receiued, ye might well haue suffered *him*.

5 Verely I suppose that I was not inferiour to the very chiefe Apostles.

6 And though *I be* rude in speaking, yet *I am* not *so* in knowledge, but among you we haue been made manifest to the vtmost in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence because I abased my selfe, that ye might be exalted, and because I preached vnto you the Gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages *of them* to doe you seruice.

Chap. 12. 13. 9 And when I was present with you, and had neede, * I was not slothfull to the hinderance of any man, for that which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, supplied, and in all things I kept and will keepe my selfe, that I should not be grieuous to you.

10 The trueth of Christ is in mee, that this reioycing shall not be shut vp against me in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? because I loue you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I do, that will I doe, that I may cut away occasion from them which desire occasion, that they might bee found like vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce.

13 For such false apostles are deceitful workers, and transforme themselues into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no maruell: for Satan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his ministers transforme themselues, as though *they were* the ministers of righteousnesse, whose end shall be according their workes.

16 I say againe, let no man thinke, that I am foolish, or els take me euen as a foole, that I also may boast my selfe a little.

17 That I speake, I speake it not after the Lord: but *as it were* foolishly, in this *my* great boasting.

18 Seeing that many reioyce after the flesh, I will reioyce also.

19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, because that ye are wise.

20 For ye suffer, euen if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure *you*, if a man take *your goods*, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake as concerning the reproch: as though that we had been weake: but wherein any man is bold (I speake foolishly) I am bold also.

22 They

CHAP. XII.

22 They are Hebrewes, * so am I: they are Israelites, so am I: they are the seede of Abraham, so am I: *Phil.* 3.3.

23 They are the ministers of Christ (I speake as a foole) I am more: in labours more aboundant: in stripes aboue measure: in prison more plenteously: in death oft.

24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I fourtie *stripes* saue one.

25 I was thrise * beaten with rods: I was * one stoned: I suffered thrise * shipwracke: night and day haue I bene in the deep sea. *Actes* 16. 33. *Actes* 14. 19.

26 In iourneying *I was* often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Gentiles, in perils in the citie, in perils in wildernesse, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren, *Actes* 27. 14.

27 In wearinesse, and painefulnesse, in watching often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednesse.

28 Beside the things which are outward, I am combred dayly, *and haue* the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offeended, and I burne not?

30 If must needes reioyce, I will reioyce of mine infirmities.

31 The God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In * Damascus the gouernour of the people vnder King Aretas, laid watch in the citie of the Damascenes, and would haue caught me. *Act.* 9. 24

33 But at a windome was I let downe in a basket through the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Hee doeth euen vnwillingly make rehearsall* 2 *of the heauenly visions,* 4 *that were reueiled vnto him:* 6 *for which though he might in deede glory, yet he will not,* 10 *being priuie of his owne infirmities:* 11 *but they driue him to this kind of folly,* 20 *in that they giue eare to certaine vaine glorious persons, who draw them from Christ.*

IT is not expedient for me no doubt to reioyce: for I will come to visions and reuelations of the Lord.

2 I know a man in Christ aboue foureteene yeeres agone, (whether *he were* in the body, I cannot tell, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth) which was taken vp into the third heauen.

3 And I know such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth.)

4 How that hee was taken vp into Paradise, and heard words

words which cannot bee spoken, which are not possible for man to vtter.

5 Of such a man will I reioyce: of my selfe will I not reioyce, except it be of mine infirmities.

6 For though I would reioyce, I should not bee a foole, for I will say the trueth: but I refraine, least any man should thinke of me aboue that he seeth in me, or that he heareth of me.

7 And least I should bee exalted out of measure through the abundance of reuelations, there was giuen vnto me a prick in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, because I should not be exalted out of measure.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrise, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power is made perfect through weakenesse. Very gladly therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwell in me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christs sake, for when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I was a foole to boast my selfe: ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue been commended of you: for in nothing was I inferiour vnto the very chiefe Apostles, though I be nothing.

12 The signes of an Apostle were wrought among you with all patience, with signes and wonders, and great workes.

13 For what is it, wherein ye were inferiours vnto other Churches, * except that I haue not been slothfull to your hindrance? forgiue me this wrong. *Gal.2.11.9.*

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come vnto you, and yet will I not bee slothfull to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the Fathers, but the Fathers for the children.

15 And I will most gladly bestow, and will bee bestowed for your soules: though the more I loue you, the lesse I am loued.

16 But be it that I charged you not: yet, forasmuch as I was crafty, I tooke you with guile.

17 Did I pill you by any of them whom I sent vnto you?

18 I haue desired Titus, and with him I haue sent a brother: did Titus pill you of any thing? walked we not in the same spirit? *walked we* not in the same steppes?

19 Againe, thinke ye that we excuse our selues vnto you? we speake before God in Christ. But *we doe* all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying.

20 For I feare, lest when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would:

I would: and that I shalbe found vnto you such as ye would not, and lest *there be* strife, envying, wrath, contentions, backbitings, whisperings swellings, *and* discord.

21 *I feare* lest when I come againe, my God abase me among you, and I shal bewaile many of them which haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleanesse, and fornication, and wantonnesse, which they haue committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Comming the third time,* 2 *he denounceth the sharper vengeance towards them,* 5 *who haue a perfect triall of the power of Christ in his Apostles.* 9 *At length he prayeth for their repentance,* 11 *and wisheth them prosperity.*

LOe, this *is* the third time that I come vnto you. * In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall euery word stand. *Deut.19. 15. mat. 18. 16. ioh. 8. 17. heb. 10.28*

2 I told you before, and tel you before: as though I had been present the second time, so write I now being absent to them which heretofore haue sinned, and to all others, that if I come again, I will not spare,

3 Seeing that yee seeke experience of Christ, that speaketh in me, which toward you is not weake, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified concerning *his* infirmitie, yet liueth he through the power of God. And we no doubt are weake in him, but we shall liue with him, through the power of God toward you.

5 * Proue your selues whether yee are in the faith: examine your selues: know ye not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates? *1. Cor. 11. 28.*

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray vnto God that yee do none euill, not that wee should seeme approued, but that ye should doe that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we cannot *doe* any thing against the trueth, but for the trueth.

9 For we are glad when we are weake, and that ye are strong: this also we wish for, *euen* your perfection.

10 Therfore write I these things being absent, least when I am present I should vse sharpnesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me, to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally brethren, farewell: be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one mind: liue in peace, and the God of loue & peace shall be with you.

12 Greete one another with an * holy kisse. All the Saints salute you. *1. Cor. 16. 20.*

13 The

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you all, Amen.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a city in Macedonia, *and sent* by Titus and Lucas.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF THE APOstle Paul to the Galatians.

CHAP. I.

1 *Straight after the salutation.* 6 *Hee reprehendeth the Galatians for reuolting* 9 *from his Gospell,* 13 *which hee receiued from God* 17 *before he had communicated with any of the Apostles.*

Titus 1.3. PAVL an Apostle (not of men neither by man,* but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father which hath raised him from the dead)

2 And all the brethren which are with mee, vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace *bee* with you, and peace from God the Father, and *from* our Lord Iesus Christ,

*Luk.*1.74. 4 Which gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that hee might deliuer vs* from this present euill world, according to the will of God euen our Father,

5 To whom *be* glory for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I maruaile that ye are so soone remoued away vnto another Gospel from him that hath called you in the grace of Christ,

7 Which is not another *Gospel*, saue that there be some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the Gospel of Christ.

8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preach vnto you otherwise, then that which wee haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed.

9 As wee said before, so say I now againe, If any man preach vnto you otherwise, then that yee haue receiued, let him bee accursed.

10 For now preach I mans *doctrine*, or Gods? or goe I about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ.

*1.Cor.*15.1 11 * Now I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, was not after man.

12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For

13 For yee haue heard of my conuersation in times past, in the Iewish religion, how that *I persecuted the Church of God extremely, and wasted it, *Act. 9. 1.*

14 And profited in the Iewish religion aboue many of my companions of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the traditions of my Fathers.

15 But when it pleased God (which had separated mee from my mothers wombe, and called *me* his grace)

16 To reueile his sonne in me, that I should preach him *among the Gentiles, immediatly I cõmunicated not with flesh and blood: *Eph. 3. 8.*

17 Neither came I againe to Hierusalem to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe into Damascus.

18 Then after three yeere s I came again to Hierusalem to visite Peter, and abode with him fifteene dayes.

19 And none other of the Apostles saw I, saue Iames the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write vnto you, behold, *I witnesse* before God, that I lie not.

21 After that, I went into the coasts of Syria, and Cilicia: for I was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ,

22 But they had heard onely *some say*, He which persecuted vs in time past, now preacheth the faith which before he destroyed.

23 And they glorified God for me.

CHAP. II.

1 That the Apostles did nothing disagree from his Gospel, 3 hee declareth by the example of Titus being vncircumcised, 11 and also by his withstanding the same against Peters dissimulation: 17 And so he passeth to the handling of our free iustification by Christ, &c.

THen fourtene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Hierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke with me Titus also.

2 And I went vp by reuelation, and declared vnto them that Gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but particulary to them that were the chiefe, least by any meanes I should runne, or had runne in vaine:

3 But neither yet Titus which was with me, though he were a Grecian, was compelled to be circumcised,

4 To wit for the false brethren which were craftily sent in, and crept in priuily to spie out our liberty, which wee haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom we gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that the trueth of the Gospel might continue with you.

6 But

6 But by them which seemed to bee great, *I was not taught*, (whatsoeuer they were in time passed, I am nothing the better: *Deut. 10. 17. 2 chr. 19. 7. iob 34. 19. act. 10. 34 rom. 2. 11 eph. 6. 9. col. 3. 25. 1 pet. 1. 17.* * God accepteth no mans person) for they that are the chiefe, did adde nothing to me *aboue that I had*.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospel ouer the vncircumcision was committed vnto mee, as *the Gospel* ouer the Circumcision, was vnto Peter:

8 (For he that was mighty by Peter in the Apostleship ouer the circumcision, was also mighty by me toward the Gentiles)

9 And when Iames and Cephas, and Iohn, knewe of the grace that was giuen vnto mee, which are counted to be pillars, they gaue to mee and to Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we *should preach* vnto the Gentiles, and they vnto the Circumcision,

10 *Warning* onely that we should remember the poore, which thing also I was diligent to doe.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withstood him to his face: for he was to be condemned.

12 For before that certaine came to Iames, hee ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes played the hypocrites likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas was led away with them by that their hypocrisie.

14 But when I sawe, that they went not the right way to the trueth of the Gospel, I sayd vnto Peter before all mē, If thou being a Iew, liuest as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes?

15 We *which are* Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Know that a man is not iustified by the workes of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen wee, *I say*, haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Law, because that by the workes of the Law, no flesh shall be iustified.

Rom. 3. 19. 17 * If then while we seeke to bee made righteous by Christ, we our selues are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I build againe the things that haue destroyed, I make my selfe a trespasser.

19 For I through the Law am dead to the Lawe, that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ, but I liue, *yet* not I any more, but Christ liueth in me; and in that that I now liue in the flesh, I liue

liue by the faith in the Sonne of God, who hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me.

21 I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteousnesse *be* by the Law, then Christ died without a cause.

CHAP III.

1 He rebuketh them for suffering themselues to be drawen from the grace of free iustification in Christ, most liuely set out vnto them. 6 Hee bringeth in Abrahams example, 10 declaring the effect, 21 and causes of the giuing of the Law.

O Foolish Galatiãs, who hath bewitched you, that yee should not obey the trueth, to whom Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, *and* among you crucified?

2 This onely would I learne of you, Receiued yee the Spirit by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith *preached*?

3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue begun in the Spirit, yee would now be made perfect by the flesh?

4 Haue ye suffered so many things, in vaine? If so be it be euen in vaine.

5 Hee therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* through the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith *preached*?

6 *Yea rather* as Abraham beleeued God, and it was *imputed to him for righteousnesse.* *Gen.15.6 rom.4.3. iam.2.23.*

7 Know yee therfore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that God would iustifie the Gentiles through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto Abraham, *saying*, * In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed. *Gen.12.3*

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham. *act.3.25.*

10 For as many as are of the workes of the Law, are vnder the curse: for it is written,* Cursed is euery man that continueth not in all things, which are written in the booke of the Lawe, to doe them. *Deut.27.26.*

11 And that no man is iustified by the Law in the sight of God, it is euident: *for the iust shall liue by faith. *Habak.2.4 rom.1.17*

12 And the Law is not of faith: but * the man that shall doe those things, shall liue in them. *heb.10.38*

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Law, being made a curse for vs (for it is written, * Cursed is euery one that hangeth on tree) *Leui.18.5 Deut.21.23.*

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Christ Iesus, that wee might receiue the promise of the spirit through faith.

15 Bre-

Heb.9.17 15 Brethren, I speake as men doe: *Though it bee but a mans couenant, when it is confirmed, *yet* no man doeth abrogate it, or addeth any thing thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seede, were the promises made. He saith not, And to the seedes, as *speaking* of many: but, And to thy seede, as of one, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the couenant that was confirmed afore of God in respect of Christ, the Lawe which was foure hundreth and thirtie yeeres after, cannot disanull, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance *bee* of the Law, *it is* no more by the promise, but God gaue it freely vnto Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then *serueth* the Law? it was added because of the transgressions, till the seede came vnto the which the promise was made: and it was ordeined by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not *a Mediatour* of one: but God is one.

21 *Is* the Law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had beene a Law giuen which could haue giuen life, surely righteousnesse should haue bene by the Law.

Rom.3.9. 22 But the Scripture hath *concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ should be giuen to them that beleeue.

23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder the Law, *as vnder* a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith, which should afterward be reuealed.

24 Wherefore the Law was our Schoolemaster *to bring vs* to Christ, that we might be made righteous by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer vnder a schoolemaster.

26 For ye are all the sonnes of God by faith in Christ Iesus:

27 For all yee that are baptized in Christ, haue put on Christ.

28 There is neither Iewe nor Grecian: there is neither bond nor free: there is neither male or female: for yee are all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if *ye be* Christs, then are ye Abrahams seede, and heires by promise.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Being deliuered from the bondage of the Law, 4 by Christs coming, who is the ende thereof, 9 it is very absurd to slide backe to beggerly ceremonies: 13 Hee calleth them againe therefore to the puritie of the doctrine of the Gospel, 21 confirming his discourse with a fine allegorie.*

Then

THen I say, that the heire, as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of all.

2 But is vnder tutors and gouernours, vntill the time appointed of the father.

3 Euen so, we when we were children, were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the world.

4 But when the fulnesse of time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, *and* made vnder the Law.

5 That he might redeeme them which were vnder the Lawe, that we might receiue the adoption of the sonnes. *Rom.8. 15.*

6 And because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, which crieth, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: now if *thou be* a sonne, *thou art* also the heire of God through Christ.

8 But euen then when ye knew not God, yee did seruice vnto them, which by nature are not gods:

9 But now seeing yee know God, yea, rather are knowen of God, how turne ye againe vnto impotent and beggerly rudiments, whereunto *as* from the beginning, yee will be in bondage againe?

10 Ye obserue dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeeres.

11 I am in feare of you, least I haue bestowed on you labour in vaine.

12 Be yee as I: for I am euen as you: brethren, I beseech you: ye haue not hurt me at all.

13 And ye know, how through infirmitie of the flesh I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And the triall of me which was in my flesh ye despised not, neither abhorred: but ye receiued me as an Angel of God, *yea*, as Christ Iesus.

15 What was then your felicitie? for I beare you record, that if it had beene possible, yee would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them vnto mee.

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the truth?

17 They are iealous ouer you amisse: yea, they would exclude you, that ye should altogether loue them.

18 But it is a good thing to loue earnestly alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you,

19 My little children, of whom I trauell in birth againe, vntill Christ be formed in you.

20 And I would I were with you now, that I might change my voice: for I am in doubt of you.

21 Tell mee, Yee that will be vnder the Law, doe yee not heare the Law?

Gen.16. 15. 22 For it is written that Abraham had two sonnes, * one by a seruant, and * one by a free woman.

Ceu.21.1 23 But he which was of the seruant, was borne after the flesh: and he which was of the free woman, *was borne* by promise.

24 By the which things another thing *is* meant: for these *mothers* are the two Testaments, the one which is Agar of mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage,

25 (For Agar or Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and it answereth to Hierusalem which now is) and she is in bondage with her children.

26 But Hierusalem, which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs all.

Isa. 54.1. 27 For it is written,* Reioice thou barren that beareſt no children: breake forth, and cry, thou that trauaileſt not: for the deſolate hath many mo children then she which hath an husband.

Rom.8.9. 28 *Therefore brethren, we are after the maner of Isaac, children of the promise.

29 But as then he that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that *was borne* after the spirit, euen so *it is* now.

Gen.21. 10. 30 But what saith the Scripture? * Put out the seruant and her sonne: for the sonne of the seruant shal not be heire with the sonne of the free woman.

31 Then brethren, we are not children of the seruant, but of the free woman.

CHAP. V.

1 *Hauing declared that wee came of the free woman, hee sheweth the price of that freedome,* 13 *and how wee should vse the same,* 16 *that we may obey the spirit,* 19 *and resist the flesh.*

STand fast therfore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and bee not entangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

Act.15.1 2 *Beholde, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye be circumciſed, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testifie againe to euery man, which is circumciſed, that he is bound to keepe the whole Law.

1.Cor.1. 23. 4 Ye are * abolished from Christ: whosoeuer are iuſtified by the Law, ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteouſnes through faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumciſion auaileth any thing, neither vncircumciſion, but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Yee did runne well: who did let you, that yee did not obey the truth?

8 *It is* not the perſwasion of him that calleth you.

9 * A little leauen doth leauen the whole lumpe. 1.Cor.5.6

10 I haue truſt in you through the Lord, that yee will bee none otherwiſe minded: but he that troubleth you, ſhall beare *his* condemnation whoſoeuer he be.

11 And brethren, if I yet preach circumciſion, why doe I yet ſuffer perſecution? Then is the ſlander of the croſſe abolished.

12 Would to God they were euen cut off, which doe diſquiet you.

13 For brethren, yee haue been called vnto libertie: onely vſe not *your* libertie as an occaſion vnto the fleſh, but by loue ſerue one another.

14 For all the Law is fulfilled in one word, which is this, *Thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe. Leu.19. 18.mat. 22.37. mar.12. 31 rom. 13.9. gal. 5.8.

15 If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heed leſt ye be conſumed one of another.

16 Then I ſay, *Walke in the Spirit, and ye ſhall not fulfill the luſtes of the fleſh. Rom.13. 14.1.pet. 2.11.

17 For the fleſh luſteth againſt the Spirit, and the Spirit againſt the fleſh: and theſe are contrary one to another, ſo that ye cannot doe the ſame things that ye would.

18 And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder the Law.

19 Moreouer the workes of the fleſh are manifeſt, which are adulterie, fornication, vncleanneſſe, wantonneſſe,

20 Idolatrie, witchcraft hatred, debate, emulations, wrath, contentions, ſeditions, hereſies.

21 Enuie, murthers, drunkennes, gluttonie and ſuch like, whereof I tell you before, as I alſo haue tolde you before, that they which doe ſuch things, ſhall not inherite the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is loue, ioy, peace, long ſuffering, gentlenеſſe, goodneſſe, faith,

23 Meekeneſſe temperance: againſt ſuch there is no Law.

24 For they that are Chriſtes, haue crucified the fleſh with the affections and the luſtes.

25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs alſo walke in the Spirit.

26 Let vs not be deſirous of vaine glory, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 Now he entreateth particulary of charitie toward ſuch as offend, 6 toward the miniſters of the word, 10 and thoſe that are of the houſhold of faith. 12 Not like vnto ſuch who haue a counterfait zeale of the Law, 13 glorying in the mangling of the fleſh, 14 and not in the croſſe of Chriſt.

BRethren, if a man be ſuddenly taken in any offence, yee which are ſpirituall, reſtore ſuch one with the ſpirit of meekeneſſe,

considering thy selfe, lest thou also bee tempted.

2 Beare yee one anothers burden, and so fulfill the Lawe of Christ.

3 For if any man seeme to himselfe, that he is somewhat, when he is nothing, he deceiueth himselfe in his imagination.

4 But let euery man proue his owne worke: and then shall he haue reioycing in himselfe onely, and not in another.

1.Cor.3.8 5 *For euery man shall beare his owne burden.

6 Let him that is taught in the worde, make him that hath

1.Cor.9.7 taught him, partaker of all *his* *goods.

7 Bee not deceiued: God is not mocked: for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.

8 For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life euerlasting.

2.Thes.3.13. 9 *Let vs not therefore bee weary of well doing: for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not.

10 While wee haue therefore time, let vs doe good vnto all men, but specially vnto them, which are of the housholde of faith.

11 ¶ Yee see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constraine you to be circumcised, onely because they would not suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For they themselues which are circumcised, keepe not the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might reioyce in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should reioyce, but in the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, wherby the world is crucified vnto mee, and I vnto the world.

15 For in Iesus Christ circumcision neither auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision but a new creature.

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace *shall bee* vpon them, and mercie, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From hencefoorth let no man put mee to businesse: for I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *bee* with your spirit, Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

¶ THE

¶ THE EPISTLE OF Paul to the Ephesians.

CHAP. I.

1 *After the salutation, 4 he entreateth of the free election of God, 5 and adoption, 7. 13 from whence mans salvation floweth, as from the true and natural fountaine: and because so high a mysterie cannot be understood, 16 he prayeth that the full 20 knowledge of Christ may by God be revealed vnto the Ephesians.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, to the * Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus: *1.Cor.1.2*

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 *Blessed *be* God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessing in heauenly things in Christ, *1.Cor.1.3* *1.Pet.1.3.*

4 As hee hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in loue:

5 Who hath predestinate vs, to bee adopted through Iesus Christ in himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will,

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherewith he hath made vs freely accepted in *his* beloued,

7 By whom we haue redemption through his blood, *euen* the forgiuenesse of sinnes according to his rich grace:

8 Wherby he hath been abundant toward vs in all wisdome and vnderstanding,

9 And hath opened vnto vs the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in him,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of the times, hee might gather together in one all things, both which are in heauen, and which are in earth, *euen* in Christ:

11 In whom also we are chosen when we were predestinate according to the purpose of him which worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will,

12 That we, which first trusted in Christ, should be vnto the praise of his glory:

13 In whom also ye *haue trusted*, after that ye heard the word of trueth, *euen* the Gospel of your saluation wherein also after that you beleeued, ye were sealed with the holy Spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for the redemption of that liberty purchased vnto the praise of his glorie.

15 Therefore also after that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in the Lord Iesus, and loue toward all the Saints,

16 I cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ, that Father of glory, might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisedome, and reuelation through the knowledging of him,

18 That the eyes of your vnderstanding may be lightned, that ye may know what the hope is of his calling, and what the riches of his glorious inheritance *is* in the Saints,

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power toward vs, which beleeue, * according to the working of his mightie power.

Chap.3.7. col.2.12.

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his right hand in the heauenly *places*,

21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power, and might, and dominion, and euery Name that is named, not in this world only, but also in that that is to come,

22 And hath made all things subiect vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things *to be* the head to the Church,

23 Which is his body, euen the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all things.

CHAP. II.

1 The better to set out the grace of Christ, hee vseth a comparison, calling them to minde, 5 that they were altogether castawayes and aliants: 8 That they are saued by grace, 13 and brought neere 16 by reconciliation through Christ, 17 published by the Gospel.

Col.2.13. AND * you *hath hee quickened*, that were dead in trespasses and sinnes,

2 Wherein in times past yee walked, according to the course of this world, *and* after the prince that ruleth in the ayre, *euen* the spirit, that now worketh in the children of disobedience.

3 Among whom we also had our conuersation in time past, in the lusts of our flesh, in fulfilling the will of the flesh, and of the mind, and were by nature the children of wrath, as well as others.

4 But God which is rich in mercie, through his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes, hath quickned vs together in Christ, *by whose* grace ye are saued,

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in the heauenly *places* in Christ Iesus,

7 That hee might shew in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace, through his kindnes toward vs in Christ Iesus.

8 For

8 For by grace ye are saued through faith, and that not of your
selues: *it is* the gift of God,
9 Not of workes, lest any man should boast himselfe.
10 For wee are his workemanship created in Christ Iesus vnto
good workes, which God hath ordained, that wee should walke
in them.
11 Wherefore remember, that ye being in times past Gentiles
in the flesh, *and* called vncircumcision of them, which are called
circumcision in the flesh, made with hands,
12 That ye were, *I say*, at that time without Christ, and were
aliants from the Common wealth of Israel, and were *strangers
from the couenants of promise, and had no hope, and *were* with-
out God in the world. *Rom. 9. 4.*
13 But now in Christ Iesus, yee which once were farre off, are
made neere by the blood of Christ.
14 For he is our peace, which hath made of both one, and hath
broken the stop of the partition wall,
15 *In abrogating through his flesh the hatred, *that is*, the Law *Col. 2. 14.*
of commandements *which standeth* in ordinances, for to make of
twaine, one new man in himselfe, *so* making peace,
16 And that hee might reconcile both vnto God in one body
by *his* crosse, and slay hatred thereby,
17 And came and preached peace to you which were afarre off,
and to them that were neere.
18 For through him we both haue an entrance vnto the Father
by one Spirit.
19 Now therefore, ye are no more strangers and forreiners: but
citizens with the Saints and of the houshold of God,
20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Pro-
phets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner stone,
21 In whom all the building coupled together groweth vnto
an holy Temple in the Lord,
22 In whom ye also are built together, to bee the habitation of
God by the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

*1 Hee declareth that therefore hee suffered many things of the
Iewes, 3 because he preached the mysterie touching the saluation
of the Gentiles, 8 at Gods commandement. 13 After, hee de-
sireth the Ephesians not to faint for his afflictions: 14 And for
this cause hee prayeth vnto God, 18 that they may vnderstand
the great loue of Christ.*

FOr this cause, I Paul *am* the prisoner of Iesus Christ for you
Gentiles,

2 If yee haue heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to you ward,

3 *That is*, that *God* by reuelation hath shewed this mystery vnto me (as I wrote aboue in few words,

4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may know mine vnderstanding in the mystery of Christ)

5 Which in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it is now reuealed vnto his holy Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles should be inheriters also, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospel.

7 Whereof I am made a minister by the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto mee through the effectuall working of his power

8 Euen vnto mee the least of all Saints is this grace giuen, that I should preach among the Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ,

9 And to make cleare vnto all men what the fellowship of the mystery is, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who hath created all things by Iesus Christ,

10 To the intent, that now vnto principalities and powers in heauenly *places*, might be knowen by the Church the manifold wisedome of God,

11 According to the eternall purpose, which hee wrought in Christ Iesus our Lord:

12 By whom we haue boldnesse and entrance with confidence by faith in him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for your sakes, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 (Of whom is named the whole family in heauen & in earth)

16 That he might grant you according to the riches of his glory, that ye may be strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith:

18 That ye, being rooted and grounded in loue, may bee able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, and length and depth and height:

19 And to know the loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye may be be filled with all fulnesse of God.

20 Vnto him therfore that is able to doe exceeding abundantly aboue all that we aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

21 *Be* praise in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all generations for euer, Amen.

CHAP.

The three last Chapters containe precepts of manners. 1 He exhorteth them to mutuall loue. 7 Sundry gifts are therefore bestowed of God, 16 that the Church may be built vp. 18 He calleth them from the vanitie of the Infidels, 25 from lying, 29 and from filthy talke.

1 Therefore, being prisoner in the Lord, pray you that ye walke worthy of the vocation whereunto ye are called,

2 With all humblenesse of minde, and meekenesse, with long suffring, supporting one another through loue,

3 Endeuouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There *is* one body, and one Spirit, euen as ye are called in one hope of your vocation.

5 *There is* one Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,

6 One God, and Father of all, which is aboue all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended vp on high, hee led captiuitie captiue and gaue gifts vnto men.

9 (Now, in that he ascended, what is it but that hee had also descended first into the lowest parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is euen the same that ascended, farre aboue all heauens, that he might fill all things)

11 He therefore gaue some *to be* Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Euangelists, and some Pastors, and teachers,

12 For the repairing of the Saints, for the worke of the ministerie, *and* for the edification of the body of Christ,

13 Till wee all meet together (in the vnitie of faith and that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfit man, *and* vnto the measure of the age of the fulnesse of Christ,

14 That we henceforth be no more children, wauering and caried about with euery wind of doctrine, by the deceit of men, and with craftinesse, whereby they lay in waite to deceiue.

15 But let vs follow the trueth in loue, and in all things growe vp into him, which is the head, *that is*, Christ,

16 By whom all the body being coupled and knit together by euery ioynt, for the furniture *thereof* (according to the effectuall power, *which is* in the measure of euery part) receiueth increase of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that ye henceforth walke not as * other Gentiles walke, in vanitie of their minde, *Rom. 1.21*

18 Hauing their vnderstanding darkened, and being strangers from

from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, be-
cause of the hardnesse of their heart.

19 Which being past feeling, haue giuen themselues vnto
wantonnesse to worke all vncleannesse, *euen* with greedinesse.

20 But ye haue not so learned Christ,

21 If so be ye haue heard him, and haue beene taught by him,
as the trueth is in Iesus,

Col.3.8. 22 *That is*, that yee cast off, concerning the conuersation in
time past, that old man which is corrupt through the deceiueable
lustes,

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde,

24 And put on the new man, which after God is created vnto
righteousnesse and true holinesse.

25 Wherefore cast off lying, and speake euery man trueth vnto
his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be angry, but sinne not: let not the Sunne goe downe vpon
your wrath,

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather la-
bour, and worke with his hands the thing which is good, that hee
may haue to giue vnto him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceede out of your
mouthes: but that which is good, to the vse of edifying, that it
may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, by whom yee are
sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and anger, and wrath, crying, and euill
speaking be put away from you, with all maliciousnesse.

32 Be ye courteous one to another, and tender hearted, freely
forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christes sake freely for-
giue you.

CHAP. V.

2 *Lest in those vices which hee reprehended, they should set light by his admonitions,* 5 *he terrifieth them by denouncing curse vnderstatement,* 8 *and stirreth them forward:* 15 *then he descendeth from generall lessons of manners,* 21 *To the particular ductes of wiues,* 25 *and husbands.*

Iohn 13. 34. and 15. 12. BE yee therefore followers of God as deare children.

1.Ioh. 3. 23. 2 * And walke in loue, euen as Christ hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs, *to be* an offring & a sacrifice of a sweet
Gha.4.29. smelling sauour to God.

Colos. 3. 5. 3 * But fornication and all vncleannesse, or couetousnes, let it
1.Thes.2. 27. not be once named among you, as it becommeth Saints.

4 Neither filthinesse, neither foolish talking, neither iesting,
which

which are things not comely, but rather giuing of thanks.
5 For this ye know that no whoremonger, neither vncleane person nor couetous person, which is as an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.
6 *Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: for, for such things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience. *Mat.24.4 mar 13.5 luk.21.8.
7 Be not therefore companions with them. 2.the.2.3
8 For ye were once darkenesse, but are now light in the Lord: walke as children of light,
9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodnesse and righteousnesse, and trueth)
10 Approuing that which is pleasing to the Lord.
11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitfull workes of darknesse, but euen reproouе them rather.
12 For it is a shame euen to speake of the things, which are done of them in secret.
13 But all things when they are reproued of the light, are manifest: for it is light that maketh all things manifest.
14 Wherefore hee saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and stand vp from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light.
15 Take heede therefore that yee walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as * wise, Col.4.5.
16 Redeeming the season: for the dayes are euill.
17 * Wherefore, bee ye not vnwise, but vnderstand what the will of the Lord is. Rom.12.2 1.the.4.3
18 And be not drunken with wine, wherein is excesse: but bee fulfilled with the Spirit,
19 Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes, and hymnes, & spirituall songs, singing, & making melodie to the Lord in your hearts,
20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, euen the Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ,
21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God.
22 ¶ * Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as vnto the Lord. Col.3.18. 1 tim 2.5.
23 * For the husband is the wiues head, euen as Christ is the head of the Church, and the same is the sauiour of *his* body. 1 p t 3 1. Cor. 11.3.
24 Therefore, as the Church is in subiection to Christ, euen so *let* the wiues *be* to their husbands in euery thing.
25 ¶ * Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ loued the Church, and gaue himselfe for it, Col.3.19.
26 That hee might sanctifie it, and cleanse it by the washing of water through the word,

27 That

27 That he might make it vnto himselfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blame.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh, but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord *doeth* the Church.

30 For wee are members of his bodie, of his flesh, and of his bones.

Gen.2.24 *mat.19.5* *mar.10.7* *&cor.6.16* 31 *For this cause shall a man leaue Father and mother, and shall cleaue vnto his wife, and they twaine shalbe one flesh.

32 This is a great secret, but I speake concerning Christ, and concerning the Church.

33 Therefore euery one of you, *do ye so*: let euery one loue his wife, euen as himselfe, & *let* the wife *see* that she feare her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He sheweth the duties of children,* 5 *seruants,* 9 *and masters:* 10 *Then he speaketh of the fierce battell that the faithfull haue,* 13 *and what weapons wee must vse in the same:* 21 *In the end he commendeth Tychicus.*

Col.3.20. CHildren * obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

Exo.20.12 *deut.5.16* *eccle.3.9.* *mat.15.4* 2 * Honour thy father and mother (which is the first commandement with promise)

3 That it may bee well with thee, and that thou mayest liue long on earth.

mar.7.10 4 And yee Fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction and information of the Lord.

Col.3.22. *titus 2.9.* *1.pet.2.18* 5 * Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are *your* masters, according to the flesh, with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your hearts as vnto Christ:

6 Not with seruice to the eye, as men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart,

7 With good will, seruing the Lord, and not men.

8 And know yee that whatsoeuer good thing any man doeth,

Deut.10. *17.2.chr.* *36.7.* *iob* *34.* *16.* *act.10 34.* *rom 2.11* *gal. 2.6.* that same shall hee receiue of the Lord, whether *hee be* bond or free.

9 And ye masters, doe the same things vnto them, putting away threatning: and know that euen your master also is in heauen, neither is there * respect of person with him.

col.3.25. *1.pet 1.17* 10 ¶ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that yee may be able to stand against the assaults of the deuill.

12 For

12 For wee wreſtle not againſt fleſh and bloode, but againſt *principalities, againſt powers, *and* againſt the worldly gouernours, *the* princes of the darkeneſſe of this world, againſt ſpirituall wickednesſes, *which are* in the high places. *Chap. 2. 2.*

13 For this cauſe take vnto you the whole armour of God, that yee may be able to reſiſt in the euill day, and hauing finiſhed all things ſtand faſt.

14 Stand therefore, and your loynes girded about with verity: and hauing on the breſtplate of righteousnes,

15 And your feete ſhod with the preparation of the Goſpel of peace.

16 Aboue all, take the ſhield of faith, wherewith ye may quench all the fierie darts of the wicked,

17 And take the helmet of ſaluation, and the ſword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 And pray alwayes with all manner prayer and ſupplication in the Spirit: and watch thereunto with all perſeuerance and ſupplication for all Saints,

19 And for mee, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to publiſh the ſecret of the Goſpel,

20 Whereof I am the ambaſſadour in bonds, that therein I may ſpeake boldly, as I ought to ſpeake.

21 ¶But that ye may alſo know mine affaires, *and* what I doe, Tychicus *my* deare brother and faithfull miniſter in the Lorde, ſhall ſhew you of all things,

22 Whom I haue ſent vnto you for the ſame purpoſe, that ye might know mine affaires, and that hee might comfort your hearts

23 Peace *be* with the brethren, and loue with faith from God the Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

24 Grace *bee* with all them which loue our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, *to their* immortalitie, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Epheſians, *and ſent by* Tychicus.

THE

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to the Philippians.

CHAP. I.

3 *Hauing testified his godly and tender affection towards the Philippians,* 12 *he entreateth of himselfe and his bonds,* 22 *And pricketh them forward by his owne example,* 27 *and exhorteth them to vnitie* 28 *and patience.*

PAVL and Timothens the seruant of Iesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Iesus which are at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons:

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God *hauing* you in perfect memorie,

4 ¶ Alwayes in all my prayers for all you, praying with gladnesse,

5 Because of the fellowship which ye haue in the Gospel, from the first day vnto now.

6 And I am perswaded of this same thing, that hee that hath begun *the* good worke in you, will performe it vntill the day of Iesus Christ,

7 As it becommeth me so to iudge of you all, because I haue you in remembrance, that both in my bands, & in *my* defence, and confirmation of the Gospel you all were partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how I long after you all from the very heart roote in Iesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all iudgement,

10 That yee may allow those things which are best, that yee may be pure, and without offence vnto the day of Christ,

11 Filled with the fruites of righteousnesse, which are by Iesus Christ vnto the glory and praise of God.

12 ¶ I would ye vnderstood, brethren, that the things which *haue come* vnto mee, are turned rather to the furthering of the Gospel,

13 So that my bands in Christ are famous throughout all the iudgement hall, and in all other *places*,

14 Insomuch that many of the brethren in the Lord are boldned through my bands, and dare more frankely speake the word.

15 Some preach Christ euen through enuie and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The

16 The one part preacheth Christ of contention *and* not purely, supposing to adde more affliction to my bands.

17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? yet Christ is preached all maner wayes, whether *it be* vnder a pretence, or sincerely: and I therein ioy: yea and will ioy.

19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and by the helpe of the Spirit of Iesus Christ,

20 As I feruently looke for, and hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with al confidence, as alwayes, so now Christ shalbe magnified in my body, whether *it be* by life or by death.

21 For Christ *is* to me both in life, and in death aduantage.

22 And whether to liue in the flesh *were* profitable for me, and what to chuse I know not.

23 For I am distressed betweene both, desiring to be loosed and to be with Christ, which is best of all.

24 Neuertheless, to abide in the flesh, *is* more needful for you.

25 And this am I sure of, that I shall abide, and with you all continue, for your furtherance and ioy of *your* faith,

26 That yee may more abundantly reioyce in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you againe.

27 Only let your conuersation be, as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may heare of your matters that yee continue in one Spirit, *and* in one minde, fighting together through the faith of the Gospel.

28 And in nothing feare your aduersaries, which is to them a token of perdition, and to you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen for Christ, that not onely ye should beleeue in him, but also suffer for his sake,

30 Hauing the same fight, which ye saw in me, and now heare *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

1 *He exhorteth them aboue all things 3 to humilitie, 6 and that by t'e example of Christ. 19 He promiseth to send Timotheus shortly vnto them, 26 and excuseth the long tarying of Epaphroditus.*

IF *there be* therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any compassion & mercy,

2 Fulfil my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accord, and of one iudgement,

3 That nothing *be done* through contention, or vaine glory, but that in meekenesse of minde euery man esteeme other better then himselfe.

4 Looke

4 Looke not euery man on his owne things, but euery man also on the things of other men.

5 Let the same mind be in you that was euen in Christ Iesus,

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it no robbery to be equall with God:

7 But he made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke on him the forme of a seruant, and was made like vnto men, & was found in shape as a man.

8 He humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the Crosse.

9 Wherefore God hath also highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name aboue euery Name,

10 That at the Name of Iesus should euery knee bow, both of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth,

11 And that euery tongue should confesse, that Iesus Christ is the Lord, vnto the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed me, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in mine absence, so make an end of your owne saluation with feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both the will and the deede, *euen* of *his* good pleasure,

h. Psa 4.9 14 Doe all things without * murmuring and reasonings,

15 That ye may be blamelesse, and pure, *and* the sonnes of God without rebuke in the middes of a naughti- and crooked nation,

Mat. 5.14 among whom ye shine as * lights in the world,

16 Holding foorth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and though I be offered vp vpon the sacrifice, and seruice of your faith, I am glad and reioyce with you all.

18 For the same cause also bee yee glad, and reioyce with me.

Act. 16.1 19 And I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send * Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.

20 For I haue no man like minded, who will faithfully care for your matters.

2. Cor. 12. 21 * For all seeke their owne, & not that which is Iesus Christs.

24. 22 But yee know the proofe of him, that as a sonne with the Father, he hath serued with me in the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send assoone as I know how it will goe with me.

24 And trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shal come shortly.

25 But I supposed it necessarie to send *my* brother Epaphroditus

dius vnto you, my companion in labour, and fellow souldier, euen your messenger, and he that ministred vnto me such things as I wanted.

26 For he longed after all you, and was full of heauinesse, because ye had heard, that he had beene sicke.

27 And no doubt hee was sicke, very neere vnto death: but God had mercie on him, and not on him onely, but on me also, lest I should haue sorow vpon sorow.

28 I sent him therefore the more diligently, that when yee should see him againe, ye might reioyce, and I might be the lesse sorowfull.

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and make much of such:

30 Because that for the worke of Christ hee was neere vnto death, and regarded not his life, to fulfill that seruice which was lacking on your part toward me.

CHAP. III.

2 He refuteth the vaine boastings of the false Apostles, 7 and setteth Christ against them. 10 He setteth out the force and nature of faith, 15 that laying all things aside, they may be partakers of the crosse of Christ. 18 the enemies whereof he noteth out.

MOreouer, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. It grieueth mee not to write the same things to you, and for you it is a sure thing.

2 Beware of dogges: beware of euill workers: beware of the concision.

3 For wee are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh:

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that hee hath whereof hee might trust in the flesh, much more I,

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, *an Ebrew of the Ebrewes, *by the Law a Pharise. 2. *Cor.* 11. 22.

6 Concerning zeale, I persecuted the Church: touching the righteousnesse which is in the Law, I was vnrebukeable. *Act.* 23. 6

7 But the things that were vantage vnto me, the same I counted losse for Christes sake.

8 Yea, doubtlesse I thinke all things but losse for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whom I haue counted all things losse, and doe iudge *them* to be dung, that I might winne Christ,

9 And might be found in him, *that is*, not hauing mine owne

righteousnesse, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, *euen* the righteousnesse which is of God through faith,

10 That I may know him, and the vertue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions, and be made conformable vnto his death,

11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead:

12 Not as though I had alreadie attained *to it*, either were alreadie perfect: but I follow, if that I might comprehend *that* for whose sake also I am comprehended of Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue attained *to it*: but one thing *I do*: I forget that which is behind, and endeauour my selfe vnto that which is before,

14 And follow hard toward the marke, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shall reueile euen the same vnto you.

16 Neuertheless, *in that* whereunto wee are come, let vs proceede by one rule, that we may minde one thing.

17 Brethren, be followers of me, and looke on them, which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample.

Rom. 16. 17. 18 * For many walke, of whom I haue told you often, and now tell you weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the Crosse of Christ.

19 Whose ende *is* damnation, whose God *is their* belly, and whose glory *is* to their shame, which mind earthly things.

20 But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also wee looke for the * Sauiour, *euen* the Lord Iesus Christ,

1. Cor. 1. 7. 1. Tim. 2. 13. 21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, whereby he is able euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 From particular exhortations, 4 hee commeth to generall. 10 He reioyceth that he tooke such ioy in their readinesse to liberalitie, 12 that hee will patiently beare the want.

THerefore, my brethren, beloued and longed for, *my* ioy and my crowne, so continue in the Lord, ye beloued.

2 I pray Euodias, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of one accord in the Lord.

3 Yea, and I beseech thee, faithfull yokefellow, helpe those *women* which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also,

also, and with other my fellow labourers, whose names *are* in the *booke of life.

*Reue 3.5. and 10.8.

4 Reioyce in the Lord alway, againe I say, Reioyce.

5 Let your patient minde be knowen vnto all men. The Lord *is* at hand. G 21.27.

6 Be nothing carefull, but in all things let your requests be shewed vnto God in prayer, and supplication with giuing of thankes.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding, shall preserue your hearts and mindes in Christ Iesus.

8 Furthermore, brethren, whatsoeuer things are true, whatsoeuer things *are* honest, whatsoeuer things *are* iust, whatsoeuer things *are* pure, whatsoeuer things *are* worthy loue, whatsoeuer things *are* of good report, if there *be* any vertue, or if there *be* any praise, thinke on these things,

9 Which ye haue both learned and receiued, and heard, and seene in me: those things doe, and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 Now I reioyce also in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care for me springeth afresh, wherein notwithstanding yee were carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.

11 I speake not because of want: for I haue learned in whatsoeuer state I am, therewith to be content.

12 And I can be abased, and I can abound: euery where in all things I am instructed, both to be full, and to be hungry, and to abound, and to haue want.

13 I am able to *doe* all things through the helpe of Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding ye haue well done, that yee did communicate to mine affliction.

15 And ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the Gospel when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, concerning the matter of giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

16 For euen *when* I *was* in Thessalonica, yee sent once, and afterward againe for my necessitie.

17 Not that I desire a gift: but I desire the fruit which may further your reckoning.

18 Now I haue receiued all, and haue plentie: I was euen filled, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which *came* from you, an odour that smelleth sweet, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasant to God.

19 And my God shall fulfill all your necessities through his riches with glory in Iesus Christ.

20 Vnto God euen our Father, *be* praise for euermore, Amen.
21 Salute all the Saints in Christ Iesus. The brethren, which are with me, greete you.
22 All the Saints salute you, and most of all they which are of Cesars houshold.
23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, *be* with you all, Amen.
¶ Written to the Philippians from Rome, *and sent* by Epaphroditus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to the Colossians.

CHAP. I.

1 *After the salutation,* 4 *he praiseth them the more to make them attentiue vnto him.* 7 *He reporteth the testimonie of the doctrine which they heard of Epaphras.* 13 *He magnifieth Gods grace towards them,* 20 *and sheweth that all the parts of our saluation consist in Christ alone.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus *our* brother,
2 To them which are at Colosse, Saints and faithfull brethren in Christ: Grace *bee* with you, and peace from GOD our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
3 We giue thankes to God euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, alwayes praying for you:
4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesus, and of *your* loue toward all Saints,
5 For the hopes sake, which is laide vp for you in heaues, whereof ye haue heard before by the word of trueth, *which is* the Gospel,
6 Which is come vnto you, euen as *it is* vnto all the world, and is fruitfull, as *it is* also among you from the day that ye heard and truely knew the grace of God,
7 As yee also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow seruant, which is for you a faithfull minister of Christ:
8 Who hath also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit.
9 For this cause wee also, since the day wee heard *of it*, cease not to pray for you, and to desire that yee might be fulfilled with knowledge of his will, in all wisedome, and spirituall vnderstanding,
10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord, and please *him* in all things, being fruitfull in all good workes, and increasing in the knowledge of God,

11 Strengthe-

11 Strengthened with all might through his glorious power, vnto all patience, and long suffering with ioyfulnesse,
12 Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light,
13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome * of his deare Sonne, *Mat. 3. 17*
14 In whom wee haue redemption through his blood, *that is*, *and 17. 5.* the forgiuenesse of sinnes, *2. pet. 1. 17*
15 Who is the * image of the inuisible God, the first begotten *Heb. 1. 3.* of every creature.
16 * For by him were all things created, which are in heauen, *Iohn 1. 3.* and which are in earth, things visible and inuisible: whether *they be* Thrones, or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers, all things were created by him, and for him,
17 And he is before all things, and in him all things consist.
18 And he is the head of the body of the Church: he is the beginning, * *and* the first begotten of the dead, that in all things hee *Reue. 1. 5.* might haue the preeminence. *1. cor. 15 20.*
19 * For it pleased *the Father*, that in him should all fulnesse *Chap. 2. 9.* dwell, *Iohn 1. 14*
20 And through peace made by that blood of that his crosse, to reconcile to himselfe through him, through him, *I say*, all things both which *are* in earth, and which *are* in heauen.
21 And you which were in times past strangers and enemies, because *your* minds *were set* in euill workes, hath he now also reconciled,
22 In that body of his flesh through death: to make you holy, and vnblameable, and without fault in his sight,
23 If ye continue grounded and stablished in the faith, and be not mooued away from the hope of the Gospel, whereof yee haue heard, and which hath beene preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am a minister.
24 Now reioyce I in my sufferings for you, and fulfill the rest of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,
25 Whereof I am a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is giuen me vnto you ward, to fulfill the word of God, *Rom. 15.*
26 * *Which is* the mysterie hid since the world began, and from *25 ephes.* *all* ages, but now is made manifest to his Saints, *3. 9.*
27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of *2. Tim. 1.* his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles, which *riches* is Christ *10. tit. 1. 2.* in you, the hope of glory, *1. pet. 1.*
28 Whom we preach, admonishing euery man, and teaching *20.*

euery man in all wisedome, that wee may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus,

29 Whereunto I also labour and striue, according to his working which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

4 He condemneth as vaine, whatsoeuer is without Christ, 11 intreating specially of circumcision, 16 of abstinence from meates, 18 and of worshipping of Angels. 20 That we are deliuered from the traditions of the Law through Christ.

FOr I would yee knewe what great fighting I haue for your sakes, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my person in the flesh,

2 That their hearts might be comforted, and they knit together in loue, and in all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to know the mysterie of God, euen the Father & of Christ:

3 In whome are hid all the treasures of wisedome, and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words:

1.Cor.5.3 5 *For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, reioycing, and beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in Christ.

6 As yee haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke in him,

7 Rooted and built in him, and stablished in the faith, as yee haue beene taught, abounding therein with thanksgiuing.

8 Beware lest there be any man that spoile you through philosophie, and vaine deceit, through the traditions of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principalitie and power.

Rom.2.29 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with *circumcision made without hands, by putting off the sinnefull body of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ,

Rom.6.4. 12 In that yee are *buried with him through Baptisme, in
Ephe.1.19 whom ye are also raised vp together through the faith of the operation of God, which raised him from the dead.

Eph.2.1. 13 *And you which were dead in sinnes, and in the vncircumcision of your flesh, hath hee quickened together with him, forgiuing you all your trespasses,

Eph.2.15 14 And putting out the *hand writing of ordinances that was against vs, which was contrarie to vs, hee euen tooke it out of the way, and fastened it vpon the crosse,

15 And

15 And hath spoiled the principalities and powers, and hath made a shew of them openly, and hath triumphed ouer them in the same crosse.

16 Let no man therefore condemne you in meate and drinke or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moone, or of the Sabbath dayes,

17 Which are but a shadow of things to come: but the body is in Christ.

18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule ouer you by humblenesse of minde, and worshipping of Angels, aduancing himselfe in those things which he neuer saw, rashly puft vp with his fleshly minde,

19 And holdeth not the head, whereof all the body furnished and knit together by ioynts and bands, increaseth with the increasing of God.

20 Wherefore if yee be dead with Christ from the ordinances of the world, why, as though ye liued in the world, are ye burdened with traditions?

21 As, Touch not, Taste not, Handle not.

22 Which all perish with the vsing, and are after the commandements, and doctrines of men:

23 Which things haue in deed a shew of wisedome in voluntarie religion and humblenesse of minde, and in not sparing the body, which are things of no value, saith they pertaine to the filling of the flesh.

CHAP. III.

1 Against earthly exercises, which the false apostles vrged, 2 bee. stirreth heauenly: 5 And beginneth with the mortifying of the flesh, 8 wherevnto hee draweth particular exhortations, 18 and particular duties which depend on each mans calling.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth at the right hand of God.

2 Set your affections on things which are aboue, and not on things which are on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ which is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glory.

5 * Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, vncleannesse, the inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnesse which is idolatrie. *Ephes.5.3*

6 For the which things sake the wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience.

7 Wherein ye also walked once, when ye liued in them.

8 But now put yee away euen all these things, wrath, anger, maliciousnesse, cursed speaking, filthie speaking out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye haue put off the olde man with his workes,

10 And haue put on the new, which is renued in knowledge after the image of him that created him,

11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iewe, circumcision nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian bond, free: but Christ is all, and in all things.

12 Now therefore as the elect of God holy and beloued, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnesse, humblenesse of mind, meekenesse, long suffering:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one another, if any man haue a quarell to another: euen as Christ forgaue, euen so doe yee.

14 And aboue all these things, *put on* loue, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which ye are called in one body, and be ye thankefull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you plenteously in all wisdome, teaching and admonishing your owne selues, in Psalmes, and Hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with a grace in your hearts to the Lord.

3. Cor. 10. 31. 17 * And whatsoeuer ye shall doe, in word or deede, *doe* all in the Name of the Lord Iesus, giuing thankes to God euen the Father by him.

Eph. 5. 22. 18 ¶ *Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as it is comely in the Lord.

1. Pet. 3. 1 19 *Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bitter vnto them.

Ephe. 6. 1. 20 ¶ * Children, obey your parents in all things: for that is well pleasing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

Ephe. 6. 5. 1. Tit. 2. 9. 1. Pet. 2. 18. 22 ¶ *Seruants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, in all things, not with eye seruice as men pleasers, but in singlenesse of heart, fearing God.

23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men,

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ.

25 But hee that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong that he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP.

3 He returneth to generall exhortations, 3 touching praier, & gracious speech, 7 and sendeth with greetings & commendations.

YE masters, do vnto your seruants that which is iust, and equal, knowing that ye also haue a master in heauen.

2 *Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving, *Luk.18.1. 1.thes.5.*

3 *Praying also for vs, that God may open to vs the doore of vtterance, to speake the mysterie of Christ: wherefore I am also in bonds, 17. *Eph.6.18 2.thes.3.1*

4 That I may vtter it, as it becommeth me to speake. *Eph.5.15*

5 ¶ *Walke wisely toward them that are without, and redeeme the season.

6 Let your speech *be* gracious alwaies, and powdered with salt, that ye may know how to answer euery man.

7 ¶ Tychicus *our* beloued brother and faithfull minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord, shall declare vnto you my whole state.

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that hee might know your state, and might comfort your hearts,

9 With Onesimus a faithful and beloued brother, who is one of you. They shall shew you of all things here.

10 Aristarchus my prison fellow saluteth you, and Marcus Barnabas cousin (touching whom ye receiued commandements, if he come vnto you receiue him.)

11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, which are of the circumcision. These onely are my worke fellowes vnto the kingdome of God, which haue beene vnto my consolation.

12 Epaphras the seruant of Christ, which is one of you, saluteth you, and alwaies striueth for you in prayers, that yee may stand perfect and full in all the will of God.

13 For I beare him record, that he hath a great zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea, and them of Hierapolis.

14 *Luke the beloued Physician greeteth you, and Demas. 2.Tim.4.11.

15 Salute the brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read of you, cause that it bee read in the Church of the Laodiceans also, and that yee likewise read the Epistle *written* from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministery, that thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bands. Grace *be* with you. AMEN.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, *and sent* by Tychicus and Onesimus.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I.

1 *He therefore beginneth with thankesgiuing,* 4 *to put them in mind that whatsoeuer was praise worthy in them, it came of Gods goodnesse,* 8 *and that they are ensamples vnto others.*

PAul and Siluanus and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God the Father and the Lord Iesus Christ: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 We giue God thankes alwaies for you all, making mention of you in our prayers

3 Without ceasing, remembring your effectuall faith, and diligent loue, & the patience of *your* hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God, euen our Father,

4 Knowing, beloued brethren, that ye are elect of God.

5 For our Gospel was not vnto you in word onely, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know after what manner we are among you for your sakes.

6 And ye became followers of vs and of the Lord, and receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost,

7 So that ye were as ensamples to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lorde, not in Macedonia and in Achaia onely: but your faith also which is toward God, spread abroad in al quarters, that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselues shew of vs what manner of entring in we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God,

10 And to looke for his Sonne from heauen, whom hee raised from the dead, *euen* Iesus which deliuereth vs from that wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

1 *Hee declareth how faithfully hee preached the Gospel vnto them,* 5 *seeking neither gaine,* 6 *nor praise of men:* 10 *and he proueth the same by their owne testimony:* 14 *that they did courageously beare persecutions of their country men:* 17 *that he desireth very much to see them.*

FOr yee your selues know, brethren, that our entrance in vnto you was not in vaine,

2 But

2 But euen after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully intreated (as ye know) wee were bolde in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God with much striuing. *Acts 16. 12.*

3 For our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by vncleanenesse, nor by guile,

4 But as we were allowed of God, that the Gospel should bee committed *vnto vs*, so we speake, not as they that please men, but God, which approoueth our hearts.

5 Neither yet did we euer vse flattering words, as yee knowe, nor coloured couetousnesse, God is record.

6 Neither sought wee praise of men, neither of you, nor of others, when wee might haue beene chargeable, as the Apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, euen as a nurse cherisheth her children.

8 Thus beeing affectioned toward you, our good will was to haue dealt vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely, but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

9 For ye remember, brethren, *our labour and trauel: for we laboured day and night, because we would not be chargeable vnto any of you, and preached vnto you the Gospel of God. *Acts 20. 34. 1. cor. 4. 12.*

10 Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily, and iustly, and vnblameably we behaued our selues among you that beleeue.

11 As ye know how that we exhorted you, and comforted, and besought euery one of you (as a father his children)

12 That ye would *walke worthy of God, who hath called you vnto his kingdome and glory. *Eph. 4. 1. phil. 1. 27. col. 1. 10.*

13 For this cause also thanke wee God without ceasing, that when ye receiued the word of God, which ye heard of vs, yee receiued it not as the word of men, but as it is indeede, the word of God, which also worketh in you that beleeue.

14 For brethren, yee are become followers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus, because ye haue also suffered the same things of your owne countrey men, euen as they *haue* of the Iewes.

15 Who both killed the Lord Iesus and their owne Prophets, and haue persecuted vs away, and God they please not, and are contrary to all men,

16 And forbid vs to preach vnto the Gentiles, that they might be saued, to fulfill their sinnes alwayes: for the wrath *of God* is come on them to the vtmost.

17 Forasmuch brethren, as we were kept from you for a season, concerning sight, but not in the heart, wee enforced the more to see your face with great desire.

18 There-

18 Therefore we would haue come vnto you, (I Paul at leaſt once or twice) but Satan hindered vs.

19 For what is our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioycing? are not euen you it in the preſence of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt at his comming?

20 Yes, ye are our glory and ioy.

CHAP. III.

1 To ſhew his affection towards them: hee ſendeth Timothy vnto them: 6 Hee is ſo mooued by the report of their proſperous ſtate, 9 that he cannot giue ſufficient thankes, 11 and therefore he breaketh out into prayer.

WHerefore ſince we could no longer forbeare, we thought it good to remaine at Athens alone,

Act.16.1 2 *And haue ſent Timotheus our brother & miniſter of God, & our labour fellow in the Goſpel of Chriſt, to eſtabliſh you, and to comfort you touching your faith,

3 That no man ſhould be moued with theſe afflictions: for yee your ſelues know, that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verely when we were with you, we told you before that wee ſhould ſuffer tribulations, euen as it came to paſſe, and ye know it.

5 Euen for this cauſe when I could no longer forbeare, I ſent *him* that I might knowe of your faith, leſt the tempter had tempted you in any ſort, and that our labour had beene in vaine.

6 But now lately when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and loue, and that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwaies, deſiring to ſee vs, as we alſo *doe* you,

7 Therefore brethren, we had conſolation in you, in all our affliction and neceſsitie through your faith.

8 For now are we aliue, if ye ſtand faſt in the Lord.

9 For what thankes can wee recompence to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherwith we reioyce for your ſakes before our God,

Ro.1.10 & 15.23. 10 Night & day, *praying exceedingly that we might ſee your face, and might accompliſh that which is lacking in your faith.

11 Now God himſelfe, euen our Father, and our Lord Ieſus Chriſt guide our iourney vnto you,

12 And the Lord increaſe you, and make you abound in loue one toward another, and toward all men, euen as wee *doe* toward you:

Eba.5.23. 1.ioh.1.8. 13 *To make your hearts ſtable, and vnblameable in holineſs before God euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt with all his Saints.

CHAP.

1 He exhorteth them 3 to holinesse, 9 and brotherly loue. 13 He forbiddeth them to sorrow after the maner of infidels. 15 He setteth out the history of our resurrection.

AND furthermore we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lord Iesus, that yee increase more and more, as yee haue receiued of vs how ye ought to walke, and to please God.

2 For yee know what commandements wee gaue you by the Lord Iesus.

3 *For this is the will of God, *euen* your sanctification, *and* that ye should abstaine from fornication, *Ro. 12.2 eph. 5. 17*

4 That euery one of you should know, how to possesse his vessel in holinesse and honour,

5 *And* not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 *That no man oppresse or defraud his brother in any matter: for the Lord *is* auenger of all such things, as we also haue told you before time, and testified. *1. Cor. 6. 8*

7 *For God hath not called vs to vncleannesse, but vnto holinesse. *1. Cor. 1. 2*

8 He therefore that despiseth *these things*, despiseth not man, but God who hath euen giuen you his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue, yee need not that I write vnto you: *for ye are taught of God to loue one another. *Ioh. 13. 34*

10 Yea, & that thing verely ye do vnto all the brethren, which are throughout all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more, *and 1 5. 12 1 Ioh. 2. 8 and 4. 21*

11 And that ye studie to be quiet & to meddle with your own busines, and to worke with your owne hands, as wee commanded you,

12 That ye may behaue your selues honestly toward them that are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you.

13 ¶ I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are asleepe, that yee sorrowe not euen as other which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleeue that Iesus is dead, & is risen, euen so them which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this say we vnto you by the word of the Lord, that wee which liue, and are remaining in the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent them with sleepe:

16 For the Lord himselfe shall descend from heauen with a shoute, *and* with the voice of the Archangel, and * with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: *1. Cor. 15 52.*

17 Then shall we which liue and remaine, be caught vp with them also in the cloudes, to meete the Lord in the ayre: and so shall

shall we euer be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort your selues one another with these words.

CHAP. V.

1 *Concerning the curious search ing for the seasons of Christs coming,* 6 *he warneth them to be ready day ly to receiue him.* 11 *and so giueth them sundry good lessons.*

BVt of the times and seasons, brethren, ye haue no need that I write vnto you.

2 For ye your selues know perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safetie, then shall come vpon them sudden destruction, as the trauaile vpon a woman with child, and they shall not escape.

4 But yee, brethren, are not in darkenesse, that that day should come on you, as it were a thiefe.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of darkenesse.

6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as doe other, but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, & they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

Isa. 59. 17. *Eph.* 6. 17. 8 But let vs which are of the day, bee sober, *putting on the breast plate of faith and loue, and the hope of saluation for an helmet.

9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Which died for vs, that whether wee wake or sleepe, wee should liue together with him.

11 Wherefore exhort one another, and edifie one another, euen as ye doe.

12 Now we beseech you, brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you,

13 That yee haue them in singular loue for their workes sake. Be at peace among your selues.

14 We desire you, brethren, admonish them that are out of order: comfort the feeble minded: beare with the weake: be patient toward all men.

Pro. 17. 13. *and* 20. 22. *mat.* 5. 39. *rom.* 12. 17. 15 *See that none recompence euill for euill vnto any man: but euer follow that which is good, both toward your selues, and toward all men.

1 *Pet.* 3. 9. 16 Reioyce euermore.

Luk. 18. 1. 17 *Pray continually,

18 In all things giue thankes: for this *is* the will of God in Christ Iesus towards you.
19 Quench not the Spirit.
20 Despise not prophecying.
21 Trie all things *and* keepe that which is good.
22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.
23 Now the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout: and *pray God* that your whole spirit and soule & body may be kept blamelesse vnto the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ.
24 *Faithfull *is he* which calleth you, which will also doe it. *1.Cor. 1.9*
25 Brethren, pray for vs.
26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse.
27 I charge you in the Lord, that this Epistle be read vnto all the brethren the Saints.
28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you. Amen.
The first *Epistle* vnto the Thessalonians written from Athens.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of Paul to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I.

3 *He commendeth the increase of faith and charitie,* 4 *and the patience of the Thessalonians:* 6 *And describing Gods vengeance against such as oppresse the godly,* 10 *hee teacheth the godly to waite for the last iudgement.*

PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God our Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ:
2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
3 *Wee ought to thanke God alwaies for you, brethren, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the loue of euery one of you toward another abounded, *1.Thes.3.2.*
4 So that wee our selues reioyce of you in the Churches of God, because of your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer,
5 * *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that ye may bee counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for the which ye also suffer. *1.Thes.2.12*
6 For it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you,
7 And to you which are troubled rest with vs *when the Lord Iesus shall shew himselfe from heauen with his mightie Angels, *1.Thes.4.16.*
8 In flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them, that do not knowe

know God, and which obey not vnto the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 Which shall be punished with euerlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power,

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saints, and to be made maruelious in all them that beleeue (because our testimony toward you was beleeued) in that day.

11 Wherefore wee also pray alwayes for you, that our God may make you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power,

12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ may be glorified in you, and yee in him, according to the grace of our God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

2 Hee sheweth that the day of the Lord shall not come, till there be a departure from the faith, 3 and that Antichrist bee reuealed, 8 whose destruction he setteth out, 15 and therupon exhorteth to constancie.

NOw we beseech you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him,

2 That ye be not suddenly moued from *your* minde, nor troubled neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as *it were* from vs, as though the day of Christ were at hand.

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shall not come*, except there be a departing first, and that that man of sinne be disclosed, *euen* the sonne of perdition,

4 Which is an aduersarie, and exalteth himselfe against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doth sit as God in the temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember yee not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be reuealed in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth already worke: onely he which now withholdeth, *shall let* till hee bee taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked man be reuealed, * whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shal abolish with the brightnesse of his comming,

9 *Euen him* whose comming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And in all deceiuablenesse of vnrighteousnesse among them that perish, because they receiued not the loue of the truth, that they might be saued.

11 And

11 And therefore God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleeue lies,

12 That all they might bee damned which beleeued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnes.

13 But we ought to giue thanks alwayes to God for you brethren, beloued of the Lord, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, thorow sanctification of the spirit, and the faith of trueth,

14 Whereunto hee called you by our Gospel, to obtaine the glory of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and keepe the instructions which ye haue bene taught, either by word, or by our Epistle.

15 Now the same Iesus Christ our Lord, and our God, euen the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery word and good worke.

CHAP. III.

1 He desireth them to further the preaching of the Gospel, with their prayer, 3 & to withdraw themselues from those which through idlenesse, 11 and curiosity peruert good order: 14 Whom he excludeth from the company of the faithfull.

FVrthermore, brethren, *pray for vs, that the word of the Lord may haue free passage, and be glorified, euen as it is with you. *Eph.6.19. col.4.3.*

2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreasonable and euil men: for all men haue not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, which will stablish you, and keep you from euill.

4 And we are perswaded of you through the Lord, that yee both doe, and will doe the things which we warne you of.

5 And the Lord guide your hearts to the loue of God, and the waiting for of Christ.

6 Wee warne you, brethren, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that yee withdraw your selues from euery brother that walketh inordinatly, and not after the instruction which hee receiued of vs.

7 For ye your selues know, *how ye ought to follow vs: for we behaued not our selues inordinatly among you, *1.Cor.11.1. 1 Thes. 1.6.*

8 Neither tooke we bread of any man for nought: but wee wrought with labour and trauaile night and day, because wee would not be chargeable to any of you. 4.11.

9 Not because wee haue not authoritie, but that we might make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euen when we were with you, this we warned you of,

That if there were any which would not worke, that he should not eate.

11 For we heare, that there are some which walke among you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are busie bodies.

12 Therefore them that are such, wee warne and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they worke with quietnesse, and eate their owne bread.

13 And ye brethren, be not weary in well doing.

14 If any man obey not this our saying in this letter, note him, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed:

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord himselfe of peace giue you peace alwayes by all meanes. The Lord *be* with you all.

17 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hand, which is the token in euery Epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Thessalonians written from Athens.

¶THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. I.

Setting forth a perfect paterne of a true Pastor, whose office especially consisteth in teaching, 4 *he warneth him, that vaine questions set apart, hee teach those things* 5 *which further charity and faith:* 12 *and that his authority be not condemned,* 14 *he sheweth what an one he is made through the grace of God.*

Or, ordinance.

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the [commandement of God our Sauiour, and of *our* Lord Iesus Christ our hope,

2 Vnto Timotheus *my* naturall sonne in the faith Grace, mercy, *and* peace from God our Father, and *from* Christ Iesus our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, *so doe*, that thou maiest warne some, that they teach none other doctrine,

4 Neither that they giue heed to fables and genealogies, *which* are endlesse, which breed questions rather then godly edifying which is by faith.

Rom.13. 10.

5 For *the ende of the Commandement is loue out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained.

6 From

6 From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling.

7 They would be doctors of the Law, and yet vnderstand not what they speake, neither whereof they affirme.

8 And wee knowe that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully:

9 Knowing this, that the Lawe is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedient, to the vngodly, and to sinners, to the vnholy, and to the prophane, to murtherers of fathers and mothers, to manslayers,

10 To whoremongers, to buggerers, to men stealers, to liars, to the periured, and if there bee any other thing that is contrary to wholesome doctrine,

11 *Which is* according to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which is committed vnto me.

12 Therefore I thanke him which hath made me strong, *that is*, Christ Iesus our Lord: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in *his* seruice:

13 When before I was a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and an oppressour: but I was receiued to mercie: for I did it ignorantly through vnbeliefe.

14 But the grace of our Lorde was exceeding abundant with faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

15 This *is* a true saying, and by all meanes worthy to be receiued, that * Christ Iesus came into the worlde to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe. *Mat.9.13 mar.2.17*

16 Notwithstanding, for this cause I was receiued to mercie, that Iesus Christ should first shew on me all long suffring vnto the ensample of them, which shall in time to come beleeue in him vnto eternall life.

17 Now vnto the King euerlasting, immortall, inuisible, vnto God onely wise, *be* honour *and* glory, for euer and euer. Amen.

18 This commandement commit I vnto thee, sonne Timotheus, according to the prophecies, which went before vpon thee, that thou by them shouldest fight a good fight,

19 Hauing faith and a good conscience, which some haue put away, and as concerning faith, haue made shipwracke.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus, and Alexander, * whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they might learne not to blaspheme. 1.*Cor.5.5*

CHAP. II.

1 *He exhorteth them to make publike prayers for all men,* 4. 5 *and that for two causes:* 8 *and therefore he willeth all men in all places to pray:* 9 *and declareth in what apparell* 11 *and with what modestie women ought to behaue themselues in holy assemblies.*

I Exhort therefore, that first of all supplications, prayers, intercessions, *and* giuing of thanks be made for all men,

2 For kings, and for all that are in authoritie, that we may leade a quiet and a peaceable life, in all godlinesse and honestie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saiour,

4 Who will that all men shall bee saued, and come vnto the acknowledging of the trueth.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour betweene God and man, *which is* the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all men, *to bee* that testimonie in due time.

2.*Tim.*1. 11. 7 * Whereunto I am ordained a preacher and an Apostle (I speake the trueth in Christ, and lie not) *euen* a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that the men pray, euery where lifting vp pure hands, without wrath or doubting.

3.*Pet.*3.3. 9 * Likewise also the women, that they aray themselues in comely apparell, with shamefastnesse and modestie, not with broided haire, or gold, or pearles, or costly apparell,

10 But (as becommeth women that professe the feare of God) with good workes.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection.

2.*Cor.*14. 34. 12 * I permit not a woman to teach, neither to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence.

*Gen.*1.27 *and* 2.7, 21. 13 For * Adam was first formed, then Eue.

14 * And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman was deceiued, and was in the transgression.

*Gen.*3.6. 15 Notwithstanding, through bearing of children she shalbe saued, if they continue in faith, and loue, and holines with modestie.

CHAP. III.

2 Hee setteth out B shops, 8 and Christian Deacons with their wiues, 12 children, and families: 13 Hee calleth the Church the house of God.

THis *is* a true saying, If any man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a worthy worke.

Titus 2.6. 2 * A Bishop therefore must be vnreproueable, the husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, harborous, apt to teach,

3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not couetous,

4 One that can rule his owne house honestly, hauing children vnder obedience with all honestie.

5 For if any cannot rule his owne house, how shall he care for the Church of God?

6 He may not be a yong scholler, lest he being puffed vp fall into the condemnation of the deuill.

7 He must also bee well reported of, euen of them, which are without, lest he fall into rebuke, and the snare of the deuill.

8 Likewise *must* Deacons *be* graue, not double tongued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither vnto filthie lucre,

9 * Hauing the mysterie of the faith in pure conscience. *Cha.1.19*

10 And let them first be proued: then let them minister, if they be found blameless.

11 Likewise their wiues *must bee* honest, not euill speakers, *but* sober *and* faithfull in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, and such as can rule their children well, and their owne households:

13 For they that haue ministred well, get themselues a good degree, and great libertie in the faith, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 These things write I vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vnto thee.

15 But if I tarie long, that thou mayest yet know, how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ground of trueth.

16 And without controuersie, great is the mysterie of godlinesse, *which is*, God is manifested in the flesh, iustified in the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeued on in the world, *and* receiued vp in glory.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He condemneth as well false doctrines* 3 *of marriage and the choice of meates,* 7 *as also prophane fables:* 8 *And commendeth the godly exercise,* 13 *and the dayly reading of the Scripture.*

NOw the Spirit speaketh euidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shall giue heede vnto spirits of errour, and doctrines of deuils,

2 Which speake lies through hypocrisie, and haue their consciences burned with an hote yron,

3 Forbidding to marrie, *and commanding* to abstaine from meates which God hath created to bee receiued with giuing thanks, of them that beleeue and know the trueth.

4 For euery creature of God *is* good, and nothing *ought* to be refused if it be receiued with thanksgiuing.

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt bee a good minister of Iesus Christ, which hast beene nourished vp in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, which thou hast continually followed.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth litle: but godlinesse is profitable vnto all things, which hath the promise of the life present, and of that that is to come.

9 This *is* a true saying, and by all meanes worthy to bee receiued.

10 For therefore we labour and are rebuked, because we trust in the liuing God, which is the Sauiour of all men, specially of those that beleeue.

11 These things warne and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but bee vnto them that beleeue, an example in word, in conuersation, in loue, in spirit, in faith, *and* in pureness.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, *and* to doctrine.

14 Despise not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by prophecie with the laying on of the hands of the company of the Eldership.

15 These things exercise *and* giue thy selfe vnto them, that it may be seene how thou profitest among all men.

16 Take heed vnto thy selfe, and vnto learning, continue therein: for in doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Hauing set down a maner how to rebuke all degrees,* 5 *he entreateth of widowes, who then were chosen for the seruice of the Church:* 17 *Then he commeth to the Elders,* 23 *and speaketh somewhat of the health of the body.*

REbuke not an Elder, but exhort him as a father, *and* the yonger men as brethren.

2 The Elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters, with all pureness.

3 Honour widowes, which are widowes in deed.

4 But if any widow haue children or nephewes, let them learn first to shewe godlinesse toward their owne house, and to recompense their kinred: for that is an honest thing, and acceptable before God.

5 And she that is a widow indeed, & left alone, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liueth in pleasure, is dead, while she liueth.

7 These things therefore warne *them* of, that they may bee blameless.

8 If there be any that prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his household, he denieth the faith, and is worse then an infidell.

9 Let

9 Let not a widow bee taken into the number vnder three score yeere olde, that hath been the wife of one husband,

10 And well reported of for good workes: if she haue nourished her children, if shee haue lodged the strangers, if shee haue washed the Saints feete, if shee haue ministred vnto them which were in aduersitie, if shee were continually giuen vnto euery good worke.

11 But refuse the yonger widowes: for when they haue begun to waxe wanton against Christ, they will marrie,

12 Hauing damnation, because they haue broken the first faith.

13 And likewise also being idle they learne to go about from house to house: yea, *they are* not onely idle, but also pratlers and busibodies, speaking things which are not comely.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women marrie, and beare children and gouerne the house, *and* giue none occasion to the aduersary to speake euill.

15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan.

16 If any faithfull man or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them minister vnto them, and let not the Church be charged, that there may be sufficient for them that are widowes in deede.

17 ¶ The Elders that rule well, let them be had in double honour, specially they which labour in the word and doctrine,

18 For the Scripture saith, *Thou shalt not mouzel the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: and, *The labourer is worthy of his wages. *Deu.25.4. 1 Cor.9.9. Mat.10. 10. Luke 10.7.*

19 Against an Elder receiue none accusation, but vnder two or three witnesses. *Cha.6.13.*

20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly, that the rest also may feare.

21 ¶ I charge *thee* before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, and the Elect Angels, that thou obserue these things without preferring one to another, and do nothing partially.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a little wine for thy stomakes sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand, and goe before vnto iudgement: but some mens follow after.

25 Likewise also the good workes are manifest beforehand, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 He sheweth the duety of seruants, 10 and what a mischieuous euill couetousnesse is: 13 and hauing spoken some what of riche men, he once againe forbiddeth Timothie 20 to cumber himselfe with vaine babblings.

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their maisters worthy of all honour, that the Name of God, and *his* doctrine be not euill spoken of.

2 And they which haue beleeuing maisters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren, but rather do seruice, because they are faithfull, and beloued, and partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, & consenteth not to the wholesome words of our Lord Iesus Christ, and to the doctrine, which is according to godlinesse,

4 He is puft vp, and knoweth nothing, but doteth about questions and strife of words, whereof commeth enuie, strife, railings, euill surmisings,

5 Froward disputations of men of corrupt mindes and destitute of the truth, which thinke that gaine is godlinesse: from such separate thy selfe.

6 But godlinesse is great gaine, if a man be content with that he hath.

7 For we brought nothing into the world, *and* it is certaine, that we can carry nothing out.

8 Therefore when wee haue food and raiment, let vs therewith be content.

9 For they that will be rich, fall into tentation and snares, and into many foolish and noisome lusts, which drowne men in perdition and destruction.

10 For the desire of money is the roote of all euil, which while some lusted after, they erred from the faith, & pierced themselues through with many sorrowes.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience, *and* meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

Cha.5.21. Matt.27 11.Ioh.18. 37.

23 *I charge thee in the sight of God who quickneth all things, and before Iesus Christ which vnder Pontius Pilate * witnessed a good confession,

14 That thou keep *this* commandement without spot, and vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ.

Cha.1.11. ver.17.14 & 19.16. Ioh.1.18

15 Which in due time he shall shew, that is *blessed & Prince onely, the King of kings, and Lord of lords,

16 Who onely hath immortalitie, and dwelleth in the light that none can attaine vnto, *whom neuer man saw, neither can see, vnto whom *be* honour and power euerlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are *rich* in this world, that they bee not hie

bie minded, and that they * truſt not in vncertaine riches, but in the liuing God (which giueth vs abundantly all things to enioy) *Mar.4.19* *luk.12.15*

18 That they doe good, *and* be rich in good workes, *and* ready to diſtribute, and communicate,

19 * Laying vp in ſtore for themſelues a good foundation a- *Mat.6.20.*
gainſt the time to come, that they may obtaine eternall life.

20 O Timotheus, keep that which is committed vnto thee, and auoyd prophane *and* vaine babblings, and oppoſitions of ſcience falſly ſo called,

21 Which whileſome profeſſe they haue erred concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee, Amen.

¶ The firſt *Epiſtle* to Timotheus written from Laodicea, which is the chiefeſt citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. I.

5 He commendeth Timotheus faith, 6 and exhorteth him to goe on faithfully in the charge committed vnto him: 8 and that neither for his bonds, 15 nor the reuolting of others, he faint. 11 He triumpheth of his Apoſtleſhip. 14 He willeth him to haue care of the thing committed vnto him, 16 and praiſeth Oneſiphorus.

PAul an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt by the will of God, according to the promiſe of life which is in Chriſt Ieſus.

2 To Timotheus *my* beloued ſonne: Grace, mercie *and* peace from God the Father, and *from* Ieſus Chriſt our Lord.

3 I thanke God, * whom I ſerue from *mine* elders with pure *Act.22.3*
conſcience, that without ceaſing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Deſiring to ſee thee, mindfull of thy teares, that I may be filled with ioy:

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is in thee, which dwelt firſt in thy grandmother Lois, & in thy mother Eunice, and am aſſured that *it dwelleth* in thee alſo.

6 Wherefore, I put thee in remembrance that thou ſtirre vp the gift of God, which is in thee, by the putting on of mine hands.

7 For God hath not giuen to vs the ſpirit of feare, but of power, and of loue, and of a ſound mind.

8 Bee not therefore aſhamed of the teſtimony of our Lorde, neither

neither of me his prisoner: but be partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel, according to the power of God,

1.Cor. 1.2 Tit. 3.5 Rom. 16. 25.ephes. 1.4.colos. 1.26.tit. 1.2. 1.Tim.2.7

9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with an * holy calling, not according to our *workes, but according to his owne purpose and grace, which was giuen vs through Christ Iesus before the *world was,

10 But now is made manifest by that appearing of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortalitie vnto light through the Gospel,

11 * Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, & Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things, but I am not ashamed: for I know whom I haue beleeued, and I am perswaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed to him against that day.

13 Keepe the true paterne of the wholsome words, which thou hast heard of me in faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 That worthy thing which was committed to thee, keepe through the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia bee turned from me: of which sort are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord giue mercie vnto the house of Onesiphorus: for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine.

17 But when he was at Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found *me*.

18 The Lord grant vnto him, that he may find mercie with the Lord at that day: and in how many things he hath ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

2 The better set to out perseuerance in the Christian warfare, 3 he taketh similitudes 4 from souldiers, 6 and from husbandmen. 10 He sheweth that his bonds are for the profit of the Saints: 15 Then he warneth Timothy to diuide the word of truth aright, 17 to beware of the examples of the wicked, 22 and to do all things modestly.

THou therefore, my sonne, bee strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus.

2 And what things thou hast heard of me by many witnesses, the same deliuer to faithful men, which shal be able to teach other also.

3 Thou therefore suffer affliction as a good souldier of Iesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth himselfe with the affaires of

of the life, because he would please him that hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if any man also striue for a masterie, he is not crowned except he striue as he ought to doe.

6 The husbandman must labour before he receiue the fruits.

7 Consider what I say: and the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in all things.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ *made* of the seed of Dauid was raised againe from the dead, according to my Gospel,

9 Wherein I suffer troubles as an euil doer, euen vnto bonds, but the word of God is not bound,

10 Therefore I suffer all things for the elects sake, that they might also obtaine the salnation which is in Christ Iesus, with eternall glory.

11 *It is* a true saying, For if wee bee * dead together *with him*, we also shall liue together *with him*. *Rom.6.5*

12 If we suffer, we shall also raigne together *with him*: * If we denie *him*, he also will denie vs. *Matt. 10 33. marke 8.38.*

13 If * we beleeue not *yet* abideth he faithfull: he cannot denie himselfe. *Rom.3.3 and 9.6*

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, and protest before the Lord, that they striue not about words, which is to no profit, *but* to the peruerting of the hearers.

15 Studie to shew thy selfe approoued vnto God, a workeman that needeth not to be ashamed, diuiding ỹ word of truth aright.

16 Stay prophane and vaine babblings: for they shall encrease vnto more vngodlinesse.

17 And their word shall fret as a canker: of which sort is Hymeneus and Philetus,

18 Which as concerning the truth haue erred from the marke, saying that the resurrection is past already, and doe destroy the faith of certaine.

19 But the foundation of God remaineth sure, and hath this seale, The Lord knoweth who are his: and, Let euery one that calleth on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquitie.

20 Notwithstanding in a great house are not onely vessels of gold and of siluer, but also of wood and earth, and * some for honour, and some for dishonour. *Ro.9.21*

21 If any man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shall be a vessel vnto honour, sanctified, and meete for the Lord, and prepared vnto euery good worke.

22 Flee also from the lusts of youth, and follow after righteousnesse, faith, loue, *and* peace, with them that * call on the Lord with pure heart, *1.Cor.1.2*

23 * And

1.Tim.1. 4.and 1.4.7. titus 3.9.

23 *And put away fooliſh and vnlearned queſtions, knowing
that they ingender ſtrife.
24 But the ſeruant of the Lord muſt not ſtriue, but *muſt* be gentle toward all men, apt to teach, ſuffering the euill,
25 Inſtructing them with meekeneſſe that are contrary minded, *proouing* if God at any time will giue them repentance, that they may acknowledge the truth,
26 And come to amendment out of that ſnare of the deuil, of whom they are taken priſoners, to *doe* his will.

CHAP. III.

1 He foretelleth the dangerous times that are to enſue: 9 but with the certaine hope of victorie, 10 hee encourageth him to the combat, 14 ſetting out ſpecially the triall of ſound doctrine.

1.Tim.4.1 2.pet.3.3. iude 18.

THis know alſo, that in the* laſt daies ſhall come perillous
times.
2 For men ſhall bee louers of their owne ſelues, couetous, boaſters, proud, curſed ſpeakers, diſobedient to parents, vnthankfull, vnholy,
3 Without naturall affection, trucebreakers, falſe accuſers, intemperate, fierce, no louers at all of them which are good,
4 Traitours, heady, hie minded, louers of pleaſures more then louers of God,
5 Hauing a ſhew of godlineſſe, but haue denied the power thereof: turne away therefore from ſuch.
6 For of this ſort are they which creepe into houſes, and lead captiue ſimple women, laden with ſinnes, and led with diuers luſts,
7 *Which women are* euer learning, and are neuer able to come to the acknowledging of the truth.

Exo.7.11

8 *And as Iannes and Iambres withſtood Moſes, ſo do theſe alſo reſiſt the truth, men of corrupt mindes, reprobate concerning the faith.
9 But they ſhall preuaile no longer: for their madneſſe ſhall be euident vnto all men, as their's alſo was.
10 ¶But thou haſt fully knowen my doctrine, maner of liuing, purpoſe, faith, long ſuffering, loue, patience,
11 Perſecutions, *and* afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, and at Lyſtri, which perſecutions I ſuffered: but from them all the Lord deliuered me.
12 Yea and all that will liue godly in Chriſt Ieſus, ſhall ſuffer perſecution.
13 But the euill men and deceiuers, ſhall waxe worſe & worſe, deceiuing, and being deceiued.
14 But continue thou in the things which thou haſt learned, and

and which are committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou hast learned *t'em:*

15 And that thou hast knowen the holy Scriptures of a child, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through the faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 *For the whole Scripture *is* giuen by inspiration of God, 2.*Pet.*1. and *is* profitable to teach, to conuince, to correct, *and* to instruct in 20. righteousnesse,

17 That the man of God may be absolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He chargeth him to preach the Gospel with all diligence,* 3 *in these so miserable time:* 6 *That his death is hard at hand,* 8 *yet so, that as a conquerour, he maketh haste to a glorious triumph:* 10 *He sheweth the cause why he sendeth for Timothy,* 11 *euen by reason of his present state.*

I Charge thee therefore before God, and *before* the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, and in his kingdome,

2 Preach the word: be instant, in season and out of season: improoue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come, when they will not suffer wholesome doctrine: but hauing their eares itching, shall after their owne lusts get them an heape of teachers,

4 And shall turne their eares from the truth, and shall be giuen vnto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things: suffer aduersitie: do the worke of an Euangelist: cause thy ministerie to be throughly liked of.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departing is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, and haue finished *my* course: I haue kept the faith.

8 *For* henceforth is laid vp for mee the crowne of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous iudge shall giue mee at that day: and not to me onely, but vnto all them also that loue that his appearing.

9 Make speed to come vnto mè at once:

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, and hath embraced this present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica. Crescens *is gone* to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

11 *Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with *Coloss.*4. thee: for he is profitable vnto me to ministèr. 10,14.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloake that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest,

commest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parch-
ments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith hath done me much euill: the
Lord reward him according to his workes.

15 Of whom bethou ware also: for he withstood our preach-
ing sore.

16 At my first answering no man assisted me, but all forsooke
me: *I pray God*, that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted mee, and strengthened
mee, that by me the preaching might be fully beleeued, and that
all the Gentiles should heare: and I was deliuered out of the
mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord will deliuer me from euery euill worke, and
will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whom *be* praise
for euer and euer, Amen.

Chap.1.16 19 Salute Prisca, and Aquila, & the* household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum
sicke.

21 Make speed to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee,
and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with
you, AMEN.

¶ The second *Epistle* written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the
first Bishop elected of the Church of Ephesus, when Paul
was presented the second time before the Emperour Nero.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to Titus.

CHAP. I.

*6 He sheweth what kind of men ought to be chosen Ministers, 10
how vnsatiable babblers mouthes should be stopped: 12 and through
this occasion he toucheth the nature of the Cretians, 14 and the
Iewes, who put holinesse in outward things.*

PAVL a seruant of God, and an Apostle of IESVS
CHRIST, according to the faith of Gods elect,
and the knowledging of the truth, which is accor-
Ro.16.25. ding to godlinesse,
ephes.3.9. 2 Vnto the hope of eternall life, which God that
colos.1.26 cannot lie, hath promised before the *world began:
2.tim.1.9 3 But hath made his word manifest in due time through the
1.pet.1.20 preaching which is * committed vnto me, according to the com-
Gala.1.1 mandement of God our Sauiour:

4 To

4 To Titus *my* naturall ſonne according to the common faith, Grace, mercie, *and* peace from God the Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt our Sauiour.

5 For this cauſe left I thee in Creta, that thou ſhouldeſt continue to redreſſe the things that remaine, and ſhouldeſt ordaine Elders in euery citie, as I haue appointed thee,

6 *If any be vnreprooueable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not ſlandered of ryot, neither are diſobedient. 1. Tim. 3. 2

7 For a Biſhop muſt be vnreproueable, as Gods ſteward, not ſtoward, not angrie, not giuen to wine, no ſtriker, not giuen to filthy lucre,

8 But harberous, one that loueth goodneſſe, wiſe, righteous, holy, temperate,

9 Holding faſt that faithfull word according to doctrine, that he alſo may be able to exhort with wholeſome doctrine, and conuince them that ſay againſt it.

10 For there are many diſobedient and vaine talkers and deceiuers of minds, chiefly they of the circumciſion,

11 Whoſe mouthes muſt bee ſtopped, which ſubuert whole houſes, teaching things, w̄ they ought not, for filthy lucres ſake.

12 One of themſelues, *euen* one of their owne prophets ſaid, The Cretians *are* alwaies lyars, euill beaſts, ſlow bellies.

13 This witneſſe is true: wherefore conuince them ſharply, that they may be found in the faith,

14 And not taking heed to the * Iewiſh fables and commandements of men, that turne away from the truth. 1. Tim. 1. 4

15 Vnto the pure *are* all things pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnbeleeuing, *is* nothing pure, but euen their minds and conſciences are defiled. Rom. 14 28.

16 They profeſſe that they know God, but by works they denie *him*, and are abominable and diſobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

CHAP. II.

He ſetteth out the duties of ſundry perſons and ſtates, 6 and willeth them to inſtruct the Church in maners. 11 He draweth an argument from the end of our redemption, 12 which is, that we liue godly and vprightly.

BVt ſpeake thou the things which become wholeſome doctrine.

2 That the elder men be watchfull, graue, temperate, ſound in the faith, in loue, *and* in patience:

3 The elder women likewiſe, that they be in ſuch behauiour as becommeth holineſſe, not falſe accuſers, not ſubiect to much wine, *but* teachers of honeſt things,

4 That

4 That they may instruct the yong women to bee sober min-
ded, that they loue their husbands, that they loue their children,
5 That they be temperate, chaste, keeping at home, good and
Eph.5.22. *subiect vnto their husbands, that the word of God bee not euill
spoken of.
6 Exhort yong men likewise, that they be sober minded.
7 In all things shew thy selfe an ensample of good workes,
with vncorrupt doctrine, with grauitie, integritie,
8 And with the wholesome word, which can not be condem-
ned, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing nothing
concerning you to speake euill of.
Eph.6.5. 9 *Let seruants be subiect to their masters, and please them in
colos.3.22 all things, not answering againe,
1.pet.2.18 10 Neither pikers, but that they shew all good faithfulnes, that
they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in all things,
1.Cor.1.2 11 *For that grace of God, that bringeth saluation vnto all
colos.1.22 men, hath appeared,
12 And teacheth vs that wee should denie vngodlinesse and
worldly lusts, and that we should liue soberly and righteously and
godly in this present world,
13 Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of that glory
of that mightie God, and of our Sauiour Iesus Christ,
14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that he might redeeme vs from
all iniquitie, and purge vs *to be a peculiar people vnto himselfe,
zealous of good workes.
15 These things speake, and exhort, and conuince with all au-
thoritie. See that no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

*1 He willeth that all generally be put in mind to reuerence such as
be in authoritie. 3 That they remember their former life, and at-
tribute all iustification to grace: 9 And if any brabler with-
stand these things, 10 he willeth that he be reiected.*

Rom.13.1 PVt them in remembrance that they *bee subiect to the Princi-
2.pet.2.13 palities and powers, *and* that they be obedient, *and* ready to
euery good worke.
2 That they speake euill of no man, that they bee no fighters,
but soft, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men.
2.Cor.6. 21. 3 *For we our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedi-
ent, deceiued, seruing the lusts and diuers pleasures, liuing in ma-
liciousnesse, and enuie, hatefull, *and* hating one another.
4 But when that bountifulnesse and that loue of God our Sa-
uiour toward man appeared,
2.Tim.1.9 5 *Not by the workes of righteousnesse, which we had done,
but

but according to his mercie hee ſaued vs, by the waſhing of the new birth, and the renewing of the holy Ghoſt.

6 Which he ſhed on vs abundantly, through Ieſus Chriſt our Sauiour,

7 That we, being iuſtified by his grace ſhould be made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This *is* a true ſaying, and theſe things I will thou ſhouldeſt affirme, that they which haue beleeued God, might be carefull to ſhew foorth good workes. Theſe things *are* good and profitable vnto men.

9 *But ſtay fooliſh queſtions, & genealogies and contentions, and brawlings abont the Law: for they are vnprofitable & vaine. 1.Tim.1.4. and 4.7. 2.Tim.2. 23.

10 Reiect him that is an heretike, after once or twice admonition.

11 Knowing that hee that is ſuch, is peruerted and ſinneth, being damned of his owne ſelfe.

12 When I ſhall ſend Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come to me vnto Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Lawe, and Apollos on their iourney diligently, that they lacke nothing.

14 And let ours alſo learne to ſhew foorth good workes for neceſſary vſes, that they be not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are with me, ſalute thee. Greete them that loue vs in the faith. Grace *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ To Titus ele&the firſt Biſhop of the Church of the Cretians, written from Nicopolis in Macedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF Paul to Philemon.

1 *Paul handling a baſe and ſmall matter, yet according to his manner mounteth aloft vnto God. 8 Sending againe to Philemon his vagabond and theeuiſh ſeruant, hee entreateth pardon for him, and very gravely preacheth of Chriſtian equitie.*

PAul a priſoner of Ieſus Chriſt, and *our* brother Timotheus, vnto Philemon our deare friend, and fellow helper,

2 And to *our* deare *ſiſter* Apphia, and to Archippus our fellow ſouldier, and to the Church that is in thine houſe:

3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

1.Thes.1.2 2.Thes.1.3. 4 I * giue thankes to God, making mention alwayes of thee in my prayers,

5 (When I heard of thy loue and faith which thou haſt toward the Lord Ieſus, and toward all Saints)

6 That the fellowſhip of thy faith may be made effectuall, and that whatſoeuer good thing is in you through Chriſt Ieſus, may be knowen.

7 For we haue great ioy and conſolation in thy loue, becauſe by thee, brother, the Saints bowels are comforted.

8 Wherefore, though I be very bold in Chriſt to command thee that which is conuenient,

9 *Yet* for loues ſake I rather beſeech thee, though I be as I am, euen Paul aged, and euen now a priſoner for Ieſus Chriſt.

Col.4.9. 10 I beſeech thee for my ſonne * Onefimus, whom I haue begotten in my bonds,

11 Which in times paſt was to thee vnprofitable, but now profitable both to thee and to mee,

12 Whom I haue ſent againe: thou therefore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whom I would haue retained with me, that in thy ſtead he might haue miniſtred vnto me in the bonds of the Goſpel.

14 But without thy mind would I doe nothing, that thy benefite ſhould not be as it were of neceſſitie, but willingly.

15 It may be, that he therefore departed for a ſeaſon, that thou ſhouldeſt receiue him for euer,

16 Not now as a ſeruant, but aboue a ſeruant, *euen as* a brother beloued, ſpecially to me: how much more then vnto thee, both in the fleſh, and in the Lord?

17 If therefore thou count our things common, receiue him as my ſelfe.

18 If hee hath hurt thee, or oweth thee ought, that put on mine accounts.

19 I Paul haue written *this* with mine owne hand: I will recompenſe it, albeit I doe not ſay to thee, that thou oweſt moreouer vnto mee, euen thine owne ſelfe.

20 Yea, brother, let mee obtaine this pleaſure of thee in the Lord: comfort my bowels in the Lord.

21 Truſting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt doe euen more then I ſay.

22 Moreouer alſo prepare mee lodging: for I truſt through your prayers, I ſhall be freely giuen vnto you.

23 There ſalute thee Epaphras my fellow priſoner in Chriſt Ieſus,

24 Marcus, Ariſtarchus, Demas, *and* Luke, my fellow helpers.

25 The

25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *bee* with your spirit, AMEN.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, *and sent* by Onesimus a seruant.

¶ THE EPISTLE TO the Hebrewes.

¶ The drift and end of this Epistle, is to shew that Iesus Christ the Sonne of God both God and man, is that true eternall and onely Prophet, King, & high Priest, that was shadowed by the figures of the old Law, and is now indeede exhibited: of whom the whole Church ought to be taught, gouerned, and sanctified.

CHAP. I.

1 *To shew that the doctrine which Christ brought is most excellent, in that it is the knitting vp of all prophecies,* 4 *he aduanceth him aboue the Angels:* 10 *And proueth by diuers testimonies of the Scriptures, that he farre passeth all other.*

GOd sundry times, and in diuers manners spake in the old time to *our* fathers by the Prophets: in these last dayes, he hath spoken vnto vs by his Sonne,

2 Whom he hath made heire of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

3 * Who being the brightnesse of the glory, and the ingrauen forme of his person, and bearing vp all things by his mighty word, hath by himselfe purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand of the Maiestie, in the highest places, *Col.1.15.*

4 And is made so much more excellent then the Angels, in as much as he hath obtained a more excellent Name then they.

5 For vnto which of the Angels said hee at any time, * Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee? and againe, * I will bee his Father, and he shall be my Sonne? *Chap.5.5. psal.2.7. 2.Sam.7.*

6 And againe, when hee bringeth in his first begotten Sonne into the world, hee saith, * And let all the Angels of God worship him. *14.1.Chr. 22.10. Psal.97.7.*

7 And of the Angels he saith, * He maketh the Spirits his messengers, and his ministers a flame of fire. *Psal.104. 4.*

8 But vnto the Sonne *he saith*, * O God, thy throne *is* for euer and euer: the scepter of thy kingdom *is a* scepter of righteousnes. *Psal.45.7.*

9 Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniquitie. Wherfore God, *euen* thy God hath anointed thee with the oile of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes.

Psal.102. 25. 10 And, *Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast established the earth, and the heauens are the workes of thine hands.

11 They shall perish, but thou doest remaine: and they all shal waxe old as doth a garment,

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shal not faile.

Psa.110.1 1.cor.15. 25.chap. 10,12,13. 13 Vnto which also of the Angels said he at any time, * Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole?

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent foorth to minister for their sakes which shall be heires of saluation?

CHAP. II.

1 Thereof hee inferreth, that good heede must be giuen to Christs doctrine: 9 And he setteth him out vnto vs euen as our brother in our flesh, that we may with a good will yeeld vp our selues wholy vnto him.

WHerefore, we ought diligently to giue heede to the things which we haue heard, lest at any time we runne out.

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was stedfast, and euery transgression and disobedience receiued a iust recompence of reward,

3 How shall we escape, if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be preached by the Lord, and *afterward* was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard him,

Marke 16 20. 4 * God bearing witnesse thereto, both with signes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, and gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will?

5 For he hath not put in subiection vnto the Angels the world to come, whereof we speake.

Psal.8.6. 6 But *one in a certaine place witnessed, saying, What is man, that thou shouldest be mindfull of him? or the sonne of man, that thou woudest consider him?

7 Thou madest him a litle inferiour to the Angels: thou crowneste him with glory and honour, and hast set him aboue the works of thine hands.

1.Cor.15. 27. 8 * Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder his feete. And in that he hath put all things in subiection vnder him, hee left nothing that should not be subiect vnto him. But we yet see not all things subdued vnto him.

Phil.2.8. 9 But wee see Iesus crowned with glory and honour, * which was made a little inferiour to the Angels, through the suffering of death, that by Gods grace he might taste death for all men.

10 For it became him, for whom *are* all these things, and by whom *are* all these things, seeing that he brought many children vnto

vnto glory, that he should consecarte the Prince of their saluation through afflictions.

11 For he that sanctifieth, and they which are sanctified, *are* all of one: wherefore he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, * I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren: in the mids of the Church will I sing praises vnto thee. *Psal.* 22. 25.

13 And againe, * I will put my trust in him. And againe, * Behold, here am I, and the children which God hath giuen me. *Psal.* 18. 2. *Esa.* 8. 18.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, hee also himselfe likewise tooke part with them, that hee might destroy * through death, him that had the power of death, that is the deuill, *Hos.* 13. 14. *1. cor.*

15 And that hee might deliuer all them, which for feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage. 15. 55.

16 For he in no sort tooke on *him* the Angels *nature*, but hee tooke on *him* the seede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behooued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might be mercifull, and a faithfull hie Priest in things concerning God, that hee might make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that he suffered, and was tempted, hee is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Now he sheweth how farre more iour Moses is to Christ: 5. & euen so much as the seruant to the master: and so he bringeth in certain exhortations and threatnings taken out of Dauid. 8 against such as either stubbornely resist, 12 or else are very slow to obey.

THerefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly vocation, consider the Apostle and high Priest of our profession Christ Iesus:

2 Who was faithfull to him that hath appointed him, euen as * Moses *was* in all his house. *Num.* 12. 7.

3 For this man is counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as he which hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is builded of some man, and hee that hath built all things *is* God.

5 Now Moses verely was faithfull in all his house as a seruant, for a witnesse of the things which should be spoken after.

6 But Christ *is* as the Sonne ouer his owne house, whose house we are, if we hold fast that confidence and that reioycing of that hope vnto the end.

7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if yee shall heare his voice, *Chap.* 4. 7. *Psal.* 95. 8

8 Harden not your hearts as in the prouocation, according to the day of the tentation in the wildernesse,

9 Where your fathers tempted me, prooued me, and saw my workes fourty yeeres long.

10 Wherefore I was grieued with that generation, and sayd, They erre euer in *their* heart, neither haue they knowen my waies.

11 Therefore I sware in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest

12 Take heede, brethren, lest at any time there bee in any of you an euill heart, and vnfaithfull, to depart away from the liuing God.

13 But exhort one another dayly, while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we keepe sure vnto the end that beginning wherewith we are vpholden,

15 So long as it is said, To day if ye will heare his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation.

16 For some when they heard, prouoked him to anger, howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he displeased fourty yeeres? Was hee not displeased with them that sinned, * whose carkeises fell in the wildernesse? *Num. 14. 37.*

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but vnto them that obeyed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He ioyneth exhortation with threatning, lest they, euen as their fathers were, bee depriued of the rest offered vnto them, 11 but that they endeuour to enter into it: 14 And so hee beginneth to intreate of Christs Priesthood.

LEt vs feare therefore, lest at any time by forsaking the promise of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to bee depriued.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also vnto them: but the word that they heard profited not them, because it was not mixed with faith in those that heard it.

3 For we which haue beleeued doe enter into rest, as he sayd *to the other*, * As I haue sworne in my wrath: If they shall enter into my rest: although the workes were finished from the foundation of the world. *Psal. 95. 11.*

4 For hee spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this wise, * And God did rest the seuenth day, from all his workes. *Gen. 2. 2. deut. 5. 14*

5 And in this place againe, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter there-

into,

into, and they to whom it was first preached, entred not therein, for vnbeliefes sake:

7 Againe hee appointed in Dauid a certaine day, by To day, after so long time, saying, as it is said, * This day, if yee heare his voyce, harden not your hearts. *Chap.3.7.*

8 For if ‖ Iesus had given them rest, then would he not after this haue spoken of another day. ‖ *Meaning Iosua.*

9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hath also ceased from his owne workes, as God *did* from his.

11 Let vs study therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of disobedience.

12 For the word of God *is* liuely, and mighty in operation, and sharper then any two edged sword, and entreth through, euen vnto the diuiding asunder of the soule and the spirit, and of the ioynts, and the marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts, and the intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifest in his sight: but all things *are* naked and open vnto his eyes, with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that we haue a great high Priest, which is entred into heauen, *euen* Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs hold fast our profession.

15 For wee haue not an high Priest, that cannot bee touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like sort, *yet* without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore go boldly vnto the throne of grace, that we may receiue mercie, and finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

CHAP. V.

1 *First hee sheweth the duety of the high Priest:* 5 *Secondly, that Christ is appointed of God to be our high Priest,* 7 *and that hee hath fulfilled all things belonging thereunto.*

FOr euery high Priest is taken from among men, and is ordayned for men, in things pertaining to God, that hee may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes,

2 Which is able sufficiently to haue compassion on them that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, because that he also is compassed with infirmitie,

3 And for the same sake hee is bound to offer for sinnes, as well for his owne part, as for the peoples.

4 * And no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but hee that is called of God, as *was* Aaron. *1.Chr.23. 10.and 23*

5 So likewise Christ tooke not to himselfe this honour, to bee

Chap.1.5. made the high Priest, but he that said vnto him, * Thou art my
Psal.2.7. Sonne, this day begate I thee, *gaue is him.*
Chap.7.17 6 As he also in another place speaketh, * Thou art a Priest for
Psal.110.4 euer after the order of Melchi-sedec.

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh did offer vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying, and teares vnto him, that was able to saue him from death, & was also heard in that which he feared,

8 And though he were the Sonne, yet learned hee obedience, by the things which he suffered,

9 And being consecrate, was made the author of eternall salvation vnto all them that obey him:

10 And is called of God an hie Priest after the order of Melchi-sedec.

11 Of whom wee haue many things to say, which are hard to be vttered, because ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when as concerning the time yee ought to bee teachers, yet haue ye need againe that we teach you what *are* the first principles of the word of God: and are become such as haue neede of milke, and not of strong meate.

13 For euery one that vseth milke, is inexpert in the word of righteousnesse, for he is a babe.

14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are of age, which through long custome haue their wits exercised to discerne both good and euill.

CHAP. VI.

1 He briefly toucheth the childish slothfulnesse of the Hebrewes, 4 and terrifieth them with seuere threatnings: 7 he stirreth them vp to indeauour in time to go forward: 9 he hopeth wel of them. 13 Hee alledgeth Abrahams example: 17 and compareth faith that taketh hold on the word, 19 vnto an anchre.

THerefore leauing the doctrine of the beginning of Christ, let vs be led forward vnto perfection, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead workes, and of faith toward God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and laying on of hands, and of the resurrection from the dead, and of eternall iudgement,

3 And this will we doe, if God permit.

Chap.10. 4 * For it is impossible, that they which were once lightened,
26. matt. and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of
12.45. the holy Ghost,
2 pet.2.20 5 And haue tasted of the good worde of God, and of the powers of the world to come,

6 If they fall away, should be renewed againe by repentance: seeing they crucifie againe to themselues the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him.

7 For

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiueth blessing of God.

8 But that which beareth thornes and briers, *is* reprooued, and is neere vnto cursing, whose end *is* to be burned.

9 But beloued, we haue perswaded our selues better things of you, and such as accompany saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God *is* not vnrighteous, that hee should forget your worke, and labour of loue, which ye shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministred vnto the Saints, and *yet* minister.

11 And wee desire that euery one of you shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the end,

12 That yee be not slouthfull, but followers of them which through faith and patience inherite the promises.

13 For when God made the promise to Abraham, because hee had no greater to sweare by, he sware by himselfe,

14 Saying, *Surely I will abundantly blesse thee, and multiply thee marueilously. *Gen. 12.3 and 17.4. and 22.17*

15 And so after that he had tarried patiently, he enioyed the promise.

16 For men verely sweare by him that is greater *then themselues*, and an othe for confirmation is among them an end of all strife.

17 So God willing more abundantly to shew vnto the heires of promise the stablenesse of his counsell, bound himselfe by an oth,

18 That by two immutable things, wherein it is vnpossible that God should lie, wee might haue strong consolation, which haue our refuge to lay hold vpon that hope that is set before vs,

19 Which *hope* we haue as an ancre of the soule, both sure and stedfast, and it entreth into that which is within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entred in, *euen* Iesus, that is made an high Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 *He hath hitherto stirred them vp to marke diligently what things are to be considered in Melchi-sedec,* 15 *wherein hee is like vnto Christ.* 20 *Wherefore the Law should giue place to the Gospel.*

FOr this Melchi-sedec *was King of Salem, the Priest of the most high God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him: *Gen. 14. 18.*

2 To whom also Abraham gaue the tithe of all things: who first is by interpretation King of righteousnesse: after that *he is* also King of Salem, that is, King of peace,

3 Without Father, without mother, without kinred, and hath neither

neither beginning of *his* dayes, neither end of life: but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for euer.

4 Now consider how great this man *was*, vnto whome euen the Patriarch Abraham gaue the tithe of spoiles.

5 For verely they which are the children of Leui, which re-
Nu.18.21 ceiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a * commandement to take according to the Law, tithes of the people (that is, of their brethren) though they came out of the loines of Abraham.

6 But hee whose kinred is not counted among them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction the lesse is blessed of the greater.

8 And here men that die receiue tithes: but there he *receiueth them*, of whom it is witnessed that he liueth.

9 And to say as the thing is, Leui also which receiueth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loines of his father *Abraham*, when Melchi-sedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection had been by the Priesthood of the Leuites (for vnder it the law was established to the people) what needed it furthermore, that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchi-sedec, and not to be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For if the Priesthood bee changed, then of necessitie must there be a change of the Law.

13 For hee of whome these things are spoken, pertaineth vnto another tribe, whereof no man serued at the Altar.

14 For it is euident, *that* our Lord sprung out of Iudah, concerning the which tribe Moses spake nothing touching the Priesthood.

15 And it is yet a more euident thing, because that after the similitude of Melchi-sedec there is risen vp another Priest,

16 Which is not made *Priest* after the law of the carnal commandement, but after the power of the endlesse life.

Chap.5.6. 17 For he testifieth *thus*, * Thou art a Priest for euer after the
Ps.110.4. order of Melchi-sedec,

18 For the commandement that went afore, is disanulled, because of the weakenesse thereof, and vnprofitablenesse.

19 For he Law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope *made perfit*, whereby we draw neere vnto God.

20 And forasmuch as it is not without an othe (for these are made Priests without an othe:

21 But this *is made* with an othe by him that said vnto him,
Ps.110.4. * The Lord hath sworne, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec)

22 By so much is Iesus made a suretie of a better Testament.

23 And

23 And among them many were made Priests, because they were not suffered to endure, by the reason of death.

24 But this man, because he endureth euer, hath a Priesthood which cannot passe from one to another.

25 Wherfore, he is able also perfectly to saue them that come vnto God by him, seeing hee euer liueth, to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high Priest it became vs to haue, *which is* holy, harmelesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heauens:

27 Which needeth not dayly as those high Priests to offer vp sacrifice, * first for his own sinnes, and then for the peoples: for that did he onee, when he offered vp himselfe. *Leuit. 16. 11.*

28 For the Law maketh men hie priests, which haue infirmity: but the word of the othe that was since the Lawe, *maketh* the Sonne, who is consecrate for euermore.

CHAP. VIII.

1 To proue more certainely that the ceremonies of the Law are abrogated, 5 he sheweth that they were appointed to serue the heauenly paterne. 8 He bringeth in the place of Ieremy, 15 to proue the amendment of the old couenant.

NOw of the things which wee haue spoken *this is* the summe, that we haue such an hie Priest, that sitteth at the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in heauens,

2 And *is* a minister of the Sanctuary, and of that true Tabernacle which the Lord pight, and not man.

3 For euery high Priest is ordeined to offer both gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it was of necessitie, that this man should haue some what also to offer.

4 For he were not a Priest, if he were not on the earth, seeing there are Priests that according to the Law offer gifts,

5 Who serue vnto the paterne and shadow of heauenly things as Moses was warned by God, when hee was about to finish the Tabernacle. *See, said he, that thou make all things according to the paterne, shewed to thee in the mount. *Exod. 29. 40. act. 7. 44.*

6 But now *our high Priest* hath obtained a more excellent office, in as much as he is the Mediator of a better Testament, which is established vpon better promises.

7 For if that first *Testament* had been vnblameable, no place should haue been sought for the second. *Chap. 10. 16. ieue.*

8 For in rebuking them, he saith, *Behold the dayes wil come 31. 31. 32. saith the Lord, when I shal make with the house of Israel, and with 33. 34. the house of Iuda a new Testament: vers. 11.*

9 Not like the Testament that I made with their Fathers, in 27. the

the day that I tooke them by the hand, to leade them out of the land of Egypt: for they continued not in my Testament, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the Testament that I will make with the house of Israel, After those dayes, sayth the Lord, I wil put my Lawes in their minde, and in their heart I will write them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

11 And they shal not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shal know me, from the least of them to the greatest of them.

12 For I will be mercifull to their vnrighteousnesse, and I will remember their sinnes and their iniquities no more.

13 In the he saith a new *Testament*, he hath abrogate ȳ old: now that which is disanalled and waxed old is ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

Comparing the forme of the Tabernacle, 10 & the ceremonies of the Law, 11 vnto the trueth set out in Christ, 15 he concludeth that now there is no more neede of another Priest, 24 Because Christ himselfe hath fulfilled these dueties vnder the new couenat.

THen the first *Testament* had also ordinances of religion, and a wordly Sanctuary.

2 For the first Tabernacle was made, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread, which *Tabernacle* is called the holy places.

3 And after the second vaile was the Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all,

4 Which had the golden censer, and the Arke of the Testament ouerlaid round about with golde, wherein the golden pot which had Manna, was, and * Aarons rod that had budded, and the * tables of the Testament.

5 *And ouer the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seate: of which things we will not now speake particulary.

6 Now when these things were thus ordeined, the Priest went alwayes into the first tabernacle, and accomplished the seruice.

7 But into the second went the * hie Priest alone, once euery yeere, not without blood which hee offered for himselfe, and for the ignorances of the people,

8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that the way into the Holiest of all was not yet opened, while as yet the first tabernacle was standing.

9 Which was a figure for that present time, wherein were offered giftes and sacrifices that could not make holy, concerning the conscience, him that did the seruice.

10 Which

Nu.17.10
1.King.8.
9.2.cor.
5.10.
Exod.25.
22.
Exod.30.
10.levit.
16.2.

10 Which only stood in meates and drinkes, and diuers washings, and carnall rites, which were inioyned, vntill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an hie Priest of good things to come, by a greater and a more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is, not of this building,

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood entred he in once into the holy place, and obteined eternal redemption *for vs*.

13 * For if the blood of bulles and goates, and the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling them that are vncleane, sanctifieth as touching the purifying of the flesh, *Leuit.16. 14. num. 19. 4.*

14 How much more shall the *blood of Christ, which through the eternall Spirit offered himselfe without fault to God, * purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God? *1. Pet.1. 19.1.ioh. 1.7. verse.*

15 And for this cause is hee the Mediatour of the newe Testament, that through * death which was for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* in the former testament they which were called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance. *1.5. Luk.1.74 Rom 5.6. 1.pet.3.18*

16 For where a Testament *is*, there must bee the death of him that made the Testament.

17 * For the Testament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it, is aliue. *Gal.3.15.*

18 Wherefore neither was the first ordeined without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to the people, according to the Law, hee tooke the blood of calues and of goates, with water and purple wooll, and hysope, and sprinkled both the booke and all the people,

20 * Saying, This is the blood of the Testament, which God hath appointed vnto you. *Exo.24.8.*

21 Moreouer, hee sprinkled likewise the Tabernacle with blood also, and all the ministring vessels.

22 And almost all things are by the Lawe purged with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was then necessary, that the similitude of heauenly things should bee purified with such things: but the heauenly things themselues *are purified* with better sacrifices then are these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places that are made with hands, which are similitudes of the true *Sanctuary*: but *is entred* into euery heauen, to appeare now in the sight of God for vs.

25 Not that hee should offer himselfe often, as the high Priest entred into the Holy place euery yeere with other blood.

26 (For then must he haue often suffered since the foundation of the

the day that I tooke them by the hand, to leade them out of the land of Egypt: for they continued not in my Testament, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the Testament that I will make with the house of Israel, After those dayes, sayth the Lord, I wil put my Lawes in their minde, and in their heart I will write them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

11 And they shal not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying. Know the Lord: for all shal know me, from the least of them to the greatest of them.

12 For I will be mercifull to their vnrighteousnesse, and I will remember their sinnes and their iniquities no more.

13 In the he saith a new *Testament*, he hath abrogate ȳ old: now that which is disanulled and waxed old is ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

Comparing the forme of the Tabernacle, 10 *& the ceremonies of the Law,* 11 *vnto the trueth set out in Christ,* 15 *he concludeth that now the e is no more neede of another Priest,* 24 *Because Christ himselfe hath fulfilled these dueties vnder the new couenãt.*

THen the first *Testament* had also ordinances of religion, and a wordly Sanctuary.

2 For the first Tabernacle was made, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread, which *Tabernacle* is called the holy places.

3 And after the second vaile *was* the Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all,

4 Which had the golden censer, and the Arke of the Testament ouerlaid round about with golde, wherein the golden pot which had Manna, *was*, and * Aarons rod that had budded, and the tables of the Testament.

Nu.17.10
1.King.8.
9.2. cor.
5.10.

5 *And ouer the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seate: of which things we will not now speake particulary.

Exod. 25.
22.

6 Now when these things were thus ordeined, the Priest went alwayes into the first tabernacle, and accomplished the seruice.

Exod. 30.
10. Iemit.
16.2.

7 But into the second went the * hie Priest alone, once euery yeere, not without blood which hee offered for himselfe, and for the ignorances of the people.

8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that the way into the Holiest of all was not yet opened, while as yet the first tabernacle was standing.

9 Which was a figure for that present time, wherein were offered giftes and sacrifices that could not make holy, concerning the conscience, him that did the seruice.

10 Which

10 Which only stood in meates and drinkes, and diuers washings, and carnall rites, which were inioyned, vntill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an hie Priest of good things to come, by a greater and a more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is, not of this building,

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood entred he in once into the holy place, and obteined eternal redemption *for vs.*

13 * For if the blood of bulles and goates, and the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling them that are vncleane, sanctifieth as touching the purifying of the flesh, *Leuit.16. 14. num. 19. 4.*

14 How much more shall the * blood of Christ, which through the eternall Spirit offered himselfe without fault to God, * purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God? *1. Pet.1. 19.1. ioh. 1.7. verse.*

15 And for this cause is hee the Mediatour of the newe Testament, that through * death which was for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* in the former testament they which were called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance. *1. 5. Luk.1.74 Rom 5.6. 1.pet.3.18*

16 For where a Testament *is*, there must bee the death of him that made the Testament.

17 * For the Testament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it, is aliue. *Gal.3.15.*

18 Wherefore neither was the first ordeined without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to the people, according to the Law, hee tooke the blood of calues and of goates, with water and purple wooll, and hysope, and sprinkled both the booke and all the people,

20 * Saying, This is the blood of the Testament, which God hath appointed vnto you. *Exo.24.8.*

21 Moreouer, hee sprinkled likewise the Tabernacle with blood also, and all the ministring vessels.

22 And almost all things are by the Lawe purged with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was then necessary, that the similitude of heauenly things should bee purified with such things: but the heauenly things themselues *are purified* with better sacrifices then are these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places that are made with hands, which are similitudes of the true *Sanctuary*: but *is entred* into euery heauen, to appeare now in the sight of God for vs.

25 Not that hee should offer himselfe often, as the high Priest entred into the Holy place euery yeere with other blood.

26 (For then must he haue often suffered since the foundation of the

of the world) but now in the end of the world hath he bene made manifest, once to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men that they shall once die, and after that *commeth* the iudgement:

Rom.5.8. 28 So *Christ was once offered to take away the sinnes of ma-
2.pet.3.18 ny, and vnto them that looke for him, shall he appeare the second time without sinne vnto saluation.

CHAP. X.

1 Hee proueth that the sacrifices of the Law were vnperfit, 2 because they were euerie yeere renued: 5 But that the sacrifice of Christ is one, and perpetuall. 6 Hee proueth by Dauids testimonie: 19 Then he addeth an exhortation, 29 and sucrely threatneth them that reiect the grace of Christ. 36 In the ende hee praiseth patience 38 that commeth of faith.

FOr the Law hauing the shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can neuer with those sacrifices, which they offer yeere by yeere continually, sanctifie the comers thereunto.

2 For would they not then haue ceased to haue bene offered, because that the offerers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes?

3 But in those *sacrifices* there *is* a remembrance againe of sinnes euery yeere.

4 For it is vnpossible that the blood of buls & goates should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when hee commeth into the world, hee saith,
Psal.40.7 * Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not: but a body hast thou ordeined me.

6 In burnt offrings & sinne offrings thou hast had no pleasure.

7 Then I said, Loe I come (in the beginning of the booke it is written of me) that I should doe thy will, O God.

8 Aboue, when he said, Sacrifice and offering, and burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou woldest not haue, neither haddest pleasure *therein* (which are offered by the Law.)

9 Then said he, Loe, I come to doe thy will, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may stablish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified, *euen* by the offering of the body of Iesus Christ once *made*.

11 And euery Priest standeth daily ministring, and oft times
Eba.1.13. offereth one maner of offering, which can neuer take away sinnes:
ps.110.1. 12 But this man after he had offred one sacrifice for sinnes, *sit-
1.cor.15. teth for euer at the right hand of God,
25. 13 And from henceforth tarieth, *till his enemies be made his
Eba.1.13. foote stoole.

14 For

14 For with one offering hath he consecrated for euer them that are sanctified.

15 For the holy Ghost also beareth vs record: for after that he had said before,

16 *This *is* the Testament that I will make vnto them after those dayes, saith the Lord, I will put my lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I will write them,

17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these things *is*, there *is* no more offering for sinne.

19 Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus wee may be bold to enter into the Holy place,

20 By the new and liuing way, which he hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that is, his flesh:

21 *And seeing we haue* an high Priest, *which is* ouer the house of God,

22 Let vs draw neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our hearts being pure from an euill conscience.

23 And washed in our bodies with pure water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope without wauering, (for *he is* faithfull that promised)

24 And let vs consider one another, to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes,

25 Not forsaking the fellowship that we haue among our selues, as the maner of some *is*: but let vs exhort *one another*, and that so much the more, because ye see that the day draweth neere.

26 * For if we sinne willingly after that we haue receiued & acknowledged the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes,

27 But a fearefull looking for of iudgement, and violent fire, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.

28 He that despiseth Moses Law, dieth without mercy *vnder two, or three witnesses:

29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye shall he be worthy, which treadeth vnder foote the Sonne of God, and counteth the blood of the Testament as an vnholy thing wherwith he was sanctified, and doth despite the Spirit of grace?

30 For wee know him that hath said, * Vengeance *belongeth* vnto mee: I will recompence, saith the Lord. And againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.

31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the liuing God.

32 Now call to remembrance the dayes that are passed, in the which after yee had receiued light, ye endured a great fight of afflictions,

Chap.8.8. Ierem. 31. 33. vers. 11.27.

Chap.6.4.

Deut. 19. 15. matth. 18. 16. Ioh.8.17. 2.cor.13.1

Deut. 32. 35. vers. 12.19.

33 Partly

33 Partly while ye were made a gazing stocke both by reproches, and afflictions, and partly while yee became companions of them which were so tossed to and fro.

34 For both yee sorowed with me for my bonds, and suffered with ioy the spoiling of your goods, knowing in your selues how that ye haue in heauen a better, and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye haue neede of patience, that after yee haue done the will of God, ye might receiue the promise.

37 For yet a very little while, and he that shal come, will come, and will not tarie.

Haba.2.4. 38 *Now the iust shall liue by faith: but if *any* withdraw him-
rom.1.17 selfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him.

gal.3.11. 39 But wee are not they which withdraw our selues vnto perdition, but *follow* faith vnto the conseruation of the soule.

CHAP. XI.

1 *He declareth in the whole Chapter, that the Fathers which from the beginning of the world were approued of God, attained saluation no other way then by faith, that the Iewes may know that by the same only they are knit vnto the Fathers in an holy vnion.*

NOw faith is the ground of things which are hoped for, and the euidence of things which are not seene.

2 For by it *our* elders were well reported of.

Gen. 1. 1. 3 * Through faith we vnderstand that the world was ordei-
ieb. 1.10. ned by the word of God, so that the things which wee see, are not made of things, which did appeare.

Gen. 4.4. 4 By faith Abel *offred vnto God a greater sacrifice then Cain,
Mat.23. by *the which he obtained witnes that he was righteous, God te-
35. stifying of his gifts: by the which *faith* also he, being dead, yet speaketh.

Gen.5.24. 5 By faith was *Enoch translated, that he should not see death:
neither was he found: for God had translated him: for before he was translated, he was reported of, that he had pleased God.

6 But without faith it is vnpossible to please *him*: for he that commeth to God, must beleeue that *God* is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seeke him.

Gen.6. 13 7 By faith * Noe being warned of God of the things which were as yet not seene, mooued with reuerence, prepared the Arke to the sauing of his household, through the which *Arke* hee condemned the world, & was made heire of the righteousnes which is by faith.

Gen. 12.4 8 By faith * Abraham when he was called, obeyed *God*, to go
out

outrinto a place which hee ſhould afterward receiue for inheritance, and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith hee abode in the land of promiſe, as in a ſtrange countrey, as one that dwelt in tents with Iſaac and Iacob, heires with him of the ſame promiſe.

10 For he looked for a citie hauing a foundation, whoſe builder and maker *is* God.

11 Through faith * Sara alſo receiued ſtrength to conceiue ſeed, and was deliuered of a child when ſhe was paſt age, becauſe ſhe iudged him faithfull which had promiſed. *Gen.* 17. 19. *and* 21. 2.

12 And therefore ſprang there of one, euen of one, which was dead, *ſo many* as the ſtarres of the skie in multitude, and as the ſand of the ſea ſhore which is innumerable.

13 All theſe died in faith, and receiued not the promiſes, but ſaw them afarre off, and beleeued *them*, & receiued *them* thankfully, and confeſſed that they were ſtrangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that ſay ſuch things, declare plainly that they ſeek a countrey.

15 And if they had bin mindful of that *countrey*, from whence they came out, they had leiſure to haue returned.

16 But now they deſire a better, that is an heauenly: wherefore God is not aſhamed of them to be called their God: for hee hath prepared for them a citie.

17 By faith * Abraham offered vp Iſaac, when hee was tried, and he that had receiued the promiſes, offered his onely begotten ſonne. *Gen.* 22. 10.

18 (To whom it was ſaid, * In Iſaac ſhall thy ſeed be called.) *Gen.* 21.

19 For he conſidered that God was able to raiſe *him* vp, euen from the dead: from whence he receiued him alſo after a ſort. 12. *rom.* 9. 7.

20 By faith * Iſaac bleſſed Iacob and Eſau, concerning things to come. *Gen.* 27. 28, 29.

21 By faith * Iacob when he was a dying, bleſſed both the ſons of Ioſeph, and * *leaning* on the end of his ſtaffe, worſhipped *God*. *Gen.* 48. 15.

22 By faith * Ioſeph when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Iſrael, and gaue commandement of his bones. *Gen.* 47. 31. *Gen.* 50. 25.

23 By faith * Moſes when he was borne, was hid three moneths of his parents, becauſe they ſaw hee was a proper childe, neither feared they the * Kings commandement. *Exod.* 2. 2. *acts* 7. 22

24 By faith * Moſes when he was come to age, refuſed to bee called the ſonne of Pharaohs daughter, *Exo.* 1. 16 *&* 2. 10.

25 And choſe rather to ſuffer aduerſitie with the people of God, then to enioy the pleaſures of ſinnes for a ſeaſon,

26 Esteeming the rebuke of Christ greater riches then the treasures of Egypt: for he had respect vnto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, and feared not the fiercenesse of the king: for he endured, as he that saw him which is inuisible.

Exo.12.22. 28 Through faith he ordeined the * Passeouer, and the effusion of blood, lest he that destroyed the first borne, should touch them.

Exod.14.21. 29 By faith they * passed thorow the red sea as by drie land, which when the Egyptians had assayed to doe, they were swallowed vp.

Iosh.6.20 30 By faith the * walles of Iericho fell downe after they were compassed about seuen dayes.

Iosh.6.23 *Iosh.2.1.* 31 By faith the harlot * Rahab perished not with them which obeyed not, when * she had receiued the spies peaceably.

Iudg.6.11 *Iudg.4 6.* *Iudg.13.* *24.* *Ia.11.1* *and 12.7.* 32 And what shall I more say? for the time would be too short for me to tell of * Gedeon, of * Barac, and of * Samson, and of * Iephte, also of Dauid, and Samuel, and of the Prophets:

33 Which through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obtained the promises, stopped the mouthes of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, of weake were made strong, waxed valiant in battell, turned to flight the armies of the aliants.

35 The women receiued their dead raised to life: other also were racked, and would not be deliuered, that they might receiue a better resurrection.

36 And others haue been tried by mockings and scourgings, yea, moreouer by bonds and prisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were hewen asunder, they were tempted, they were slaine with the sword, they wandred vp and downe in sheepes skinnes, and in goates skinnes, being destitute, afflicted *and* tormented:

38 Whome the world was not worthy of: they wandred in wildernesses, and mountaines, and dennes, and caues of the earth.

39 And these all through faith obtained good report, and receiued not the promise,

40 God prouiding a better thing for vs, that they without vs should not be made perfect.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Hee doth not onely by the example of the fathers before recited, exhort them to patience and constancie,* 3 *but also by the example of Christ.* 11 *That the chastenings of God cannot bee rightly iudged by the outward sense of the flesh.*

Rom.6.4. *col.3.8.* *eph.4.24.* *1.pet.2.1.* WHerefore, * let vs also, seeing that we are compassed with so great a cloud of witnesses, cast away euery thing that presseth

feth downe, and the sinne that hangeth so fast on: let vs run with
patience the race that is set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the author and finisher of our faith, who
for the ioy that was set before him, endured the crosse, and despi-
sed the shame, and is set at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 Consider therefore him that endured such speaking against
of sinners lest ye should be wearied, and faint in your minds.

4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, striuing against sinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the consolation, which speaketh vn-
to you as vnto children,* My sonne, despise not the chastening of Pro.3.11
the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chasteneth: and he scourgeth
euery sonne that he receiueth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God offereth himselfe vnto you as
vnto sonnes: for what sonne is it whom the father chasteneth not?

8 If therefore ye be without correction, whereof all are par-
takers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes.

9 Moreouer we haue had the fathers of our bodies which cor-
rected vs, & we gaue them reuerence: should we not much rather
be in subiection vnto the Father of spirits, that we might liue?

10 For they verely for a few dayes chastened vs after their owne
pleasure: but he *chasteneth vs* for our profit, that we might be par-
takers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to bee ioyous,
but grieuous: but afterward it bringeth the quiet fruit of righte-
ousnes, vnto them which are thereby exercised.

12 Wherefore lift vp *your* hands which hang downe, and *your*
weake knees,

13 And make straight steps vnto your feete, lest that which is
halting be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

14 *Follow peace with all men, and holinesse, without the Rom.12.
which no man shall see the Lord. 18.

15 Take heede that no man fall away from the grace of God:
let no roote of bitternesse spring vp and trouble *you*, lest thereby
many be defiled.

16 Let there be no fornicatour, or profane person as *Esau, Gen.25.
which for one portion of meate sold his birthright. 33.

17 *For ye know how that afterward also when he would haue Gen.27.
inherited the blessing he was reiected: for hee found no place to 38.
repentance, though he sought *that blessing* with teares. Exod.19.

18 For yee are not come vnto the * mount that might be tou- 16.
ched, nor vnto burning fire, nor to blackenesse, and darkenesse, and
tempest,

19 Neither vnto the sound of a trumpet, & the voice of words

Exod.20.19. which they that heard it, excused themselues, *that the worde should not be spoken to them any more.

20 (For they were not able to abide that which was commanded,
Exod.19.13. *Yea, though a beast touch the mountaine, it shalbe stoned, or thrust through with a dart:

21 And so terrible was the sight that appeared, that Moses sayd, I feare and quake.)

22 But ye are come vnto mount Sion, and to the citie of the liuing God, the celestiall Hierusalem, and to the company of innumerable Angels,

23 And to the assembly and congregation of the first borne which are written in heauen, and to God the iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust and perfect men,

24 And to Iesus the Mediatour of the new Testament, & to the blood of sprinkling that speaketh better things then that of Abel.

25 See that ye despise not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not which refused him, that spake on earth: much more shall we not escape if we turne away from him that speaketh from heauen.

26 Whose voice then shooke the earth, and now hath declared, saying, *Yet once more will I shake, not the earth only, but
Agg.2.7 also heauen.

27 And this *word*, Yet once more, signifieth the remouing of those things which are shaken, as of things which are made *with hands*, that the things which are not shaken, may remaine.

28 Wherefore seeing we receiue a kingdome which cannot be shaken, let vs haue grace whereby wee may so serue God, that we may please him with reuerence and feare.

Deut.4.24 29 For * euen our God *is* a consuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *He giueth good lessons not onely for manners, but also for doctrine.*

Rom.12.10. LEt * brotherly loue continue.

2 *Be not forgetful to entertaine strangers: for thereby
1.Pet.4.9 some haue *receiued Angels into their houses vnwares.

Gen.18.3 3 Remember them that are in bonds, as though ye were bound
and 19.3. with them: and them that are in affliction, as if ye were also
Iosh.1.5. *afflicted* in the body.

Psal.128. 4 Marriage *is* honourable among all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God wil iudge.

5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnes, and be content with those things that ye haue, for he hath said,

6 * I will not faile thee, neither forsake thee.

7 So that we may boldly say, *The Lord *is* my helper, neither will I feare what man can doe vnto me.

8 Remember them which haue the ouersight of you, which haue

haue declared vnto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering what hath been the end of their conuersation. Iesus Christ yesterday, and to day, the same also is for euer.

9 Bee not caried about with diuers *and* strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be stablished with grace, *and* not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue been occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar, whereof they haue no authoritie to eate which serue in the Tabernacle.

11 *For the bodies of those beasts whose blood is brought into the holy place by the hie Priest for sinne, are burnt without the campe. *Leu.4.11 and 6.30. & 26.27.*

12 Therefore euen Iesus, that he might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs goe foorth to him therefore out of the campe, bearing his reproch.

14 *For here haue we no continuing citie: but wee seeke one to come. *Mich.2. 10.*

15 Let vs therefore by him offer the sacrifice of praise alwayes to God, that is, the *fruit of the lips, which confesse his Name. *Hos.14.3.*

16 To doe good, and to distribute, forget not: for with such sacrifices God is pleased.

17 Obey them that haue the ouersight of you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue accounts, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs. for wee are assured that wee haue a good conscience in all things, desiring to liue honestly.

19 And I desire you somewhat the more earnestly, that yee so doe, that I may bee restored to you more quickly.

20 The God of peace that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, the great shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting Couenant,

21 Make you perfect in all good workes, to doe his will, working in you that which is pleasant in his sight through Iesus Christ, to whom *be* praise for euer and euer. Amen.

22 I beseech you also brethren, suffer the words of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in fewe words.

23 Know that *our* brother Timotheus is deliuered, with whom (if he come shortly) I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the ouersight of you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes from Italy *and sent* by Timotheus.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE of Iames.

CHAP. I.

4 He entreateth of patience, 6 of faith, 10 and of lowlines of mind in rich men. 13 That tentations come not of God for our euill, 17 because he is the author of all goodnesse. 21 In what maner the word of life must be receiued.

IAmes a seruant of God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue Tribes, which are scattered abroad, salutation.

2 My brethren, count it exceeding ioy, when yee fall into diuers tentations,

Rom. 5.3. 3 * Knowing that the trying of your faith bringeth foorth patience.

4 And let patience haue *her* perfect worke, that yee may bee perfect and entire, lacking nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisedom, let him aske of God, which giueth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it shall bee giuen him.

Mat.7.7. 6 * But let him aske in faith, and waver not: for he that wa-
mar 11. uereth, is like a waue of the sea, tost of the wind, and caried away.
24.luk.21 7 Neither let that man thinke that he shall receiue any thing
9.ioh.14 of the Lord.

13.and 8 A double minded man *is* vnstable in all his wayes.
26.23.

9 Let the brother of low degree reioyce in that he is exalted:

10 Againe, he that is rich, in that hee is made low: for as the
Isa.40.6. flower of the grasse, shall he * vanish away.
1.pet. 1. 11 For *as when* the sunne riseth with heat, then the grasse with-
24. ereth, and his flower falleth away, and the goodly shape of it perisheth: euen so shall the rich man wither away in *all* his wayes.

Iab 5.17. 12 * Blessed *is* the man that endureth tentation, for when hee is tried, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted w euil, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But euery man is tempted, when hee is drawen away by his owne concupiscence, and is entised.

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Erre not, my deare brethren.

17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and

and commeth downe from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableneſſe, neither ſhadow of turning.

18 Of his owne will begate he vs with the word of trueth, that we ſhould be as the firſt fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my deare brethren, * let euery man be ſwift to heare, ſlow to ſpeake, *and* ſlow to wrath. *Pro. 29.2*

20 For the wrath of man doeth not accompliſh the righteouſneſſe of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthineſſe, and ſuperfluity of malicíouſneſſe, *and* receiue with meekeneſſe the word that is graffed in you, which is able to ſaue your ſoules.

22 * And be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne ſelues. *Mat. 7.24. rom. 2.13*

23 For if any heare the word, and doe it not, he is like vnto a man that beholdeth his naturall face in a glaſſe.

24 For when he hath conſidered himſelfe, hee goeth his way, and forgetteth immediatly what maner of one he was.

25 But who ſo looketh in the perfect Law of libertie, and continueth *therein*, he not being a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, ſhal be bleſſed in his deede.

26 If any man among you ſeemeth religious and refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God, euen the Father, is this, to viſit the fatherleſſe, and widowes in their aduerſitie, and to keepe himſelfe vnſpotted of the world.

CHAP. II.

1 *He ſaith, that to haue reſpect of perſons is not agreeable to Chriſtian faith.* 14 *which to profeſſe in wordes is not enough, vnleſſe* 15 *we ſhew it alſo in deeds of mercie and charitie,* 21 *after the example of Abraham.*

MY brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Ieſus Chriſt in * reſpect of perſons. *Leuit. 19 15. deut. 1. 17. and 16. 19. prou. 24. 23.*

2 For if there come into your company, a man with a golde ring, and in goodly apparell, and there come in alſo a poore man in vile raiment,

3 And ye haue reſpect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and ſay vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, and ſay vnto the poore, Stand thou there, or ſit here vnder my footſtoole,

4 Are ye not partial in your ſelues, and are become Iudges of euill thoughts?

5 Hearken my beloued brethren, hath not God choſen the poore of this world, *that they ſhould be* rich in faith, and heires of the kingdom which he promiſed to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Doe not the rich oppresse you by tyranny, and doe not they draw you before the iudgement seates?

7 Do not they blaspheme the worthy Name, after which ye be named?

8 But if ye fulfill the royall Lawe, according to the Scripture, *which saith*, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, yee doe well.

9 But if ye regard the persons, ye commit sinne, and are rebuked of the Law, as transgressors.

10 For whosoeuer shall keepe the whole Law, *and* yet faileth in one *point*, he is guilty of all.

11 For he that said, Thou shalt not commit adultery, said also, Thou shalt not kill. Now though thou doest none adultery, yet if thou killest, thou art a transgressor of the Law.

12 So speake yee, and so do, as they that shall be iudged by the Law of libertie.

13 For there shall be condemnation mercilesse to him that sheweth not mercie. and mercie reioiceth against condemnation.

14 What auaileth it my brethren, though a man saith he hath faith, when he hath no workes? can that faith saue him?

15 For if a brother or a sister be naked, and destitute of dayly foode,

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace: warme your selues, and fill your bellies: notwithstanding yee giue them not those things which are needefull to the body, what helpeth it?

17 Euen so the faith, if it haue no workes, is dead in it selfe.

18 But some man might say, Thou hast the faith, and I haue workes: shew me thy faith out of thy workes, and I will shew thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God: thou doest well: the deuils also beleeue it, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou vnderstand, O thou vaine man, that the faith *which is* without workes, is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through workes, *Gen.22. 10.* * when he offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar?

22 Seest thou not that the faith wrought with his workes? and through the workes was the faith made perfect.

Gen.15.6 rom.4.3. gal.3.6. 23 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, * Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousnesse: and he was called the friend of God.

24 Ye see then, how that of workes a man is iustified, and not of faith onely.

Iosh.2.1. 25 Likewise also was not * Rahab the harlot iustified through workes,

workes, when she had receiued the messengers, and sent them one another way?

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, euen so the faith without workes is dead.

CHAP. III.

3 To shewe that a Christian man must gouerne his tongue with the bridle of faith and charitie, 9 he declareth the commodities and mischiefes that ensue thereof: 15 and how much mans wisdome 17 differeth from heauenly.

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receiue the greater condemnation.

2 For in many things wee ‖ sinne all: If any man sinne not in word, he is a perfect man, and able to bridle all the body. ‖ Or, stumble.

3 Behold, we put bits into the horses mouths, that they should obey vs, and we turne about all their body.

4 Behold also the shippes, which though they be so great, and are driuen of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small rudder, whithersoeuer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, & boasteth of great things: behold how great a thing a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is fire, *yea*, a world of wickednes: so is the tongue set among our members, that it defileth the whole bodie, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For the whole nature of beasts and of birds, and of creeping things, and things of the sea is tamed, and hath been tamed of the nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame. *It is* an vnruly euill, full of deadly poyson.

9 Therewith blesse wee God euen the Father, and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doeth a fountaine send foorth at one place sweete *water* and bitter?

12 Can the figtree, my brethren, bring foorth Oliues, either a vine figs? so can no fount ine make both salt water and sweete.

13 Who is a wise man and indued with knowledge among you? let him shew by good conuersation his workes in meekenesse of wisedome.

14 But if you haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be lyars against the trueth.

15 This wisedome descendeth not from aboue, but *is* earthly, sensuall, and deuilish.

16 For

16 For where enuying and ſtrife *is*, there *is* ſedition, and all maner of euill workes.

17 But the wiſedome that *is* from aboue, is firſt pure, then peaceable, gentle, eaſie to be intreated, full of mercie and good fruites, without iudging, and without hypocriſie.

18 And the fruite of righteouſneſſe is ſowen in peace of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He reckoneth vp the miſchiefes that proceede of the workes of the fleſh. 7 Hee exhorteth to humilitie, 8 and to purge the heart from pride, 10 backbiting, 14 and the forgetfulneſſe of our owne infirmitie.

FRom whence *are* warres & contentions among you? are they not hence, *euen* of your pleaſures, that fight in your members?

2 Ye luſt, and haue not: ye enuy & deſire immoderatly, & can not obtaine: ye fight & war, and get nothing, becauſe ye aske not.

3 Ye aske, & receiue not, becauſe ye aske amiſſe, that ye might lay the ſame out on your pleaſures.

4 Ye adulterers and adultereſſes, know ye not that the amity of the world is the enimitie of God? Whoſoeuer therefore will be a friend of the world, maketh himſelfe the enemie of God.

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture ſayth in vaine, the Spirit that dwelleth in vs, luſteth after enuie?

6 But *the Scripture* offereth more grace, *and* therefore
Pro.3.34. ſayth,* God reſiſteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.
1.pet.5.5. 7 * Submit you ſelues to God: reſiſt the deuill, and hee will
Ephe.4. flee from you.
27.

8 Draw neere to God, and he will draw neere to you. Cleanſe your hands, ye ſinners, and purge your hearts ye double minded.

9 Suffer afflictions, and ſorow ye, and weepe: let your laughter be turned into mourning, and *your* ioy into heauineſſe.
1.Pet.5.6 10 * Caſt downe your ſelues before the Lord, and he will liſt you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another, brethren. He that ſpeaketh euill of his brother, or hee that condemneth his brother, ſpeaketh euill of the Law, and condemneth the Law: and if thou condemneſt the Law, thou art not an obſeruer of the Law, but a iudge.

12 There is one Lawgiuer, which is able to ſaue, and to deſtroy.
Ro.14.4. * Who art thou that iudgeſt another man?

13 Goe to now, ye that ſay, To day or to morow we will goe into ſuch a citie, and continue there a yeere, and buy and ſell, and get gaine,

14 (And

14 (And yet ye cannot tell what *shall be* to morow. For what is your life? It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and afterward vanisheth away)

15 For that ye ought to say, *If the Lord will, and, If we liue, we will doe this or that.* 1. Cor. 4. 19.

16 But now ye reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth how to doe well, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

CHAP. V.

1 *He threatneth the rich with Gods seuere iudgment for their pride,* 7 *that the poore hearing the miserable end of the rich,* 8 *patiently beare afflictions,* 11 *as Iob did,* 14 *euen in their distresses.*

GO to now, ye rich men: weepe and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupt, and your garments are motheaten.

3 Your gold and siluer is cankred, and the rust of them shalbe a witnesse against you, and shall eate your flesh, as *it were* fire. Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the last dayes.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped your fields (which is of you kept backe by fraud) cryeth, and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of hostes.

5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and in wantonnesse. Ye haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condemned *and* haue killed the iust, and hee hath not resisted you.

7 Bee patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill he receiue the former, and the latter raine.

8 Be ye also patient therefore and settle your hearts: for the comming of the Lord draweth neere.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, he iudge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an ensample of suffering aduersitie, and of long patience, which haue spoken in the Name of the Lord.

11 Behold, we count them blessed which endure. Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue knowen what end the Lord *made.* For the Lord is very pitifull and mercifull.

12 But before all things, my brethren, * sweare not, neither by heauen, nor by earth, nor by any other othe: but let your Yea, be yea, and *your* Nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation. Mat. 5. 34

13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merie? Let him sing.

14 Is any sicke among you? Let him call for the Elders of the
Mar.6.13 Church, and let them pray for him, and anoint him with * oyle in the Name of the Lord.

15 And the prayer of faith shall saue the sicke, and the Lorde shall raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiuen him.

16 Acknowledge your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man availeth much if it be feruent.

1. King. 17. 2. and 18. 45. Iuke 4. 25. 17 *Helia was a man subiect to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rayne, and it rained not on the earth for three yeeres and sixe moneths.

18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought foorth her fruite.

Mat. 18. 15. 19 Brethren, * if any of you haue erred from the trueth, and some man hath conuerted him,

33 Let him knowe that hee which hath conuerted the sinner from going astray out of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of Peter.

CHAP. I.

1 He extolleth Gods mercy shewed in Christ, 7 which we lay hold on by faith, and possesse through hope: 10 whereof the Prophets foretold. 13 He exhorteth 15 to renounce the world, 23 and their former life, and so wholly yeeld themselues to God.

PETER an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the strangers that dwell here and there throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father vnto sanctification of the Spirit, through obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ. Grace and peace be multiplyed vnto you.

3 Blessed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercie hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance immortal and vndefiled, and that withereth not, reserued in heauen for vs,

5 Which

5 Which are kept by the power of God through faith vnto saluation, which is prepared to be shewed in the last time.

6 Wherein ye reioyce, though now for a season (if neede require) ye are in heauinesse through manifold tentations,

7 That the trial of your faith, being much more precious then gold that perisheth (though it be tried with fire) might be found vnto *your* praise, and honor & glory, at the appearing of Iesus Christ:

8 Whom yee haue not seene, and yet loue *him*, in whom now though ye see him not, yet doe you beleeue, and reioyce with ioy vnspeakable and glorious,

9 Receiuing the ‖ end of your faith, *euen* the saluation of *your* soules.

‖ *Or, reward.*

10 Of the which saluation the Prophets haue inquired & searched, which prophecied of the grace that should come vnto you,

11 Searching when or what time the Spirit which testified before of Christ which was in them, should declare the sufferings *that should come* vnto Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12 Vnto whom it was reueiled, that not vnto themselues, but vnto vs they should minister the things, which are now shewed vnto you by the which haue preached vnto you the Gospel by the holy Ghost sent down from heauen, the which things the Angels desire to behold. *Luk. 1. 79. Leuit. 11. 44. and 19. 2. and 20. 7.*

13 Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your minde: bee sober, and trust perfectly on that grace that is brought vnto you, in the reuelation of Iesus Christ,

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues vnto the former lustes of your ignorance: *Deut. 10. 17. rom. 12. 2.*

15 But as hee which hath called you, is holy, so be ye holy in * all manner of conuersation, *gal. 2. 6.*

16 Because it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy. *1. Cor. 6. 20. and 7. 23. heb. 9. 14. 1. ioh. 1. 7. rom. 12. 1.*

17 And if yee call him Father, which without * respect of person iudgeth according to euery mans worke, passe the time of your dwelling here in feare, *5. Rom. 16. 25. ephes. 3. 9. col. 1. 26. 2. tim. 1. 10. titus 1. 3.*

18 Knowing that yee were not redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and golde, from your vaine conuersation, receiued by the traditions of the Fathers,

19 * But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe vndefiled, and without spot.

20 Which was ordained before the foundation of the world, but was declared in the last times for your sakes,

21 Which by his meanes doe beleeue in God that raised him from

from the dead, and gaue him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God,

22 Hauing purified your soules in obeying the trueth through
*Cha.2.17. the spirit, * to loue brotherly without fayning, loue one another
*rom.2.10 with a pure heart feruently,

23 Being borne anew, not of mortall seede, but of immortal, by the word of God, who liueth and endureth for euer.

*Esa.40.6 24 *For all flesh *is* as grasse, and all the glory of man as the
*ames.1.10. flower of grasse. The grasse withereth and the flower falleth away,

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the word which is preached among you.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth the new borne in faith, to leade their liues answerable to the same: 6 and lest their faith should flagger, he bringeth in that which was foretold touching Christ. 11 Then he willeth them to be obedient to Magistrates, 21 and that they patiently beare ech vnrighteousnesse after Christes example.

*Rom.6.4. WHerefore *laying aside all maliciousnesse and all guile, and
*ephe.4.23 dissimulation and enuie, and all euill speaking,
*colos.3.8. 2 As new borne babes desire that sincere milke of the word,
*heb.12.1. that ye may grow thereby.

3 Because ye haue tasted that the Lord *is* bountifull.

4 To whome comming as vnto a liuing stone disallowed of men, but chosen of God, *and* precious,

5 Yee also as liuely stones be made a spirituall house, an holy
*Reue.1.6. *Priesthood to offer vp spirituall sacrifices acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.

*Isa.28.16 6 Wherefore also it is contained in the Scriptures: *Behold,
*rom.9.33 I put in Sion a chiefe corner stone, elect and precious: and he that beleeueth therein shall not be ashamed.

7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue, it is precious: but vnto
*Psal.118. them which be disobedient, * the stone which the builders dis-
22. *matt.* allowed, the same is made the head of the corner,
21.42. 8 And a *stone to stumble at, and a rocke of offence, euen *to*
*act.4.11. *them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient, vnto the
*Isa 8.14. which thing they were euen ordeined.
*rom.9.33 9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall *Priesthood, an ho-
*Exo.12.9 ly nation, a people set at libertie, that ye should shew foorth the
*Hose.2.23 vertues of him that hath called you out of darknesse into his mar-
*rom.9.25 uelous light,

10 *Which in time past were not a people, yet *are* now the people of God: which in time past were not vnder mercie: but now haue obteined mercie.

11 Dearely beloued, I beseech you as strangers and pil-
grims,

gaints, * abstaine from fleshly lustes, which fight against the soule. *Ro.13.14*
12 *And haue your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, *galat.5.6.*
that they which speake euill of you as of euill doers, may by *your* *Cha.5.16.*
*good workes which they shall see, glorifie God in the day of *Mat.4.16*
visitation.
13 *Therefore submit your selues vnto all maner ordinance of *Rom.13.1.*
man for the Lords sake, whether it be vnto the King, as vnto the
superiour,
14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are sent of him, for
the punishment of euill doers, and for the prayse of them that doe
well.
15 For so is the will of God, that by well doing yee may put to
silence the ignorance of the foolish men,
16 As free, and not as hauing the libertie for a cloke of malicious-
nes, but as the seruants of God.
17 Honour all men: * loue brotherly fellowship: feare God: *Cha.1.22.*
honour the King. *ro.12.10.*
18 * Seruants, bee subiect to your Masters with all feare, not *Ephe.5.6.*
only to the good and courteous, but also to the froward. *col.3.22.*
19 *For this is thanke worthy, if a man for conscience toward *2.Cor.7.*
God, endure griefe, suffring wrongfully. *10.*
20 For what praise is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults,
ye take it patiently? but and if when ye doe well, ye suffer *wrong*,
and take it patiently, this is acceptable to God.
21 For hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffered for you,
leauing you an ensample that ye should follow his steps.
22 * Who did no sinne, neither was there guile found in his *Isa.53.9.*
mouth. *1.Joh.3.5.*
23 Who when hee was reuiled, reuiled not againe: when hee
suffered, he threatned not, but committed it to him that iudgeth
righteously.
24 * Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the *Isa.53.5.*
tree, that we being dead to sinne, should liue in righteousnesse, by *mat.8.17.*
whose stripes yee were healed.
25 For yee were as sheepe going astray: but are now returned
vnto the Shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

CHAP. III.

1 *That Christian women should not contemne their husbands though they be infidels*, 5 *hee bringeth in examples of godly women.* 8 *Generall exhortations*, 14 *patiently to beare persecutions*, 15 *and boldly to yeeld a reason of their faith.* 18 *Christs example.*

LIkewise * let the wiues be subiect to their husbands, that euen *Co'os.3.18*
they which obey not the word, may without the word bee *ephe.5.22*
wonne by the conuersation of the wiues,

2 While

2 While they behold your pure conuersation, which is with feare.

1.Tim.2.9 3 *Whose apparelling, let it not be that outward, with broyded haire, and gold put about, or in putting on of apparell:

4 But let it bee the hid man of the heart *which consisteth* in the incorruption of a meeke and quiet spirit, which is before God a thing much set by.

5 For euen after this maner in time past did the holy women which trusted in God, tire themselues, and were subiect to their husbands.

Gen.18. 12. 6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, * & called him Sir: whose daughters ye are, whiles ye doe wel, not being afraid of any terror.

1.Cor.7.3 7 *Likewise yee husbands, dwell with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker vessell, euen as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not interrupted.

8 Finally, bee yee all of one minde: one suffer with another loue as brethren: *be* pitifull: *be* courteous,

Pro.17.13 & 20.22. mat.5.39 9 *Not rendring euill for euill, neither rebuke for rebuke: but contrariwise blesse, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should bee heires of blessing.

1.pet.3.12. 10 *For if any man long after life, and to see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his lips that they speake no guile.

Ps.34.13 11 *Let him eschew euill and doe good: let him seeke peace, Esa.1.16. and follow after it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* ouer the righteous, and his eares *are open* vnto their prayers: and the face of the Lorde *is* against them that doe euill.

13 And who is it that will harme you, if ye follow that which is good?

Mat.5.10 Esa.8.12, 13. 14 *Notwithstanding, blessed *are ye*, if ye suffer for righteousnes sake. *Yea feare not their feare, neither be troubled.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenesse and reuerence,

16 Hauing a good conscience, that when they speake euill of you as of euill doers they may be ashamed, which slander your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it *is* better (if the will of God be so) that yee suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

Rom.5.6. Heb.9.15. 18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, and was put to death concerning the flesh, but was quickened by the Spirit.

19 By

19 By the which hee also went, and preached vnto the spirits that *are* in prison,

20 Which were in time passed disobedient, when once the long suffering of God abode in the daies of * Noe, while the Arke was preparing, wherein few, that is, eight soules, were saued in the water. *Gen.6.14. mat.24.38. luke 17.26.*

21 Whereof the Baptisme *that* now *is*, answering that figure, (*which is* not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but a confident demanding which a good conscience maketh to God) saueth vs also by the resurrection of Iesus Christ,

22 Which is at the right hand of God, gone into heauen, to whom the Angels, and powers, and might are subiect.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He bringeth in Christes example, and applyeth it, 6 to the mortifying of the flesh, 8 especially commending charitie: 12 And so entreateth of patience. 17 That it is necessary that correction begin at the Church.*

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde, *which is*, that hee which hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne,

2 That hee henceforward should liue (as much time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the lustes of men, but after the will of God.

3 * For it is sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time past of the life, after the lust of the Gentiles, walking in wantonnes, lusts, drunkennesse, in gluttonie, drinkings, and in abominable idolatries, *Ephes.4.22.*

4 Wherein it seemeth to them strange, that yee runne not with them vnto the same excesse of riot, *therefore* speake they euill *of you*.

5 Which shall giue accounts to him, that is readie to iudge quicke and dead.

6 For vnto this purpose was the Gospel preached also vnto the dead, that they might be condemned, according to men in the flesh, but might liue according to God in the spirit.

7 Now the end of all things is at hand. Be yee therefore sober, and watching in prayer. *Pro.10.12.*

8 But aboue all things haue feruent loue among you: * for loue shall couer the multitude of sinnes. *Rom.12.13.hebr.13.2.*

9 Be ye * harberous one to another without grudging.

10 * Let euery man as hee hath receiued the gift, minister the same one to another, as good disposers of the manifold grace of God. *Rom.12.6 phil.2.14.*

11 If any man speake, *let him speake* as the words of God. If any man minister, *let him doe it* as of the abilitie which God ministreth, that God in all things may be glorified thrugh Iesus Christ, to whom is praise and dominion for euer and euer, Amen.

12 Deerely beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery triall, which is among you to proue you, as though some strange thing were come vnto you:

13 But reioyce, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christs sufferings, that when his glory shall appear, ye may be glad & reioyce.

Mat.5.10 14 *If yee be railed vpon for the name of Christ, blessed *are ye* for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth vpon you: *which* on their part is euill spoken of: but on your part is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murtherer, *as* a thiefe, or an euill doer, or as a busie body in other mens matters.

16 But if *any man suffer* as a Christian, let him not be ashamed: but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.

17 For the time *is come*, that iudgement must beginne at the house of God: if it first *begin* at vs, what shall be the end of them which obey not the Gospel of God?

Pro.11.31 18 *And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where shal the vngodly and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit their soules *to him* in well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creator.

CHAP. V.

1 He warneth the Elders not to vsurpe authoritie ouer the Church, 5 willing the yonger sort to be willing to be taught, and to be modest, 8 to be sober and watchfull, to resist the crueltie of the diuell.

THe Elders which are among you, I beseech which am also an Elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also partaker of the glory that shall be reuealed,

2 Feed the flocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, caring for it not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind:

3 Not as though ye were lords ouer *Gods* heritage, but that ye may be ensamples to the flocke.

4 And when that chiefe shepheard shall appeare, yee shall receiue an incorruptible crowne of glory.

5 Likewise ye yonger, submit your selues vnto the Elders, and

Rom.12.10. submit your selues euery man one to another: *decke your selues

Iam.4.6. inwardly in lowlinesse of mind: for *God resisteth the proud, and

Iam.4.10 giueth grace to the humble.

6 *Humble your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time,

7 *Cast

7 *Cast all your care on him: for he careth for you. *Psal. 55.*
8 Be sober and watch: for your *aduersary the deuil as a roaring lyon walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure: *23. matth. 6.25.*
9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren which are in the world. *luk. 12.22. Luk. 22. 31.*
10 And the God of all grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that yee haue suffered a little, make you perfect, confirme, strengthen, and stablish *you.*
11 To whom *be* glory and dominion for euer, Amen.
12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, as I suppose, haue I written briefly, exhorting and testifying how that this is the true grace of God, wherein ye stand. *Rom. 15.*
13 *The Church* that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and Marcus my sonne. *16. 1. cor. 16. 20.*
14 Greete ye one another with the *kisse of loue. Peace *be* with you all which are in Christ Iesus. AMEN. *2. cor. 13. 12.*

THE SECOND EPISTLE generall of Peter.

CHAP. I.

3 Hauing spoken of the bountifulnesse of God, 5 and of the vertues of faith, 6 he exhorteth them to holinesse of life, 12 and that his counsell may be the more effectuall, 14 he sheweth that his death is at hand, 16 and that himselfe did see the power of Christ which he opened vnto them.

SImon Peter a seruant and an Apostle of IESVS Christ, to you which haue obtained like precious faith with vs by the righteousnesse of our God and Sauiour Iesus Christ:
2 Grace and peace be multiplied to you, through the acknowledging of God, and of IESVS our Lord,
3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that *pertaine* vnto life and godlines, through the acknowledging of him that hath called vs vnto glory and vertue.
4 Whereby most great, and precious promises are giuen vnto vs, that by them ye should bee partakers of the diuine nature, in that ye flee the corruption, which is in the world through lust.
5 Therefore giue euen all diligence thereunto: ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith, and with vertue, knowledge:
6 And with knowledge, temperance: and with temperance, patience: and with patience, godlinesse:

7 And with godlineſſe, brotherly kindneſſe: and with bro-
therly kindneſſe, loue.

8 For if theſe things be among you, and abound, they will
make you that ye neither ſhall be idle, nor vnfruitfull in the ac-
knowledging of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt:

9 For he that hath not theſe things, is blinde, and cannot ſee
farre off, and hath forgotten that hee was purged from his olde
ſinnes.

10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence to make your
calling and election ſure: for if ye doe theſe things, yee ſhall ne-
uer fall.

11 For by this meanes an entring ſhall be miniſtred vnto you
abundantly into the euerlaſting kingdome of our Lord and Sa-
uiour Ieſus Chriſt.

12 Wherefore, I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in
remembrance of theſe things, though that yee haue knowledge,
and be eſtabliſhed in the preſent trueth.

13 For I thinke it meete as long as I am in this tabernacle, to
ſtirre you vp by putting you in remembrance,

14 Seeing I knowe that the time is at hand that I muſt lay
downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lord Ieſus Chriſt hath
*Iohn 21. 18. *ſhewed me.

15 I will endeuour therefore alwayes, that ye alſo may be able
to haue remembrance of theſe things after my departing.

2. Cor. 1. 17. and 2. 1. 16 *For we followed not deceiueable fables when we opened
vnto you the power, and comming of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, but
with our eyes we ſaw his Maieſtie.

Mat. 17. 5 17 For he receiued of God the Father honour and glory, when
there came ſuch a voice to him from that excellent glory, *This
is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleaſed.

18 And this voice we heard when it came from heauen, being
with him in the holy mount.

19 Wee haue alſo a moſt ſure word of the Prophets, to the
which ye doe well that ye take heede, as vnto a light that ſhineth
in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day ſtarre ariſe in
your hearts.

2. Tim. 3. 16. 20 *So that ye firſt know this, that no prophecie of the Scrip-
ture is of any priuate interpretation.

21 For the prophecie came not in olde time by the will of
man: but holy men of God ſpake as they were mooued by the
holy Ghoſt.

CHAP. II.

1 *He foretelleth them of falſe teachers, 3 whoſe wicked ſleights and
deſtruction he declareth. 12 He compareth them to bruite beaſts,*

17 and

17 *and to welles without water, 20 because they seeke to withdraw men from God to their olde filthinesse.*

BVt there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shall be false teachers among you: which priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord, that hath bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift damnation.

2 And many shall follow their destructions, by whome the way of trueth shall be euill spoken of,

3 And through couetousnesse shall they with fained wordes make merchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the * Angels that had sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darkenesse, to be kept vnto damnation: *Iob 4.18. Iude 6.*

5 Neither hath spared the olde world, but saued * Noe the eight *person*, a preacher of righteousnes, and brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly, *Gen.7.1.*

6 And *turned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrhe into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrew them, and made them an ensample vnto them that after should liue vngodly, *Gene.19. 13,24.*

7 And deliuered iust Loth vexed with the vncleane conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vnlawfull deedes.)

9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the godly out of tentation, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment.

10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise gouernment, *which are* bold and stand in their owne conceit, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie.

11 Whereas the Angels which are greater both in power and might, giue not railing iudgement against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as naturall brute beasts, led with sensualitie, and made to be taken & destroyed, speake euill of those things which they know not, and shall perish through their owne corruption,

13 And shall receiue the wages of vnrighteousnesse, as they which count it pleasure dayly to liue deliciously: ‖ Spots *they are* and blots, delighting themselues in their deceiuings, in feasting with you, ‖ Or, little rockes.

14 Hauing eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease to sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: they haue hearts exercised with couetousnesse; *they are* the children of curse;

7 And with godlineſſe, brotherly kindneſſe: and with bro-
therly kindneſſe, loue.

8 For if theſe things be among you, and abound, they will
make you that ye neither ſhall be idle, nor vnfruitfull in the ac-
knowledging of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt:

9 For he that hath not theſe things, is blinde, and cannot ſee
farre off, and hath forgotten that hee was purged from his olde
ſinnes.

10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence to make your
calling and election ſure: for if ye doe theſe things, yee ſhall ne-
uer fall.

11 For by this meanes an entring ſhall be miniſtred vnto you
abundantly into the euerlaſting kingdome of our Lord and Sa-
uiour Ieſus Chriſt.

12 Wherefore, I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in
remembrance of theſe things, though that yee haue knowledge,
and be eſtabliſhed in the preſent trueth.

13 For I thinke it meete as long as I am in this tabernacle, to
ſtirre you vp by putting you in remembrance,

14 Seeing I knowe that the time is at hand that I muſt lay
downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lord Ieſus Chriſt hath
*Iohn 21. 18. * ſhewed me.

15 I will endeuour therefore alwayes, that ye alſo may be able
to haue remembrance of theſe things after my departing.

1. Cor. 1. 17. and 2. 1. 16 * For we followed not deceiuecable fables when we opened
vnto you the power, and comming of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, but
with our eyes we ſaw his Maieſtie.

Mat. 17. 5 17 For he receiued of God the Father honour and glory, when
there came ſuch a voice to him from that excellent glory, * This
is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleaſed.

18 And this voice we heard when it came from heauen, being
with him in the holy mount.

19 Wee haue alſo a moſt ſure word of the Prophets, to the
which ye doe well that ye take heede, as vnto a light that ſhineth
in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day ſtarre ariſe in
your hearts.

2. Tim. 3. 16. 20 * So that ye firſt know this, that no prophecie of the Scrip-
ture is of any priuate interpretation.

21 For the prophecie came not in olde time by the will of
man: but holy men of God ſpake as they were moued by the
holy Ghoſt.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of falſe teachers, 3 whoſe wicked ſleights and deſtruction he declareth. 12 He compareth them to bruite beaſts,

17 and

17 *and to welles without water, 20 because they seeke to with-*
draw men from God to their olde filthinesse.

BVt there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shall be false teachers among you: which priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord, that hath bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift damnation.

2 And many shall follow their destructions, by whome the way of trueth shall be euill spoken of,

3 And through couetousnesse shall they with fained wordes make merchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the * Angels that had sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darkenesse, to be kept vnto damnation: *Iob 4.18. iude 6.*

5 Neither hath spared the olde world, but saued * Noe the eight *person*, a preacher of righteousnes, and brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly, *Gen.7.1.*

6 And *turned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrhe into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrew them, and made them an ensample vnto them that after should liue vngodly, *Gene.19. 13,24.*

7 And deliuered iust Loth vexed with the vncleane conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vnlawfull deedes.)

9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the godly out of tentation, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment.

10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise gouernment, *which are* bold, and stand in their owne conceit, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie.

11 Whereas the Angels which are greater both in power and might, giue not railing iudgement against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as naturall brute beasts, led with sensualitie, and made to be taken & destroyed, speake euill of those things which they know not, and shall perish through their owne corruption,

13 And shall receiue the wages of vnrighteousnesse, as they which count it pleasure dayly to liue deliciously: ‖ Spots *they are* and blots, delighting themselues in their deceiuings, in feasting with you, ‖ Or, little rockes.

14 Hauing eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease to sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: they haue hearts exercised with couetousnesse; *they are* the children of curse:

15 Which forsaking the right way, haue gone astray, following
Num.22. the way of *Balaam, *the sonne* of Bosor, which loued the wages
.23. of vnrighteousnesse.

16 But he was rebuked for his iniquitie: for the dumbe beast speaking with mans voice, forbade the foolishnesse of the Prophet.

Iude 12. 17 *These are welles without water, *and* cloudes caried about with a tempest, to whom the blacke darkenesse is reserued for euer.

18 For in speaking swelling wordes of vanity, they beguile with wantonnesse through the lusles of the flesh them that were cleane escaped from them which are wrapped in errour,

Ioh.8.34. 19 Promising vnto them libertie, and are themselues the *ser-
rom.6.20. uants of corruption: for of whomsoeuer a man is ouercome, euen vnto the same is he in bondage.

Mat.12. 20 *For if they, after they haue escaped from the filthinesse of
45.hebr. the world, through the acknowledging of the Lord, and of the Sa-
6.4. uiour Iesus Christ, are yet tangled againe therein, and ouercome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning.

21 For it had beene better for them, not to haue acknowledged the way of righteousnes, then after they haue acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commandement giuen vnto them.

22 But it is come vnto them according to the true prouerbe,
Prou. 26. * The dogge is returned to his owne vomite: and, The sow that
11. was washed, to the wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth that he writeth the same things againe, 2 because they must often be stirred vp, 4 because dangers hang ouer their heads through certaine mockers: 8 therfore he warneth the godly that they doe not, after the iudgement of the flesh, 12 appoint the day of the Lord, 14 but that they thinke it alwayes at hand, 15 in which doctrine he sheweth that Paul agreeth with him.

THis second Epistle I now write vnto you beloued, wherewith I stirre vp, and warne your pure mindes.

2 To call to remembrance the words, which were tolde before of the holy Prophets, and also the commandement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour.

1.Tim.4.1 3 *This first vnderstand, That there shall come in the last
2 tim.3.1. dayes mockers, which will walke after their lusts,
iude 16. 4 And say, Where is the promise of his comming? For since the fathers died, all things continue alike from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly know not, that the heauens were of
olde,

wide, and the earth that was of the water, and by the water, by the word of God.

6 Wherefore the world that then was, perished, ouerflowed with the water.

7 But the heauens and earth which are now, are kept by the same word in store, and reserued vnto fire against the day of condemnation, and of the destruction of vngodly men.

8 Dearely beloued, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord, *as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeeres as one day. *Psal.90.4 Ezek.18.

9 The Lord of that promise is not slacke (as some men count slackenesse) but is patient toward vs, and *would haue no man to perish, but would all men to come to repentance. *2.Pet.3.9. 1.Tim.2.4

10 But the *day of the Lord will come as a thiefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with a noise, and the elements shall melt with heate, and the earth with the works that are therein, shall be burnt vp. *Mat.24. 44.1 Thes.5.2. Reuel.3.3. and 16.15.

11 Seeing therefore that all these things must be dissolued, what maner persons ought ye to be in holy conuersation and godlinesse,

12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the comming of that day of God, by the which the heauens being on fire, shall be dissolued, and the elements shall melt with heate?

13 But we looke for *new heauens, and a new earth, according to his promise, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse. *Isai.65.17. and 66.22.

14 Wherefore beloued, seeing that yee looke for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, reuel.21.27. and blameless.

15 *And suppose that the long suffering of our Lord is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul according to the wisdome giuen vnto him wrote vnto you, *Rom.2.4.

16 As one, that in all his Epistles speaketh of these things: among the which some things are hard to be vnderstood, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable, wrest, as they doe also other Scriptures vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore beloued, seeing ye know these things before, beware, lest ye be also plucked away with the error of the wicked, and fall from your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him *be* glory both now and for euermore, AMEN.

THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of Iohn.

CHAP. I.

1 He testifieth that he bringeth the eternall word wherein is life, & and light. 9 God will be mercifull vnto the faithfull if groning vnder the burden of their sinnes, they learne to flee vnto his mercie.

THat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which wee haue seene with these our eyes, which wee haue looked vpon, and these handes of ours haue handled of that word of life,

2 (For that life was made manifest, & we haue seene it, and beare witnesse, and shew vnto you that eternall life, which was with the Father, and was made manifest vnto vs)

3 That, I say, which wee haue seene and heard, declare wee vnto you, that ye may also haue fellowship with vs, and that our fellowship also may be with the Father, and with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, that that your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the message, which we haue heard of him, and
Iohn 8. 12. declare vnto you, that God * is light, and in him is no darknesse.

6 If we say that wee haue fellowship with him, and walke in
Heb. 9. 28 1. pet. 2. 19. reuel. 1. 5. darkenesse, we lie, and doe not truely:

7 But if we walke in the light, as he is in the light, we haue fellowship one with another, and the * blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne cleanseth vs from all sinne.

8 * If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceiue our selues, and
1. King. 8. 46. 2. chro. 6. 36. prou. 20. 9. truth is not in vs.

9 If we acknowledge our sinnes, he is faithfull and iust to forgiue vs our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from all vnrighteousnesse.

10 If we say we haue not sinned, we make him a lyar, and his word is not in vs.

CHAP. II.

1 He declareth that Christ is our Mediatour and aduocate. 3 and sheweth that the knowledge of God consisteth in holinesse of life. 12 Which appertaineth to all sorts, 14 that depend on Christ alone: 15 Then hauing exhorted them to contemne the world, 18 he giueth warning that Antichrist be auoided, 24 and that the known trueth be stood vnto.

MY little children, these things write I vnto you, that ye sinne not: and if any man sinne, wee haue an Aduocate with the Father, Iesus Christ, the Iust.

2 And

2 And hee is the reconciliation for our ſinnes: and not for ours onely, but alſo for *the ſinnes* of the whole world.

3 And hereby we are ſure that we know him, if we keepe his Commandements.

4 Hee that ſaith, I know him, and keepeth not his Commandements, is a lyar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But hee that keepeth his word, in him is the loue of God perfect indeed: hereby we know that we are in him.

6 He that ſaith, he remaineth in him, ought euen ſo to walke, as he hath walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandement vnto you: but an old commandement, which ye haue had from the beginning: this old commandement is that word, which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a new commandement I write vnto you, that which is true in him, and alſo in you: for that darkeneſſe is paſt, and that true light now ſhineth.

9 He that ſaith that he is in that light, and hateth his brother, is in darkeneſſe vntill this time.

10 *He that loueth his brother, abideth in that light, and there is none occaſion of euill in him. *1.Ioh.3.14.

11 But he that hateth his brother is in darkneſſe, and walketh in darkeneſſe, and knoweth not whither he goeth, becauſe that darkeneſſe hath blinded his eyes.

12 Little children, I write vnto you, becauſe your ſinnes are forgiuen you for his Names ſake.

13 I write vnto you, Fathers, becauſe yee haue knowen him that is from the beginning: I write vnto you, young men, becauſe yee haue ouercome that wicked one. I write vnto you, little children, becauſe ye haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, becauſe ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, young men, becauſe ye are ſtrong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye haue ouercome that wicked one.

15 Loue not this world, neither the things that are in this world. If any man loue this world, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in this world (*as* the luſt of the fleſh, the luſt of the eyes, and the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this world.

17 And this world paſſeth away, and the luſt thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth euer.

18 Little children, It is the laſt time, and as yee haue heard that Antichriſt ſhall come, euen now are there many Antichriſts: where-

whereby wee know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had been of vs, they should haue continued with vs. But *this commeth to passe*, that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs.

20 But ye haue an oyntment from that Holy one, and know all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye know not the trueth but because yee know it, and that no lie is of the trueth.

22 Who is a lyar, but he that denieth that Iesus is that Christ? the same is that Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father.

24 Let therefore abide in you that same which yee haue heard from the beginning. If that which ye haue heard from the beginning, shall remaine in you, yee also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, *euen* that eternall life.

26 These things haue I written vnto you, concerning them that deceiue you.

27 But that anointing which yee receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and yee neede not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, and as it taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, wee may be bold, and not be ashamed before him at his comming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, know yee that he which doeth righteously, is borne of him.

CHAP. III.

1 *Setting downe the inestimable glory of this, that wee are Gods sonnes,* 7 *hee sheweth that newnesse of life must be testified by good workes,* 11 *whereof charitie is a manifest token.* 19 *Of faith,* 22 *and praying vnto God.*

BEhold, what loue the Father hath giuen to vs, that we should be called the sonnes of God: for this cause this world knoweth you not, because it knoweth not him.

2 Dearely beloued, now are we the sonnes of God, but yet it is not made manifest what we shall be: and we know that when he shall be made manifest, wee shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purgeth himselfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the Law: for sinne is the transgression of the Law.

5 And

5 And yee know that hee was made manifeſt, that hee might *take away our ſinnes, and in him is no ſinne. *Iſai 53.6*

6 Whoſoeuer abideth in him, ſinneth not: whoſoeuer ſinneth, hath not ſeene him, neither hath knowen him. *9,11. 1.per.2.*

7 Little children, let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteouſnes, is righteous, as he is righteous. *22,24.*

8 He that * committeth ſinne, is of the deuill: for the deuill ſinneth from the beginning: for this purpoſe was made manifeſt that Sonne of God, that hee might looſe the workes of the deuill. *Ioh.8.44.*

9 Whoſoeuer is borne of God ſinneth not: for his ſeede remaineth in him, neither can he ſinne, becauſe he is borne of God.

10 In this are the children of God knowen, and the children of the deuill: whoſoeuer doeth not righteouſneſſe, is not of God, neither hee that loueth not his brother.

11 For this is the meſſage, that ye heard from the beginning, that * we ſhould loue one another. *Iohn 13. 34 and*

12 Not as * Cain *which* was of that wicked one, and ſlew his brother: and wherefore ſlew hee him? becauſe his owne workes were euill, and his brothers good. *15.12. Gen. 4.8.*

13 Maruaile not, my brethren, though this world hate you.

14 We know that we are tranſlated from death vnto life, becauſe we loue the brethren: * he that loueth not *his* brother, abideth in death. *Cha.2.10. Ieu.19.17.*

15 Whoſoeuer hateth his brother is a manſlayer: and ye know that no manſlayer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 * Hereby haue we perceiued loue, that hee laid downe his life for vs: therefore wee ought alſo to lay downe *our* liues for the brethren. *Iohn 15. 13. ephes. 5.2.*

17 * And whoſoeuer hath this worlds good, and ſeeth his brother haue neede, and ſhutteth vp his compaſsion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him? *Luk. 3.11.*

18 My little children, let vs not loue in word, neither in tongue *onely*, but in deed and in trueth.

19 For thereby wee know that we are of the trueth, and ſhall before him aſſure our hearts.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things. *Chap. 5.14*

21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we boldneſſe toward God: *mat. 21. 22. iohn*

22 * And whatſoeuer we aske, we receiue of him, becauſe we keepe his commandements, and doe thoſe things which are pleaſing in his ſight. *15.7 and 16.25. Ioh.6.23.*

23 * This is then his commandement, That we beleeue in the *and 17.3* Name

Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as hee gaue commandement.

Ioh.13.34 and 15.10 24 *For he that keepeth his commandements dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in vs, euen by that Spirit which he hath giuen vs.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Hauing spoken somewhat touching the trying of spirits: 4 For some speake after the world, 5 and some after God: 7 He returneth to charitie, 11. 19 and by the example of God he exhorteth to brotherly loue.

DEarely beloued, beleeue not euery spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: for many false prophets are gone out into this world.

2 Hereby shall ye know the Spirit of God. Euery spirit which confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euery spirit that confesseth not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the *spirit* of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, how that he should come, and now already he *is* in this world.

4 Litle children, ye are of God, and haue ouercome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in this world.

5 They are of this world, therefore speake they of this world, and this world heareth them.

Iohn 8.47 6 We are of God, *hee that knoweth God, heareth vs: hee that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby know wee the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue commeth of God, and euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

Iohn 3.16 9 * Herein was that loue of God made manifest amongst vs, because God sent that his onely begotten Sonne into this world, that we might liue through him.

10 Herein is that loue, not that we loued God, but that hee loued vs, and sent his Sonne *to be* a reconciliation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, wee ought also to loue one another.

Iohn 1.18 1 Iohn.4. 12 12 *No man hath seene God at any time. If wee loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs.

13 Hereby know we that we dwel in him, and he in vs: because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene and doe testifie, that the father sent that Sonne *to be* the Sauiour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer confesseth that Iesus is the Sonne of God, *in* him dwelleth God, and he in God.

16 And

16 And we haue knowen, and beleeued the loue that God hath in vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that we should haue boldnesse in the day of iudgement: for as he is, euen so are we in this world.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath paine: fulnesse: and he that feareth, is not perfect in loue.

19 We loue him, because he loued vs first.

20 If any man say, I loue God, and hate his brother, he is a liar: for how can he that loueth not his brother whom hee hath seene, loue God whom he hath not seene?

21 *And this commandement haue we of him, that he that loueth God, should loue his brother also. *John 13. 34. and 15.12.

CHAP. V.

1 *He sheweth that brotherly loue and faith are things inseparable:* 10 *And that there is no faith toward God, but by beleeuing in Christ.* 14 *Hence proceedeth calling vpon God with assurance,* 16 *and also that our prayers be auaileable for our brethren.*

WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is that Christ, is borne of God, and euery one that loueth him, which begate, loueth him also which is begotten of him.

2 In this we know that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keep his commandements.

3 For this is the loue of God, that wee keepe his commandements: and his * commandements are not burdenous. *Mat.11.30

4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth this world: and this is that victorie that hath ouercome this world, *euen* our faith.

5 *Who is it that ouercommeth this world, but he which beleeueth that Iesus is that Sonne of God? *1.Cor.15. 57.

6 This is that Iesus Christ that came by water and blood: not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is that Spirit that beareth witnesse, for that Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three, which beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three, which beare record in the earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

9 If wee receiue the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which he testified of his Sonne.

10 *He that beleeueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: he that beleeueth not God, hath made him a lyar, because *Iohn 3.36

beeause he beleeued not the record, that God witnessed of that his Sonne.

11 And this is that record, *to wit*, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall life, and this life is in that his Sonne.

12 He that hath that Sonne, hath that life: and he that hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you that beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God, that yee may know that yee haue eternall life, and that yee may beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God.

Chap.3.22 14 And this is that assurance, that we haue in him, * that if we aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs.

15 And if we know that he heareth vs, whatsoeuer we aske, we know that we haue the petitions that we haue desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne that is not vnto death, let him aske, and he shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. * There is a sinne vnto death: I say not that thou shouldest pray for it.

Mat.12. 31. Mar.3.29 17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, but there is a sinne not vnto death.

18 We know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 We know that we are of God, and this whole world lieth in wickednesse.

Luk.24 45. 20 But we know that that Sonne of God is* come, and hath giuen vs a mind to know him which is true: and we are in him that is true, *that is*, in that his Sonne Iesus Christ: the same is that very God, and that eternall life.

21 Little children, keepe your selues from idols. Amen.

THE SECOND Epistle of Iohn.

1 *The Epistle is written to a woman of great renowme, 4 who brought vp her children in the feare of God: 6 he exhorteth her to continue in Christian charitie, 7 that she accompany not with Antichrists, 10 but auoid them.*

THE Elder to the elect Lady and her children whom I loue in the truth: and not I onely, but also all that haue knowen the truth,

2 For the truths sake which dwelleth in vs, and shall be with vs for euer:

3 Grace be with you, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and

and from the Lord Iesus Christ the Sonne of the Father, with truth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we haue receiued a commandement of the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee Lady, (not as writing a new commandement vnto thee, but the same which we had from the beginning) that we *loue one another. *Ioh.13.34.*

6 And this is that loue, that wee should walke after his commandements. This commandement is, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into this world, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one, is a deceiuer and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selues, that we lose not the things which wee haue done, but that we may receiue a full reward.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. Hee that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, *receiue him not to house, neither bid him, God speed: *Rom.16. 17.*

11 For he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his euill deeds. Although I had many things to write vnto you, yet I would not *write* with paper and ynke: but I trust to come vnto you, and speake mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full.

12 The sonnes of thine elect sister greet thee, Amen.

THE THIRD EPISTLE of Iohn.

1 He commendeth Gaius for his hospitalitie: 9 & reprehendeth Diotrephes for vaine glory: 10 Hee exhorteth Gaius to continue in well doing: 12 and in the end commendeth Demetrius.

THE Elder vnto the beloued Gaius, whom I loue in the truth.

2 Beloued, I wish chiefly that thou prosperedst and fairedst well as thy soule prospereth.

3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and testified of the truth that is in thee, how thou walkest in the truth.

4 I haue no greater ioy then these *that is*, to heare that my sonnes walke in veritie.

5 Behold, thou doest faithfully, whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers,

6 Which bare witnesse of thy loue before the Churches. Whom

Whom if thou bringest on their iourney as it beseemeth, accor-
ding to God, thou shalt doe well,

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, and tooke
nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be hel-
pers to the truth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to
haue the preheminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will call to your remembrance his
deedes, which he doth, prating against vs with malicious words,
and not therewith content, neither he himselfe receiueth the bre-
thren, but forbiddeth them that would, and thrusteth them out of
the Church.

11 Beloued, follow not that which is euil, but that which is
good: he that doth well is of God: but hee that doth euill hath
not seene God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth
it selfe: yea, and we our selues beare record, and ye know that our
record is true.

13 I haue many things to write: but I will not with inke and
penne write vnto thee:

14 For I trust I shal shortly see thee, and we shal speake mouth
to mouth. Peace be with thee. The friends salute thee. Greete the
friends by name.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE of Iude.

3 He warneth the godly to take heede of such men 4 that make the grace of God a cloake for their wantonnesse, 5 and that they shall not escape vnpunished for the contempt of that grace, 6 7 he proueth by three examples: 14 and alleadgeth the prophecie of Enoch: 20 Finally he sheweth the godly a meane to ouerthrow all the snares of those deceiuers.

IVde a seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames, to them which are called and sanctified of God the Father, and reserued to Iesus Christ:

2 Mercie vnto you, and peace and loue be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was needfull for me to write vnto you, to exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for *the maintenance* of the faith, which was once giuen vnto the Saints.

4 For

4 For there are certaine men crept in, which were before of old ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly men *they are* which turne the grace of our God into wantonnesse, and * deny God, the only Lord, and our Lord Iesus Christ. 2.*Pet.*2.1

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, forasmuch as yee once knewe this, how that the Lord, after that hee had deliuered the people out of Egypt, * destroyed them afterward which beleeued not. *Num.* 14.37.

6 The * Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitation, he hath reserued in euerlasting chaines vnder darknesse vnto the iudgement of the great day. 2.*Pet.*2.4

7 As * Sodome and Gomorrhe, and the cities about them, which in like maner as they did, committed fornication, and followed strange flesh, are set foorth for an ensample, and suffer the vengeance of eternall fire. *Gene.* 19.24.

8 Likewise notwithstanding these sleepers also defile the flesh, and despise gouernment, and speake euill of them that are in authoritie.

9 Yet Michael the Archangel when he strooue against the deuil, and disputed about the body of Moses, durst not blame him with cursed speaking, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speake euil of those things which they know not: and whatsoeuer things they know naturally, as beastes, which are without reason, in those things they corrupt themselues.

11 Wo *be* vnto them: for they haue followed the way of * Cain, and are cast away by the deceit * of Balaams wages, and perish in the gainesaying * of Core. *Gene.* 4.8 *Num.* 22.21.2.*Pet.*

12 These are rockes in your feastes of charitie when they feast with you, without all feare, feeding themselues: * clouds *they are* without water, carried about of winds, corrupt trees, *and* without fruit, twise dead, *and* plucked vp by the roots. 2.15. *Num.* 16.1. 2.*Pet.*2.

13 *They are* the raging waues of the sea, foming out their owne shame: *they are* wandring starres, to whom is reserued the blacknesse of darknesse for euer. 17.

14 And Enoch also the seuenth from Adam, prophesied of such, saying, * Beholde, the Lord commeth with thousands of his Saints, *Reue.*1.7

15 To giue iudgement against all men, and to rebuke all the vngodly among them of all their wicked deedes, which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their cruel speaking, which wicked sinners haue spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts: * whose mouthes speake proud things, hauing mens persons in admiration, because of aduantage. *Psal.* 17.10.

17 But ye beloued, remember the wordes which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ,

1.Tim.4. 2.2.tim. 3.1.2.pet. 2.3. 18 How that they tolde you that there should be mockers * in the last time, which should walke after their owne vngodly lusts.

19 These are they that separate themselues from other, naturall, hauing not the Spirit.

20 But, ye beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost.

21 And keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercie of our Lord Iesus Christ, vnto eternall life.

22 And haue compassion of some, in putting difference:

23 And other saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire, and hate euen that garment which is spotted by the flesh.

24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you, that yee fall not, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with ioy,

25 *That is*, to God onely wise, our Sauiour, *be* glory, and maiestie, and dominion, and power, both now and for euer, Amen.

THE REVELATION OF IOHN the Diuine.

CHAP. I.

1 He declareth what kinde of doctrine is here handled, 8 euen his, That is the beginning and ending: 12 Then the mystery of the seuen Candlesticks, and starres 20 is expounded.

THE Reuelation of IESVS CHRIST, which GOD gaue vnto him, to shewe vnto his seruants things which must shortly be done: which he sent, and shewed by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn,

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed *is he* that readeth, and they that heare the wordes of this prophesie, and keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

Exo 3.14 Psal 89. 58. 1 Cor.15. his Throne.

4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches which are in Asia, Grace *be* with you, and peace from him, Which * is, and Which was, and Which is to come, and from the seuen Spirits, which are before

21.Col.1. 18.

5 And from Iesus Christ, which is that * faithfull witnesse, *and* * that first begotten of the dead, and that prince of the kings of the

the earth, vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in his * blood,

6 And made vs * Kings and Priests vnto God euen his Father, to him, *I say, be* glory and dominion for euermore, Amen.

7 Behold, he commeth with * clouds, and euery eye shall see him: *yea*, euen they which pierced him thorow: and all kinreds of the earth shall waile before him. Euen so, Amen.

8 I * am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, Which is, & Which was, and Which is to come, *euen* the Almightie.

9 I Iohn, euen your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of IESVS CHRIST, was in the yle called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the witnessing of Iesus Christ.

10 And I was *rauished* in spirit on the Lords day, and heard behinde me a great voice, as it had beene of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, that first, and that last: and that which thou seest, write in a booke, and send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 Then I turned backe to see the voice, that spake with mee: and when I was turned, I saw seuen golden candlesticks,

13 And in the mids of the seuen candlesticks, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the feet, and girded about the paps with a golden girdle.

14 His head, & haires *were* white as white wooll, *and* as snow, and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire,

15 And his feete like vnto fine brasse, burning as in a fornace: and his voice as the sound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and his face *shone* as the Sunne shineth in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feete as dead: then hee laid his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, Feare not: I am that * first and the last,

18 And am aliue, but I was dead: and behold, I am aliue for euermore, Amen: and I haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seene, and the things which are, and the things which shall come hereafter.

20 The mystery of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seuen golden candlesticks, *is thus*, The seuen starres are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

Heb. 9 14
1. *Pet.* 1. 19
1. *Ioh.* 1. 9.
1. *Pet.* 2. 5
Isa 3. 14.
mat. 24.
30. *iude* 14.
Cha. 21. 6
& 22. 13.
Isa 41. 4.
and 44. 6.

CHAP. II.

1 *John is commaunded to write those things, which the Lord knewe necessary, to the Churches of Ephesus, 2 of the Smyrnians, 12 of Pergamus, 18 and of Thyatira, 25 that they keepe those things which they receiued of the Apostles.*

VNto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus write, These things saith he that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, and walketh in the mids of the seuen golden candlesticks.

2 I knowe thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare with them which are euil, and hast examined them which say they are apostles, & are not, and hast found them liars.

3 And thou hast burdened, and hast patience, & for my Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Neuertheless, I haue *somewhat* against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the first workes: or else I will come against thee shortly, and will remoue thy candlestick out of his place, except thou amend.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the workes of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

7 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit sayeth vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of life which is in the mids of the Paradise of God.

8 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write, These things saith he that is first, and last, which was dead, and is aliue.

9 I know thy workes, and tribulation and pouerty (but thou art rich) and *I know* the blasphemy of them, which say they are Iewes and are not, but *are* the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things, which thou shalt suffer: behold, it shall come to passe, that the deuill shall cast some of you into prison, that yee may be tryed, and yee shall haue tribulation tenne dayes: bee thou faithfull vnto the death, and I will giue thee the crowne of life.

11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith to the Churches, He that ouercommeth, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 ¶ And to the Angel of the Church which is at Pergamus write, This saieth hee which hath that sharpe sword with two edges.

13 I knowe thy workes, and where thou dwellest, *euen* where Satans throne is, and thou keepest my Name, and hast not denied

my

my faith, euen in those dayes when Antipas my faithfull martyr was slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a fewe things against thee, because thou hast there them that maintain the doctrine of *Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, that they should eate of things sacrificed vnto idoles, and commit fornication. *Num. 24. and 25.1.

15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent thy selfe, or else I will come vnto thee shortly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth sauing he that receiueth it.

18 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church, which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete like fine brasse.

19 I know thy workes, and thy loue, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and that *they are* moe at the last, then at the first.

20 Notwithstanding I haue a few things against thee, that thou suffereſt the woman Iezabel, which calleth her selfe a Prophetesse, to teach and to deceiue my seruants, to make them commit fornication, and to eate meate sacrificed vnto idoles.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and shee repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their workes.

23 And I wil kil her children with death: and all the Churches shall know that I am he which * search the reines and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according vnto your workes. 1. *Sam.* 16. 7. *psal.* 7.

24 And vnto you I say, the rest of them of Thyatira, As many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepenesse of Satan (as they speake) I will put vpon you none other burden, 10. *iere.* 11.20. & 17.10.

25 But that which ye haue already, hold fast till I come.

26 For hee that ouercommeth and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him will I giue power ouer nations,

27 * And hee shall rule them with a rod of yron: *and* as the vessell of a potter, shall they be broken. *Psal.* 2.9

28 Euen as I receiued of my Father, so will I giue him the morning starre.

29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſayth to the Churches.

CHAP. III.

1 The firſt Epiſtle ſent to the Paſtours of the Church of Sardis, 7 of Philadelphia, 14 and of the Laodiceans, 16 that they bee not luke warme, 20 but endeauour to further Gods glory.

AND write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, Theſe things ſaith hee that hath the ſeuen Spirits of God, and the ſeuen ſtarres, I know thy workes: for thou haſt a name that thou liueſt, but thou art dead.

2 Be awake and ſtrengthen the things which remaine, that are ready to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfit before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou haſt receiued and heard, and hold faſt and repent. * If therefore thou wilt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou ſhalt not know what houre I will come vpon thee.

Chap.16. 15.1.theſ. 5.2.2.pet. 3.10.

4 *Notwithſtanding* thou haſt a few names yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: and they ſhall walke with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 Hee that ouercommeth ſhalbe clothed in white aray, and I will not put out his name out of the * booke of life, but I will confeſſe his name before my Father, and before his Angels.

Chap.20. 12. and 21.27.

6 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſayth vnto the Churches.

phil.4.3.

7 ¶ And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is of Philadelphia, Theſe things ſayth hee, that is Holy, and True, which hath the key of Dauid, which openeth and no man ſhutteth, and ſhutteth and no man openeth,

8 I know thy workes: behold, I haue ſet before thee an open doore, and no man can ſhut it: for thou haſt a little ſtrength, and haſt kept my word, and haſt not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themſelues Iewes, and are not, but doe lie: behold, *I ſay*, I will make them, that they ſhall come and worſhip before thy feete, and ſhall know that I haue loued thee.

10 Becauſe thou haſt kept the word of my patience, therefore I will deliuer thee from the houre of tentation, which will come vpon all the world, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Behold, I come ſhortly: hold that which thou haſt, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he ſhall goe no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, *which is*, the new Hieruſalem, which commeth downe out of hea-

ven

nen from my God, and *I will write vpon him* my new Name.

13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches,

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans write, These things saith Amen, that faithfull and true witnesse, that beginning of the creatures of God.

15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither colde nor hote. I would thou were it cold or hote.

16 Therefore, because thou art luke warme, & neither cold nor hote, it wil come to passe, that I shall spew thee out of my mouth.

17 For thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and haue neede of nothing, and knowest not how thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to buy of me gold tried by the fire, that thou mayest be made rich: and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that thy filthy nakednesse doe not appeare: and anoint thine eyes with eyesalue, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I loue, * I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and amend. *pro. 3. 12 heb. 12. 5.*

20 Behold, I stand at the doore, and knocke. If any man heare my voice and open the doore, I will come in vnto him, and will suppe with him, and he with me.

21 To him that ouercommeth, wil I grant to sit with me in my throne, euen as I ouercame, and sit with my Father in his throne.

22 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Another vision containing the glory of Gods Maiestie,* 8 *Which is magnified of the foure beasts,* 10 *and the foure and twentie Elders.*

After this I looked, and behold, a doore was open in heauen, and the first voice which I heard, was as *it were* of a trumpet talking with mee, saying. Come vp hither, and I will shewe thee things, which must be done hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was *rauished* in the spirit, and behold, a throne was set in heauen, and one sate vpon the throne.

3 And he that sate, was to looke vpon, like vnto a Iasper stone and a Sardine, and there *was* a rainebow round about the throne in sight like to an emerauld.

4 And round about the throne *were* foure and twenty seates, and vpon the seats I saw foure and twentie Elders sitting, cloathed in white raiment, and had on their heads crownes of golde.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightenings, and thunderings, and voices, and there were seuen lampes of fire burning

before the throne, which are the seuen spirits of God.

6 And before the throne there *was* a sea of glasse like vnto crystall: and in the middes of the throne, and round about the throne *were* foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the first beast *was* like a lyon, and the second beast like a calfe, & the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast *was* like a flying Eagle.

8 And the foure beasts had each one of them sixe wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they ceased not day nor night, saying, Holy, holy, holy Lord God Almightie, Which was, and Which is, and Which is to come.

9 And when those beasts gaue glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sate on the throne, which liueth for euer and euer,

10 The foure and twentie Elders fell downe before him that sate on the throne, and worshipped him that liueth for euermore, and cast their crownes before the throne, saying,

Gen.5.12. 11 Thou art * worthy, O Lord, to receiue glory and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy wils sake they are and haue beene created.

CHAP. V.

1 The booke sealed with seuen seales, 3 which none could open, 6 that Lambe of God 9 is thought worthy to open, 12 euen by the consent of all the company of heauen.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne, a booke written within, and on the backeside, sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I sawe a strong Angel which preached with a loude voice, Who is worthy to open the booke, and to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth was able to open the booke, neither to looke thereon.

4 Then I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, and to reade the Booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders said vnto me, Weepe not: behold, *Gen.49.9* that * Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, that roote of Dauid, hath obtained to open the Booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof.

6 Then I beheld, and loe in the mids of the throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the middes of the Elders, stood a Lambe as though hee had beene killed, which had seuen hornes, and seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirits of God, sent into all the world.

7 And he came and tooke the booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne.

8 And when hee had taken the booke, the foure beasts, and the foure and twentie Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing

ning euery one harpes and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of the Saints,

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the Booke, and to open the seales thereof, because thou wast killed and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood out of euery kinred, and tongue, and people, and nation,

10 And hast made vs vnto our God *Kings and Priests, and we shall raigne on the earth. *Chap.1.6 1.pet.2.9

11 Then I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels round about the throne, and *about* the beasts, and the Elders, and there *were* ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousand thousands, *Dan.7.10*

12 Saying with a loud voyce, Worthy is the Lambe that was killed, to receiue power, and riches, and wisdome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and praise.

13 And all the creatures which are in heauen, & on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Praise, and honor, and glory, and power, *be* vnto him that sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euermore.

14 And the foure beasts said, Amen, and the foure and twenty Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth for euermore.

CHAP. VI.

1 *The Lambe openeth the first seale of the Booke,* 3 *the second,* 5 *the third,* 7 *the fourth,* 9 *the fift,* 12 *and the sixt, and then ariseth murders, famine, pestilence, outcries of Saints, earthquakes, and diuers strange sights in heauen.*

AFter, I beheld, when the Lambe had opened one of the seales, and I heard one of the foure beasts say, as *it were* the noyse of thunder, Come and see.

2 Therefore I beheld, and loe, there *was* a white horse, and hee that sate on him, had a bowe, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went forth conquering that he might ouercome.

3 And when he had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse, *that was* red, and power was giuen to him that sate thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, and there was giuen vnto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seale, I heard the third beast say, Come and see: Then I beheld, and loe, a blacke horse, and he that sate on him, had balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voyce in the middes of the foure beasts say, A measure of wheat for a pennie, and three measures of barley for a pennie, and oyle and wine hurt thou not.

7 And

7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was Death, and hell followed after him, and power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kil with sword and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fifth seale, I saw vnder the altar the soules of them that were killed for the word of God, and for the testimony which they maintained.

10 And they cried with a loud voyce, saying, How long, Lord, which art holy and true! doest thou not iudge and auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And long white robes were giuen vnto euery one, and it was said vnto them, that they should rest for a little season, vntill their fellow seruants, and their brethren that should bee killed, euen as they were, were fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixt seale, and loe, there was a great earthquake, & the sunne was as blacke as sackcloth of haire, and the moone was like blood.

13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, as a siggetree casteth her greene figges when it is shaken of a mighty winde.

14 And heauen departed away, as a scrole when it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were moued out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mightie men, and euery bondman, and euery freeman, hid themselues in dens, & among the rockes of the mountaines,

Isa 2.19 hos. 10.8 luk. 23.30 16 And said to the mountaines and rocks, *Fall on vs, and hide vs from the presence of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe.

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can stand?

CHAP. VII.

1 The Angels comming to hurt the earth, 3 are staied vntill the Elect of the Lord 5 of all tribes were sealed. 13 Such as suffred persecution for Christs sake, 16 haue great felicitie, 17 and ioy.

AND after that, I saw foure Angels stand on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure winds of the earth, that the windes should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree.

2 And I saw another Angel come vp from the East, which had the seale of the liuing God, and he cried with a loud voyce to

the foure Angels to whom power was giuen to hurt the earth, and the sea, saying,

3 Hurt ye not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees, till we haue sealed the seruants of our God, in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed, and there were sealed an hundreth and foure and fourty thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After these things I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kinreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with long white robes, and palmes in their hands.

10 And they cried with a loud voyce, saying, Saluation *commeth* of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, and of the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the throne, and *about* the Elders, and the foure beasts, and they fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen, Praise, and glory, and wisdome, and thanks, and honor, and power, and might *be* vnto our God for euermore, Amen.

13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto me, what are these which are arayed in long white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And hee said to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their long robes, and haue made their long robes white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, and serue him day and night in his temple, and he that sitteth on the throne will dwell among them.

16 *They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sunne light on them, neither any heate. *Esa 49. 10.

17 For the Lambe, which is in the middes of the throne, shall gouerne them, and shall lead them vnto the liuely fountaines of water,

Cha.22.4. water, and *God shall wipe away all teares from their eies.
Isa 25.8.

CHAP. VIII.

1 After the opening of the seuenth seale, 3 the Saints prayers are offered vp with odours. 6 The seuen Angels came forth with Trumpets. 7 The foure first blowe, and fire falleth on the earth, 8 the sea is turned into blood, 10. 11 the waters waxe bitter, 12 and the starres are darkened.

AND when he had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an houre.

2 And I saw the seauen Angels which stood before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 Then another Angel came and stood before the Altar, hauing a golden censer, and much odours was giuen vnto him that he should offer with the prayers of all Saints vpon the golden altar, which is before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours with the prayers of the Saints, went vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar and cast it into the earth, and there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, and earthquake.

6 Then the seuen Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to blow the trumpets.

7 So the first Angel blew the trumpet, and there was haile and fire, mingled with blood, and they were cast into the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt, and all greene grasse was burnt.

8 And the second Angel blewe the trumpet, and as it were a great mountaine, burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of ships were destroyed.

10 Then the third Angel blewe the trumpet, and there fell a great starre from heauen burning like a torch, and it fell into the third part of the riuers, and into the fountaines of waters.

11 And the name of the starre is called wormewood, therefore the third part of the waters became wormewood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, and the third part of the sunne was smitten, and the third part of the moone, and the third part of the starres, so that the third part of them was darkened: and the day *was smitten*, that the third part of it could not shine, and likewise the night.

13 And I beheld, and heard one Angel flying through the middes of heauen, saying with a loud voyce, Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the sounds to come of

the

the trumpets of the three Angels, which were yet to blowe the trumpets.

CHAP. IX.

1 The fift Angel bloweth his trumpet, 3 and spoyling locusts come out. 13 The sixt Angel bloweth, 16 & bringeth forth horsemen, 20 to destroy mankind.

AND the fift Angel blew the trumpet, & I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth, and to him was giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, & there arose the smoke of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace, and the Sunne and the ayre were darkened by the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoake locusts vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them, that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them was commaunded that they should not kill them, but that they should be vexed fiue moneths, and that their paine should be as the paine that commeth of a scorpion, when he hath stung a man.

6 *Therefore in those dayes shall men seeke death, and shall not find it and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.* *Cha. 6.16* *Isai 2.19*

7 And the forme of the locusts *was* like vnto horses prepared vnto battel, and on their heads *were as it were* crownes, like vnto gold, and their faces *were* like the faces of men. *Hose 10. 8*

8 And they had haire as the haire of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of Lyons.

9 And they had habergions like to habergions of yron: and the sound of their wings *was* like the sound of charets when many horses runne vnto battel.

10 And they had tailes like vnto scorpions, & there were stings in their tailes, and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they haue a King ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in Hebrew *is* Abaddon, & in Greeke he is named Apollyon, *that is, destroying.*

12 One woe is past, *and* behold, yet two woes come after this.

13 ¶Then the sixt Angel blew the trumpet, & I heard a voice from the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixt Angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels, which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared at

an

an houre, at a day, at a moneth, and at a yere, to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of horsemen of warre were twentie thousand times ten thousand: for I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in a vision, and them that sate on them, hauing fierie habergions and of Iacinth, and of brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lyons: and out of their mouthes went forth fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 Of these three was the third part of men killed, *that is*, of the fire, and of the smoke, and of the brimstone, which came out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouthes and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, & had heads where with they hurt.

20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the workes of their hands, that they
Psa. 115. 4 *and* 135. 15. should not worship deuils, and * idoles of gold and siluer, and of brasse, and of stone and wood, which neither can see, neither heare nor goe.

21 Also they repented not of their murder, & of their sorcerie, neither of their fornication, nor of their theft.

CHAP. X.

1 Another Angel appeareth clothed with a cloud, 2 holding a booke open, 3 and crieth out. 8 A voyce from heauen commandeth Iohn to take the booke: 10 He eateth it.

AND I saw another mightie Angel come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloud, and the rainbow vpon his head, and his face was as the sunne, and his feete as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little booke open, and he put his right foot vpon the sea, and *his* left on the earth,

3 And cried with a loud voyce, as when a lyon roareth: and when he had cried, seuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders haue spoken, and write them not.

5 And the Angel which I saw stand vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euermore, which created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, & the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things that therein are, that time should be no more.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seuenth Angel, when he shall begin to blow the trumpet, euen the mysterie of God shall be

be finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heauen, spake vnto mee againe, and said, Goe, and take the little booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea, and vpon the earth.

9 So I went vnto the Angel, and said to him, Giue mee the little booke. And he said vnto me, Take it, and eat it vp, and it shal make thy belly bitter, but it shall bee in thy mouth as sweete as honie.

10 Then I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth as sweet as hony: but when I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said vnto me, Thou must prophecie againe among the people, and nations, and tongues, and to many Kings.

CHAP. XI.

1 The Temple is cõmanded to be measured. 3 The Lord stirreth vp two witnesses. 7 whom the beast murdereth, 9 and no man burieth them. 11 God raiseth them to life, 12 and calleth them vp to heauen. 13 The wicked are terrified. 15 By the trumpet of the seuenth Angel, the resurrection 18 and iudgement is described.

THen was giuen me a reede, like vnto a rodde, and the Angel stood by, saying, Rise and mete the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the Temple, cast out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie shall they tread vnder foote, two and fourty moneths.

3 But I will giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophecie a thousand two hundreth and threescore daies, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are two oliue trees, and two candlestickes, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deuoureth their enemies: for if any man would hurt them, thus must he be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophecying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to smite the earth with all manner plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they haue finished their testimonie, the beast that commeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shal make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their corpses shall lie in the streetes of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodome and Egypt, where our Lord also was crucified.

9 And

9 And they of the people and kinreds, and tongues, and Gentiles shall see their corpses three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their carkeises to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shal reioyce ouer them and be glad, and shall send gifts one to another: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 But after three dayes and an halfe, the spirit of life *comming* from God, shal enter into them, and they shal stand vp vpon their feete: and great feare shall come vpon them which saw them.

12 And they shall heare a great voice from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they shall ascend vp to heauen in a cloud, and their enemies shall see them.

13 And the same houre shall there be a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie shall fall, and in the earthquake shall be slaine in number seuen thousand: and the remnant were fore feared, and gaue glory to the God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, *and* behold, the third woe will come anon.

15 And the seuenth Angel blewe the trumpet, and there were great voices in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this world are our Lords, and his Christs, and he shal reigne for euermore.

16 Then the foure and twenty Elders, which sate before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thanks, Lord God Almightie, which art, and which wast and which art to come: for thou hast receiued thy great might, and hast obtained thy kingdome.

18 And the Gentiles were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and to them that feare thy Name, to small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, & there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his couenant: & there were lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and earthquake, & much haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 *A woman appeareth* 2 *trauailing with childe,* 4 *whose childe the dragon would deuoure,* 7 *but Michael ouercommeth him,* 9 *and casteth him out,* 13 *and the more hee is cast downe and vanquished, the more fiercely hee exerciseth his subtilties.*

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, and the moone was vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres,

2 And

2 And she was with child, and cried trauailing in birth, and was pained ready to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for behold, a great red Dragon hauing seuen heads and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads.

4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and cast them to the earth. And the Dragon stood before the woman, which was ready to be deliuered, to deuoure her childe when she had brought it foorth.

5 So she brought foorth a man childe, which should rule all nations with a rod of iron: and that her child was taken vp vnto God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there, a thousand two hundreth and threescore dayes.

7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels.

8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great Dragon, that old serpent, called the deuill and Satan, was cast out, which deceiueth all the world: he was *then* cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 Then I heard a lowd voyce in heauen, saying, Now is saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 But they ouercame him by that blood of that Lambe, and by that word of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce, ye heauens, and yee that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that hee was cast vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which had brought foorth the man *childe*.

14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great Eagle, that shee might flee into the wildernesse, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the presence of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman, like a flood, that he might cause her to be caried away of the flood.

9 And they of the people and kinreds, and tongues, and Gentiles shall see their corpses three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their carkeises to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shal reioyce ouer them and be glad, and shall send gifts one to another: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 But after three dayes and an halfe, the spirit of life *comming* from God, shal enter into them, and they shal stand vp vpon their feete: and great feare shall come vpon them which saw them.

12 And they shall heare a great voice from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they shall ascend vp to heauen in a clond, and their enemies shall see them.

13 And the same houre shall there be a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie shall fall, and in the earthquake shall be slaine in number seuen thousand: and the remnant were sore feared, and gaue glory to the God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, *and* behold, the third woe will come anon.

15 And the seuenth Angel blewe the trumpet, and there were great voices in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this world are our Lords, and his Christs, and he shal reigne for euermore.

16 Then the foure and twenty Elders, which sate before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thanks, Lord God Almightie, which art, and which wast and which art to come: for thou hast receiued thy great might, and hast obtained thy kingdome.

18 And the Gentiles were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and to them that feare thy Name, to small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, & there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his couenant: & there were lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and earthquake, & much haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 *A woman appeareth* 2 *trauailing with childe,* 4 *whose childe the dragon would deuoure,* 7 *but Michael ouercommeth him,* 9 *and casteth him out,* 13 *and the more hee is cast downe and vanquished, the more fiercely hee exerciseth his subtilties.*

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, and the moone was vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres,

2 And

2 And she was with child, and cried trauailing in birth, and was pained ready to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for behold, a great red Dragon hauing seuen heads and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads.

4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and cast them to the earth. And the Dragon stood before the woman, which was ready to be deliuered, to deuoure her childe when she had brought it foorth.

5 So she brought foorth a man childe, which should rule all nations with a rod of iron: and that her child was taken vp vnto God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there, a thousand two hundreth and threescore dayes.

7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels.

8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great Dragon, that old serpent, called the deuill and Satan, was cast out, which deceiueth all the world: he was *euen* cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 Then I heard a lowd voyce in heauen, saying, Now is saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 But they ouercame him by that blood of that Lambe, and by that word of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce, ye heauens, and yee that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that hee was cast vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which had brought foorth the man *childe*.

13 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great Eagle, that shee might flee into the wildernesse, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the presence of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman, like a flood, that he might cause her to be caried away of the flood.

16 But the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood, which the dragon had cast out of his mouth.

17 Then the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went and made warre with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimony of Iesus Christ.

18 And I stood on the sea sand.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The beast with many heads is described*, 8 *which draweth the most part of the world to Idolatry*. 11 *The other beast rising out of the earth*, 15 *giueth power vnto him*.

AND I saw a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes, *were* ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I sawe, was like a Leopard, and his feete like a beares, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gaue him his power, and his throne, and great authoritie.

3 And I saw one of his heads, as *it were* wounded to death, but his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondred, *and* followed the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon, which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? who is able to warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him to doe two and fourty moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name and his Tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to ouercome them, and power was giuen him ouer euery kinred, and tongue, and nation.

8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth, shal worship him, whose names are not written in the Booke of life of the Lambe, which was slaine from the beginning of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

Gen 9.6. matt.26. 52.

10 If any leade into captiuitie, he shall goe into captiuity: *if any kill with a sword, he must be killed by a sword: here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

11 And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but hee spake like the dragon.

12 And hee did all that the first beast could doe before him, and

and he caused the earth, and them that dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he did great wonders, so that hee made fire to come downe from heauen on the earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiued them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted to him to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, & did liue.

15 And it was permitted to him to giue a spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast should speake, and should cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.

16 And he made all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, to receiue a marke in their right hand, or in their foreheads,

17 And that no man might buy or sell, saue hee that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisedome, Let him that hath wit, count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is sixe hundred threescore and sixe.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lambe standeth on mount Sion, 4 with his chaste worshippers. 6 One Angel preacheth the Gospel: 8 another foretelleth the fall of Babylon: 9 the third warneth that the beast be auoided. 13 A voyce from heauen pronounceth them happie who die in the Lord. 16 The Lords sickle is thrust into the harnest, 18 and into the vintage.

THen I looked, and lo, a Lambe stood on mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and foure thousand, hauing his Fathers name written in their foreheads

2 And I heard a voice from heauen as the sound of many waters, and as the sound of a great thunder: & I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung as *it were* a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders, and no man could learne that song, but the hundred fourty and foure thousand, which were bought from the earth.

4 These are they, which are not defiled with women: for they are virgines: these followe the Lambe whithersoeuer he goeth: these are bought from men, being the first fruites vnto God, and to the Lambe.

5 And in their mouthes was found no guile: for they are without spot before the throne of God.

6 ¶ Then I sawe another Angel flie in the mids of heauen,

hauing an euerlasting Gospel, to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

Psal. 145. 6. 7 * Saying with a loude voyce, Feare God, and giue glory to him: for the houre of his iudgement is come: and worship him

Acts 14. 15. that made * heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters.

Chap. 18. Esa. 21. 9 Ier. 51. 8. 8 And there followed another Angel, saying, * Babylon that great citie is fallen, it is fallen: for thee made all nations to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 ¶ And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receiue *his* marke in his forehead, or on his hand,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine which is powred into the cup of his wrath, and hee shall be tormented in fire and brimstone before the holy Angels, and before the Lambe.

11 And the smoke of their torment shall ascend euermore: and they shall haue no rest day nor night, which worship the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receiueth the print of his name.

12 Here is the patience of Saints: here are they that keepe the commandements of God, and the faith of Iesus.

13 Then I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto mee, Write, The dead which die in the Lord *are* fully blessed. Euen so sayth the Spirit: for they rest from their labours, and their workes follow them.

14 ¶ And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and vpon the cloud one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voyce to him that sate on the cloude, * Thrust in thy

Ioel 3. 13. Matth. 13 39. sickle and reape: for the time is come to reape: for the * harueſt of the earth is ripe.

16 And hee that sate on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 Then another Angel came out of the Temple, which is in heauen, hauing also a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cried with a loude crie to him that had the sharpe sickle, and said, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vineyard of the earth: for her grapes are ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the vines of the vineyard of the earth, and

cast

caſt them into that great winepreſſe of the wrath of God.

20 And the winepreſſe was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the winepreſſe, vnto the horſe bridles, by the ſpace of a thouſand and ſixe hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 The Seuen Angels hauing the ſeuen laſt plagues. 3 They that conquered the beaſt, praiſe God. 6 To the ſeuen Angels, 7 ſeuen vials full of Gods wrath, are deliuered.

AND I ſawe another ſigne in heauen, great and marueilous, ſeuen Angels hauing the ſeuen laſt plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I ſawe as *it were* a glaſsie ſea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten victory of the beaſt, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, ſtand at the glaſsie ſea, hauing the harpes of God.

3 And they ſung the ſong of Moſes the ſeruant of God, and the ſong of the Lambe, ſaying, Great and marueilous *are* thy workes, Lord God Almighty: iuſt and true *are* thy * wayes, King of Saints. *Pſal.145. 17.*

4 *, Who ſhal not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name? for thou only *art* holy, and all nations ſhall come and worſhip before thee: for thy iudgements are made manifeſt. *Ier.10.7.*

5 And after that, I looked, and behold, the Temple of the tabernacle of teſtimonie was open in heauen.

6 And the ſeuen Angels came out of the Temple, which had the ſeuen plagues, clothed in pure and bright linnen, and hauing their breaſts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beaſtes gaue vnto the ſeuen Angels, ſeuen golden vials full of the wrath of God, which liueth for euermore.

8 And the Temple was full of the ſmoke of the glory of God, and of his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the ſeuen plagues of the ſeuen Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 and 17 The Angels powre out the ſeuen vials of Gods wrath giuen vnto them, and ſo diuers plagues ariſe in the world, 18 to terrifie the wicked, 19 and the inhabitants of the great citie.

AND I heard a great voice out of the Temple, ſaying to the ſeuen Angels Goe your wayes, and powre out the *ſeuen* vials of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the firſt went, and powred out his viall vpon the earth: and there fell a noyſome and a grieuous ſore vpon the men which had the marke of the beaſt, and vpon them which worſhipped his image.

3 And the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing thing died in the sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his viall vpon the riuers and fountaines of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Lord, thou art iust, Which art, and Which wast, and holy, because thou hast iudged these things.

6 For they shed the blood of the Saints, and Prophets, and therfore hast thou giuen them blood to drinke, for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the Sanctuary say, Euen so, Lord God almighty, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall on the sunne, and it was giuen vnto him to torment men with heat of fire,

9 And men boyled in great heat, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer these plagues, and they repented not to giue him glory.

10 And the fift Angel powred out his vial vpon the throne of the beast, and his kingdome waxed darke, and they gnawed their tongues for sorrow,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen for their paines, and for their sores, and repented not of their workes.

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his vial vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof dried vp, that the way of the kings of the East should be prepared.

13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogs, come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of that beast, and out of the mouth of that false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of deuils, working miracles, to goe vnto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battel of that great day of God Almighty.

Chap.3.3. mat.24.44. luke 12.39. 15 (*Behold, I come as a thiefe: Blessed is hee that watcheth and keepeth his garments, lest hee walke naked, and men see his filthinesse)

16 And they gathered them together into a place called in Hebrew, Arma-gedon.

17 ¶ And the seuenth Angel powred out his viall into the aire: and there came a loude voice out of the Temple of heauen from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, euen so mighty an earthquake.

19 And the great citie was diuided into three parts, and the

the cities of the nations fell, and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, * to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fierceneſſe of his wrath. *Ier.15.15*

20 And euery yle fled away, and the mountaines were not found.

21 And there fell a great haile like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, and men blaſphemed God, becauſe of the plague of the haile, for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

1 That great whore is deſcribed, 2 with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication. 6 Shee is drunken with the blood of Saints. 7 The myſtery of the woman and the beaſt that carieth her, expounded: 11 their deſtruction. 14 The Lambes victory

THen there came one of the ſeuen Angels which had the ſeuen vials, and talked with me, ſaying vnto me, Come, I will ſhew thee the damnation of the great whore, that ſitteth vpon many waters,

2 With whome haue committed fornication the Kings of the earth, and the inhabitants of the earth are drunken with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caried mee away into the wilderneſſe in the Spirit, and I ſaw a woman ſit vpon a ſcarlet coloured beaſt ful of names of blaſphemie, which had ſeuen heads, and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple, and ſcarlet, and gilded with golde and precious ſtones and pearles, and had a cup of golde in her hand, full of abominations, and filthineſſe of her fornication.

5 And in her forehead *was* a name written, A myſtery, Great Babylon, the mother of whoredoms and abominations of the earth.

6 And I ſawe the woman drunken with the blood of Saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Ieſus: and when I ſaw her, I wondred with great maruell.

7 Then the Angel ſaid vnto me, Wherfore marueileſt thou? I will ſhewe thee the myſterie of that woman and of that beaſt that beareth her, which hath ſeuen heads and ten hornes.

8 The beaſt that thou haſt ſeene, was, and is not, and ſhall aſcend out of the bottomleſſe pit, and ſhall go into perdition, and they that dwel on the earth, ſhall wonder (whoſe names are not written in the booke of life, from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beaſt that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 Here *is* the minde that hath wiſedome. The ſeuen heads are ſeuen mountains, whereon the woman ſitteth: they are alſo ſeuen kings.

10 Fiue are fallen, and one is, and another is not yet come, and when he commeth, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, is euen the eight, and is one of the seuen, and shall go into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou saweſt, are teane kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdom, but shall receiue power, as kings at one houre with the beast

13 These haue one mind, and shall giue their power and authoritie vnto the beast.

14 These shall fight with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall ouercome them: * for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are on his side, called, and chosen, and faithfull.

Chap. 16. 16. 1. Tim. 6. 15.

15 And he said vnto me, The waters which thou saweſt, where the whore sitteth, are people, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou saweſt vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eate her flesh, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to doe with one consent, for to giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the words of God be fulfilled.

18 And that woman which thou saweſt, is that great citie, which reigneth ouer the Kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

2 *The horrible destruction of Babylon is set out.* 11. 16. 18 *The merchants of the earth, who were enriched with the pompe and luxuriousnesse of it, weepe, and waile:* 20 *But all the elect reioice for that iust vengeance of God.*

AND after these things, I saw *another* angel come downe from heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightned with his glory.

2 And he cried out mightily with a loud voice, saying, * It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon that great *citie*, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of all foule spirits, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull bird.

Esa. 14. 8. Esa. 21. 9. & Jere. 51. 8.

3 For all nations haue drunken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the Kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxen rich of the abundance of her pleasures.

4 And I heard another voice from heauen say, Goe out of her my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receiue not of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward

6 Reward her, euen as ſhee hath rewarded you, and giue her double according to her workes: *and* in the cup that ſhe hath filled to you, fill her the double.

7 In as much as ſhe glorified her ſelfe, and liued in pleaſure, ſo much giue ye to her torment and ſorowe: for ſhe ſaith in her heart, I ſit being a queene, and am no widowe, and ſhall ſee no mourning.

8 Therefore ſhall her plagues come at one day, death, and ſorow, and famine, and ſhe ſhalbe burnt with fire: for that God which condemneth her, is a ſtrong Lord.

9 And the kings of the earth ſhal bewaile her, and lament for her, which haue committed fornication, and liued in pleaſure with her, when they ſhall ſee that ſmoke of that her burning,

10 And ſhall ſtand a farre off for feare of her torment, ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babyon, that mightie citie: for in one houre is thy iudgement come.

11 And the marchants of the earth ſhal weepe and waile ouer her: for no man buyeth their ware any more.

12 The ware of gold and ſiluer, and of precious ſtone, and of pearles, and of fine linnen, and of purple, and of ſilke, and of ſcarlet, and of all manner of Thyne wood, and of all veſſels of yuorie, and of al veſſels of moſt precious wood, and of braſſe, and of yron, and of marble,

13 And of cinamom, and odours, and ointments, and frankincenſe, and wine, and oile, & fine flowre, and wheate, and beaſts, and ſheepe, and horſes, and charets, and ſeruants, and ſoules of men.

14 (And the apples that thy ſoule luſted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were fat and excellent, are departed from thee, and thou ſhalt finde them no more)

15 The merchants of theſe things which were waxed riche, ſhall ſtand a farre off from her, for feare of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie that was clothed in fine linnen, and purple, and skarlet, and gilded with golde, and precious ſtone and pearles.

17 For in one houre ſo great riches are come to deſolation. And euery ſhipmaſter, and all the people that occupie ſhips and ſhipmen, and whoſoeuer traffike on the ſea, ſhall ſtand a farre off,

18 And crie, when they ſee that ſmoke of that her burning, ſaying, What *citie was* like vnto this great citie?

19 And they ſhall caſt duſt on their heads, and crie, weeping, and wayling, and ſay, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made

made rich al tha: had ships on the sea by her costlinesse, for in one houre shee is made desolate.

20 O heauen, reioyce of her, and ye holy Apostles and Prophets: for God hath punished her to be reuenged on her for your sakes.

21 Then a mighty Angel tooke vp a stone like a great mil-
Ier.51.63 stone, and * cast it into the sea, saying, With such violence shall that great citie Babylon be cast, and shalbe found no more.

22 And the voice of harpers and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpetters shall be heard no more in thee, and no craftsman of whatsoeuer craft *he be*, shalbe found any more in thee: and the sound of a milstone shalbe heard no more in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shal shine no more in thee: & the voyce of the bridegroome & of the bride shalbe heard no more in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth: and with thine inchantments were deceiued all nations.

24 And in her was found the blood of the Prophets, and of the Saints, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 The heauenly company praise God, for auenging the blood of his seruants, on the whore. 9 They are written blessed, that are called to the Lambes supper. 10 The Angel will not be worshipped. 11 That mighty King of King appeareth from heauen. 19 The battell, 20 wherein the beast is taken, 21 and cast into the burning lake.

AND after these things I heard a great voice of a great multitude in heauen, saying, Hallelu-iah, saluation and glory, and honour, and power *be* to the Lord our God.

2 For true and righteous *are* his iudgements: for hee hath condemned that great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants *shed* by her hand.

3 And againe they said, Hallelu-iah: and that her smoke rose vp for euermore.

4 And the foure & twenty Elders, & the foure beasts fell downe, and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen. Hallelu-iah.

5 Then a voyce came out of ☞ throne, saying, Praise our God, al ye his seruants, and ye that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard like a voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of strong thunderings, saying, Hallelu-iah: for the Lord that God that Almighty one hath reigned.

7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glory to him: for the marriage

marriage of that Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her
selfe ready.

8 And to her was granted, that she should be arayed with
pure fine linnen and shining: for the fine linnen is the righte-
ousnesse of Saints.

9 Then he sayd vnto mee, Write, * Blessed *are* they which *Mat.22.2*
are called vnto the Lambes supper. And he said vnto me, These
words of God are true.

10 And I fell before his feete, * to worship him: but he said *Rev.22.8.*
vnto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow seruant, and one of
thy brethren which haue the testimony of Iesus. Worship God:
for the testimony of Iesus is the Spirit of prophecie.

11 And I saw heauen open, and behold a white horse, and he
that sate vpon him was called Faithfull and true, and he iudgeth
and fighteth righteously.

12 And his eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head *were*
many crownes: and he had a Name written that no man knew
but himselfe.

13 And hee was clothed with a garment dipt in blood, and
his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD.

14 And the hosts which were in heauen, followed him vpon
white horses, clothed with fine linnen white and pure.

15 And out of his mouth went out a sharp sword, that with it
he should smite the heathen: for he * shall rule them with a rod *Psal.2.9*
of yron: for he it is that treadeth the winepresse of the fiercernesse
and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh a name
written, * The Kings of Kings, and Lord of Lords. *Chap. 17.*

17 And I saw an Angel stand in the Sunne, who cryed with a *14.1 Sam.*
loude voyce, saying to all the foules that did flie by the middes *6.15.*
of heauen, Come, and gather your selues together vnto the
supper of the great God,

18 That ye may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of high
captaines, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, &
of them that sit on them, and the fleth of all free men and bond-
men, and of small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their
hostes gathered together to make battell against him that sate
on the horse, and against his armie.

20 But the beast was taken, and with him that false Prophet
that wrought miracles before him, whereby he deceiued them
that receiued the beasts marke, and them that worshipped his
image. These both were aliue cast into a lake of fire, burning
with brimstone.

21 And

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sworde of him that sitteth vpon the horse, which commeth out of his mouth, and all the foules were filled full with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

1 The Angel 2 bindeth Satan for a thousand yeeres. 8 Being loosed, he stirreth vp Gog and Magog, that is, private and open enemies, against the Saintes, 11 but the vengeance of the Lord cutteth off their insolencie. 12 The bookes are opened, by which the dead are iudged.

AND I saw an Angel come downe from heauen, hauing the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he tooke the dragon that olde serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and he bound him a thousand yeeres:

3 And cast him into the bottomles pit, and he shut him vp, and sealed *the doore* vpon him, that he should deceiue the people no more, til the thousand yeeres were fulfilled: for after that he must be loosed for a little season.

4 And I saw seates: and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was giuen vnto them, and *I saw* the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnes of Iesus, and for the word of God, and which did not worship the beast, neither his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or on their handes: and they liued and reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead men shall not liue againe, vntill the thousand yeeres be finished: this is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he, that hath part in the first resurrection: *for* on such the second death hath no power: but they shalbe the Priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeere.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shalbe loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the people, which are in the foure quarters of the earth: *euen* *Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell, whose number is as the sand of the sea. *Ezek.39.2.

9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, and they compassed the tents of the Saints about, and the beloued Citie: but fire came downe from God out of heauen and deuoured them.

10 And the deuill that deceiued them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where that beast and that false prophet *are*, shalbe tormented euen day and night for euermore.

11 And I sawe a great white throne, and one that sate on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more found.

12 And

12 And I ſawe the dead both great and ſmall, ſtand before God: and the bookes were opened, * and another booke was opened, which is *the booke* of life, and the dead were iudged of those things which were written in the bookes, according to their workes. *Chap.3.5. and 21.27 *phil.4.3.

13 And the ſea gaue vp her dead, which were in her, and death and hell deliuered vp the dead which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to their workes.

14 And death and hell were caſt into the lake of fire: this is the ſecond death.

15 And whoſoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was caſt into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *He deſcribeth newes Hieruſalem deſcending from heauen, 9 the bride the Lambes wife, 12 and the glorious building of the citie, 19 garniſhed with pretious ſtones: 22 whoſe temple the Lambe is.*

AND I ſawe * a newe heauen, and a newe earth: for the * firſt heauen and the firſt earth were paſſed away, and there was no more ſea. *Iſa.65.17 & 66.22. 2.Pet.3.

2 And I Iohn ſawe the holy citie newe Hieruſalem come downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride trimmed for her husband. 13.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, ſaying, Beholde, the Tabernacle of God is with men, and he wil dwell with them: and they ſhalbe his people, and God himſelfe ſhalbe their God with them.

4 * And God ſhall wipe all teares from their eyes: and there ſhalbe no more death, neither ſorow, neither crying, neither ſhal there be any more paine: for the firſt things are paſſed. *Iſa.7.17. Iſa.25.8.

5 And he that ſate vpon the throne, ſaid, * Behold, I make all things newe: and he ſayde vnto me, Write: for theſe words are faithfull and true. *Iſa.43.19 2 cor.5.17.

6 And he ſaid vnto me, It is done. * I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will giue to him that is athirſt, of the well of the water of life freely. *Chap.1.8 & 22.13.

7 Hee that ouercommeth, ſhall inherite all things, and I will be his God, and hee ſhall be my ſonne.

8 But the fearefull and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable and murtherers, and whoremongers, and ſorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, ſhal haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimſtone, which is the ſecond death.

9 And there came vnto me, one of the ſeuen Angels which had the ſeuen vials full of the ſeuen laſt plagues, and talked with me, ſaying, Come: I will ſhew thee the Bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And

10 And hee caried me away in the ſpirit to a great and high mountaine, and ſhewed me that great citie, that holy Hieruſalem, deſcending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing the glory of God, and her ſhining was like vnto a ſtone moſt precious, as a Iaſper ſtone cleare as cryſtall,

12 And had a great wall and hie, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Iſrael.

13 On the Eaſt part *there were* three gates, *and* on the North ſide three gates, *and* on the South ſide three gates, *and* on the Weſt ſide three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the names of the Lambes twelue Apoſtles.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to meaſure the city withall, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lay foure ſquare, and the length is as large as the breadth of it, and he meaſured the citie with the reede, twelue thouſand furlongs: and the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And the meaſured the wall thereof, an hundred fourtie and foure cubites, by the meaſure of man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iaſper: and the citie was pure golde, like vnto cleare glaſſe.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garniſhed with all maner of precious ſtones: the firſt foundation was Iaſper: the ſecond of Saphire: the third of a Chalcedonie: the fourth of an Emeraude:

20 The fift of a Sardonix: the ſixt of a Sardius: the ſeuenth of a Chryſolite: the eight of a Beryl: the ninth of a Topaze: the tenth of a Chryſopraſus: the eleuenth of a Iacinth: the twelfth an Amethyſt.

21 And the twelue gates *were* twelue pearles, and euery gate is of one pearle, and the ſtreet of the citie is pure gold, as ſhining glaſſe.

22 And I ſawe no Temple therein: for the Lorde God Almightie and the Lambe are the Temple of it.

Iſa.60.19 23 * And the citie hath no neede of the Sunne neither of the Moone to ſhine in it: for the glory of God did light it: and the Lambe is the light of it.

Iſa.69.3. 24 * And the people which are ſaued, ſhal walke in the light of it: and the Kings of the earth ſhall bring their glory and honour vnto it.

Iſa.60.11 25 * And the gates of it ſhall not bee ſhut by day: for there ſhalbe no night there.

26 And

26 And the glory and honour of the Gentiles shalbe brought vnto it.

27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination or lies: but they which are written in the * Lambes booke of Life. *Chap.3.5. & 20.12. Phil.4.3.*

CHAP. XXII.

1 The riuer of water of life is shewed, 2 and the tree of life: 6. 7 Then followeth the conclusion of the prophecie, 8 where Iohn declareth that the things herein contained are most true: 13 And nowe the third time repeateth these wordes, All things come from him, who is the beginning and the ende.

AND hee shewed mee a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as chrystal, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the middes of the streete of it, and of either side of the riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue maner of fruits, and gaue fruite euery moneth: and the leaues of the tree *serued* to heale the nations with.

3 And there shal bee no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lambe shalbe in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his Name shalbe in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the Sunne: for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euermore. *Isa.60.19*

6 And he said vnto me, These words are faithfull and true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his Angel to shew vnto his seruants the things which must shortly be fulfilled.

7 Behold, I come shortly. Blessed *is* he that keepeth the words of the prophecie of this Booke.

8 And I am Iohn, which saw and heard these things: and when I had heard and seene, * I fell downe to worship before the feete of the Angel, which shewed me these things. *Chap. 19. 10.*

9 But he saide vnto mee, See thou *doe it* not: for I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the wordes of this Booke: worship God.

10 And he said vnto me, Seale not the wordes of the Prophecie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vniust, let him be vniust still: and he which is filthie, let him be filthie still: and hee that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come shortly, and my reward is with mee, * to giue euery man according as his worke shall be. *Rom.2.6.*

13 I am

Chap.1.8. 13 I am *Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end
and 21.4. firſt and the laſt.
Iſa.41.4. 14 Bleſſed *are* they that doe his commandements, that t
& 44.6. right may bee in the tree of life, and may enter in thorow
gates into the citie.

15 For without *ſhall be* dogges and inchanters, and wh
mongers, and murtherers, and idolaters, and whoſoeuer lo
or maketh lies.

16 I Ieſus haue ſent mine Angel, to teſtifie vnto you t
things in the Churches: I am the roote, and the generatio
Dauid, and the bright morning ſtarre.

17 And the Spirit, and the bride ſay, Come. And let him t
Iſa. 55.1. heareth ſay, Come: and let him that is athirſt come: and *
whoſoeuer will, take of the water of life freely.

18 For I proteſt vnto euery man that heareth the words of
propheſie of this booke, If any man ſhall adde vnto theſe thi
God ſhall adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in t
booke:

19 And if any man ſhall diminiſh of the words of the boo
of this prophecie, God ſhall take away his part out of the boo
of life, and out of the holy citie, and from thoſe things whi
are written in this booke.

20 Hee which teſtifieth theſe things, ſaith, Surely I co
quickly. Amen. Euen ſo, come Lord Ieſus.

21 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt *be* with you a
Amen.